

00001

W0235/1012

CLOSED
UNTIL

1978

PT 1

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	
Ref:	
W0 235 /1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

00002

COPY

IMMEDIATE IMMEDIATE

SP24/4 JHAB V JAJA OP TVRI/2 043826/27

SP24/4 JHAB V JAJA OP QVRI/2 043826/27

FROM K K B J 041057Q

TO: J H B S

INFO: J H A B

GR 110 APP.

AG ADM 1587 | AG ADM 1584 | UNCLASS GOR 14 WAR
 CRIMES INVESTIGATION TEAM HQ LAND FORCES HONG KONG SEAC
 LT COL J C STEWART WAR CRIMES SECTION SEALF | FOR INFO |
 REFERENCE

AK

REFERENCE YOUR A/2575/ACC REF RS MODIFICATION
 BY REVIEWING AUTHORITY SENTENCES TOKUNAGA SAITO STOP
 RE TOKUNAGA WERE FINDINGS OF TRIAL COURT RESPECTING FIRST
 FIFTH SEVENTH EIGHT NINTH CHARGES QUASHED OR MODIFIED BY
 CONFIRMING AUTHORITY STOP RE SAITO WERE FINDINGS OF TRIAL
 RPT TRIAL COURT RESPECTING FIRST THIRD FIFTH CHARGES
 QUASHED OR MODIFIED BY CONFIRMING AUTHORITY STOP PLEASE
 REPLY IMMEDIATE STOP ADDRESSED 14 WAR CRIMES INVESTIGATION
 TEAM HQ LAND FORCES HONG KONG SEAC RPT FOR INFM LT COL
 J C STEWART WAR CRIMES SECTION SEALF SINGAPORE
 041057
 RPTNS 1584 14 A/2575/ACC SENTENCES TOKUNAGA SAITO AS PER
 CPH AR AR

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	ins

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

00003

CIPHER TELEGRAM

This message will not be distributed outside British or US GOVT DEPTS OR HQS or re-transmitted even in cipher without being paraphrased (messages marked OTP need not be paraphrased)

UNPARAPHRASED CIPHER IMMEDIATE CONFIDENTIAL SIC 146/11

From HQ LAND FORCES HONG KONG
To SEALF

TOC 111525
TOR 120700
CIPHER 6136

No 8 AG 11 JULY 47.

From GOC.

Reference signal AGADM 1587 of 041057 from DEFENCE OTTAWA to this HQ copy to LIEUTENANT STEWART WAR CRIMES SEALF. * COL

I have replied in my confidential 7 AG of 11 JULY. In my opinion it is improper for me to furnish the information required by defence OTTAWA direct to that department. The answer is all findings were confirmed and the death sentences on TOKUNAGA and SAITO were commuted to life imprisonment and 20 years imprisonment respectively. Will you reply as you think fit.

Distributed at 121100 hrs by SMC TANGLIN (TEL 410) as under

Act:- WAR CRIMES

Info:- JAG CR SMC FILE DLPE/FC/A/QDC

1		2		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
cms		Ref:		WO 235/1012 PT1	
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.		1		Ins 2	

00004

CIPHER TELEGRAM

This message will NOT be distributed outside British or US
GOVT depts or HQs or re-transmitted even in cipher without
being paraphrased(Messages marked OTP need NOT be paraphrased)

UNPARAPHRASED CIPHER

IMMEDIATE CONFIDENTIAL

SMC 145/11

From HQ LAND FORCES HONG KONG

T00 111525

TOR 120700

CIPH X 6137

To DEF OTTAWA

Info SEALF

No 7 AG 11 JULY 47.

Your AGADM 1587 of 041057 Q.

SEALF have been requested to deal with your question

Distributed at 121100 hrs by SMC TANGLIN (TEL 410) as under

Act:- WAR CRIMES

Info JAG CR SMC FILE BLPE / FC/A/QDO

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref.:		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES		Ins	
		WO 235/1012 PT1					

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

00005

SPALF

21. 1645 GH JUL

DEF OTTAWA

18594 AG3 (.) CONF (.) your AGADM 1587 of 4 jul (.)
 subject War Crimes trial Col TOKUNAGA and 4 others (.) all
 findings were confirmed and the death sentences on TOKUNAGA and
 SAITO were commuted to life imprisonment and 20 years imprisonment
 respectively

Ext 186

1		2		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES		1		2	
cms		Ref.:		WO 235/1012 PT1		1		Ins	
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' material.									

00006

GHQ SEAF

DJAG.

CONFIDENTIALBM/JAG/65201
14th July 1947.A G 3

(1)

War Criminals

I forward herewith for review the proceedings of the trial by Military Court of Col. TOKUNAGA Isao and 4 others of the Imperial Japanese Army, attached 1/5 Cdo. Details of the trial are shown on the attached form.

2. The exhibits were not returned to me with the proceedings; they will be forwarded as soon as I receive them.

3. It will be seen that the officiating Commander Land Forces, Hong Kong saw fit to commute the death sentence awarded to Col. Tokunaga as well as that awarded to Capt. Saito (cf paras 6, 11, and 12 of my BM/JAG/65201 dated 9 May 47 which is attached to the proceedings).

In deciding to take this action the confirming officer was probably influenced by the petition from Dr. Selwyn Clarke which is attached to the proceedings.

There was of course a wide distinction between the facts proved against Tokunaga and those proved against Saito and in my opinion there was no good reason to commute the death sentence on the former.

4. I enclose a copy of a signal No. AG ADM 1587 from DEF OTTAWA to Land Forces, Hong Kong and also the original of two signals from Land Forces, Hong Kong arising therefrom. (No. 7 AG of 11 Jul 47 and No. 8 AG of 11 Jul 47).

Apparently the GOC Hong Kong considers it improper for him to communicate direct with OTTAWA. It is for your consideration whether GOC Hong Kong should be instructed to reply to the a/m signal in his capacity of confirming authority or whether you should originate a reply from this GHQ on behalf of the Commander-in-Chief as reviewing authority.

5. I am informed that the DEF OTTAWA signal was sent in reply to a signal originated in Hong Kong by Major J.T. Loranger the Canadian member of the Court.

NHN/JG

Brigadier,
DJAG, South East Asia Land Forces.

Copy to: WCLS

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref.:		1		Ins	
		WO 235/1012 PT1					

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives leaflet.

00007

(2)

No. 50203/493.
Date 23 July 47.

DJAG

~~No action~~
The following action) has been taken

See this GHQ confidential signal 18594 AG 3
of 211645 GH to DEF OTTAWA attached.

Baronshausen
Lt-Colonel,
AAG GHQ SEALF.

Serial No 206.

1		2		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
cms		Ref:		WO 235 /1012 PT1	
1		1		Ins	
2		2		2	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

MILITARY COURT FOR THE TRIAL OF WAR CRIMINALSACCUSED

- (1) Col. TOKUNAGA Isao
 - (2) Capt. SAITO Shunkichi
 - (3) Lieut. TANAKA Hitochi
 - (4) Int. TSUTADA Itsuo
 - (5) Sgt. HARADA Jotaro
- of the Imperial Japanese Army,
attached to 1/5 Cdo.

PLACE AND
DATE OF TRIAL

Hong Kong 17,18,19 Oct 46, 30 Nov 46
3,4,5,6,7,9,10,11,12,13,14,
16,17,18,19,20,21,23,24,27,
and 28 Dec 46.
2,3,4,6,7,8,9,10,11,13,14,
15,16,17,18,20,21,22,23,24,
25,27,28,29 and 30 Jan 47.
6,12 and 14 Feb 47.

COURT CONVENED BY

Commander Land Forces, Hong Kong.

PRESIDENT

Lt.Col. R.C. LAMING Dept of JAG in India
(Barrister-at-law).

MEMBERS

Major J.T. LORANGER JAG Branch,
Canadian Army
Capt. K.R. BUSFIELD R.A.C.

CHARGE

See attached Charge Sheet.

PLEA

- | | | | | |
|-------------|---|-------------------|---|-------------|
| 1st Charge | - | Each accused | - | Not Guilty. |
| 2nd Charge | - | Accused 1 & 2 | - | Not Guilty. |
| 3rd Charge | - | Accused 1 & 2 & 3 | - | Not Guilty. |
| 4th Charge | - | Accused 1 & 2 | - | Not Guilty. |
| 5th Charge | - | Accused 1 & 2 | - | Not Guilty. |
| 6th Charge | - | Accused 1 & 3 | - | Not Guilty. |
| 7th Charge | - | Accused 1 | - | Not Guilty. |
| 8th Charge | - | Accused 1 | - | Not Guilty. |
| 9th Charge | - | Accused 1 | - | Not Guilty. |
| 10th Charge | - | Accused 1 | - | Not Guilty. |
| 11th Charge | - | Accused 3 | - | Not Guilty. |

FINDING

- | | | | |
|-------------------|------------------|---|---|
| <u>1st Charge</u> | <u>Accused 1</u> | - | Guilty except that the Court find that the Accused was in command of the POW Camp Staff HONG KONG between 31st January 1942 and 15th August 1945 or thereabouts. |
| | <u>Accused 2</u> | - | Guilty except that the Court find that the Accused was a Member of the POW Camp Staff HONG KONG between the dates as found in the special finding as to the first Accused. |
| | <u>Accused 3</u> | - | Guilty except that the Court find that the Accused was a Member of the POW Camp Staff HONG KONG between 31 January 1942 and 1 April 1945 and not between 24 January 1942 and 15 August 1945 or thereabouts, and except for the words, "in the |

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref.:		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES			
		WO 235/1012 PT1					
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.							

- 2 -

Accused 4

deaths of some".
 Guilty except that
 the Court find that
 the Accused was a
 Member of the POW
 Camp Staff HONG KONG
 between April 1942
 and 31 August 1945 X
 when he was transferred
 from POW Camp Staff
 but continued to reside
 at SHAMSHUIPO POW
 Camp until he finally
 left HONG KONG at the
 end of October 1943
 or thereabouts, and
 except for the words,
 "in the deaths of some".

Accused 5

Guilty except that the
 Court find that the
 Accused was a member
 of the POW Camp Staff
 HONG KONG between
 1 October 1943 and 15
 August 1945 or there-
 -abouts and not between
 24 January 1942 and
 15 August 1945 or
 thereabouts and except
 for the words "in the
 deaths of some".

2nd Charge - Accused 1
Accused 2

Both Guilty except
 that the Court find
 that the dates in
 respect of both these
 accused should be
 between 31 January
 1942 and 26 September
 1942 or thereabouts
 and not between 24
 January 1942 and 26
 September 1942 or
 thereabouts, and
 except, in respect
 of both these accused,
 for the words "in the
 deaths of some".

3rd Charge - Accused 1

Accused 2
Accused 3

Guilty except for
 the words "in the
 deaths of some."
 Guilty.
 Guilty except for
 the words "in the
 deaths of some".

4th Charge Accused 1
Accused 2

Not Guilty.
 Not Guilty.

5th Charge Accused 1
Accused 2

Both Guilty except
 that the Court find
 that these two
 accused were respectiv-
 ely Commandant and
 Medical Officer of all
 POW Camps in Hong Kong
 between 31 January
 1942 and 15 August
 1945 or thereabouts

.....3/

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235 / 1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	2

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

- 3 -

and not between
24 January 1942 and
15 August 1945 or
thereabouts

6th Charge - Accused 1 - Guilty.
 Accused 3 - Not Guilty.
7th Charge - Accused 1 - Guilty.
8th Charge - Accused 1 - Guilty.
9th Charge - Accused 1 - Guilty.
10th Charge - Accused 1 - Not Guilty.
11th Charge - Accused 3 - Not Guilty.

SENTENCE

14th Feb 47. Accused 1 - Death by hanging.
 Accused 2 - Death by hanging.
 Accused 3 - 3 years' Imprisonment.
 Accused 4 - 2 years' Imprisonment.
 Accused 5 - 1 years' Imprisonment.

CONFIRMED

25th June 47. Commander Land Forces, Hong Kong.
 Col. TOKUNAGA

PROMULGATED

2nd July 47. Sentence commuted to
 imprisonment for life.
 Capt. SAITO.

REMARKS

Sentence commuted to
20 years imprisonment.

DISPOSAL OF
PROCEEDINGS

To AG3 GHQ SEALF

14 July '47

JAG of the Forces

3 Aug 47.

DJAG SEALF
Case No. 65201

1		2	
cms		Ref.	
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES		WO 235/1012 PT1	
1		2	
ins			

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

00011

CHARGE SHEET

- 1st Charge
Against all
accused
 - 2nd Charge
Against Col.
Tokunaga Isao
Capt. Saito
Shunkichi.
 - 3rd Charge
Against
Col. Tokunaga
Isao
Capt. Saito
Shunkichi
Lt. Tanaka
Hitochi.
 - 4th Charge
Against
Col. Tokunaga
Isao
Capt. Saito
Shunkichi
 - 5th Charge
Against
Col. Tokunaga
Isao
Capt. Saito
Shunkichi
- 1 COMMITTING A WAR CRIME in that they at SHAM SHUI PO, HONG KONG, between the 24 January 1942 and the 15 August 1945 when members of the Prisoners of-War Camp Staff under the command of the first named accused, and responsible for the well being of British, Canadian and Dutch Prisoners-of-War interned in the SHAM SHUI PO Prisoners-of-War Camp were, in violation of the laws and usages of war, together concerned in the inhumane treatment of the said Prisoners-of-War resulting in the deaths of some and in physical sufferings to others.
 - 2 COMMITTING A WAR CRIME in that they at NORTH POINT, HONG KONG, between the 24 January 1942 and the 26 September 1942 or thereabouts when Commandant and Medical Officer respectively of all Prisoners-of-War Camps in Hong Kong, and responsible for the well being of British and Canadian Prisoners-of-War interned in the NORTH POINT Prisoners-of-War Camp, were in violation of the laws and usages of war, together concerned in the inhumane treatment of the said Prisoners-of-War resulting in the deaths of some and in physical sufferings to others.
 - 3 COMMITTING A WAR CRIME in that they at HOWLOON, HONG KONG, between April 1942 and May 1944 or thereabouts when the accused Col. Tokunaga Isao and the accused Capt. Saito Shunkichi were respectively Commandant and Medical Officer of all Prisoners-of-War Camps in HONG KONG and the accused Lt. Tanaka Hitochi was Commandant of the UPPER ARGYLE STREET OFFICERS CAMP, and responsible for the well being of British and Canadian Prisoners-of-War interned in the said UPPER ARGYLE STREET OFFICERS CAMP were, in violation of the laws and usages of war, together concerned in the inhumane treatment of the said Prisoners-of-War resulting in the deaths of some and in physical sufferings to others.
 - 4 COMMITTING A WAR CRIME in that they in HOWLOON, HONG KONG, between February 1942 and 16 June 1942 or thereabouts when Commandant and Medical Officer respectively of all Prisoners-of-War Camps in HONG KONG and responsible for the well being of British and Canadian Prisoners-of-War serving on the medical staff and/or receiving treatment at the INDIAN MILITARY HOSPITAL at ARGYLE STREET, HOWLOON, HONG KONG, were, in violation of the laws and usages of war, together concerned in the inhumane treatment of the said Prisoners-of-War resulting in the deaths of some and in physical sufferings to others.
 - 5 COMMITTING A WAR CRIME in that they at HONG KONG, between 24 January 1942 and 15 August 1945 or thereabouts when Commandant and Medical Officer respectively of all Prisoners-of-War Camps in HONG KONG and responsible for the well being of British and Canadian Prisoners-of-War serving on the medical staff and/or receiving treatment at the BOWEN ROAD HOSPITAL in HONG KONG, were, in violation of the laws and usages of war, together concerned in the inhumane treatment of the said Prisoners-of-War resulting in the deaths of some and in physical sufferings to others.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref.
WO 235 /1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	ins

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' Terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

- 2 -

6th Charge
Against
Col. TOKUNAGA
Isao
Lt. TANAKA
Hitochi only

COMMITTING A WAR CRIME in that they at the Prisoners-of-War Camp HQ's at FORFAR STREET, KOWLOON, HONG KONG, in or about the month of August 1942 when Commandant and Intelligence Officer respectively of the Prisoners-of-War Camp Headquarters, were in violation of the laws and usages of war, together concerned in the maltreatment of Sgt. J.O. PAYNE, L/Cpl. G. BERZENSKI, Pte. J.H. ADAMS and Pte. P.J. ELLIS, all Canadian Prisoners-of-War then in their custody and command.

7th Charge
Against
Col. TOKUNAGA
Isao only.

COMMITTING A WAR CRIME in that he at HONG KONG, in or about the month of August 1942 when Commandant of all Prisoners-of-War Camp in HONG KONG, was, in violation of the laws and usages of war, concerned in the killing of Sgt. J.O. PAYNE, L/Cpl. G. BERZENSKI, Pte. J.H. ADAMS and Pte. P.J. ELLIS, all Canadian Prisoners-of-War then in his custody and command.

8th Charge
Against
Col. TOKUNAGA
Isao only

COMMITTING A WAR CRIME in that he at HONG KONG on or about 14 September 1942 when Commandant of all Prisoners-of-War Camps in HONG KONG, was, in violation of the laws and usages of war, concerned in the killing of Pte. V. BRANSON, L/Cpl. W.G. BYRNE, P. CONNELLY, Pte. J. STOPPORTH and Pte. M.T. DUNNE, all British Prisoners-of-War then in his custody and command.

9th Charge
Against
Col. TOKUNAGA
Isao only.

COMMITTING A WAR CRIME in that he at HONG KONG between October 1942 and 15 August 1945 when Commandant of all Prisoners-of-War Camps in HONG KONG, did, in violation of the laws and usages of war, misappropriate for his own use and benefit Red Cross supplies of food, medicined clothes and other comforts intended for the Prisoners-of-War interned in HONG KONG, and further did permit and condone the mis-appropriation of such Red Cross supplies by his staff.

10th Charge
Against
Col. TOKUNAGA
Isao only.

COMMITTING A WAR CRIME in that he at divers places in HONG KONG between 24 January 1942 and 15 August 1945 when Commandant of all Prisoners-of-War Camps in HONG KONG, was, in violation of the laws and usages of war, concerned in the beating, torture and unlawful killing of numerous Chinese Civilians in HONG KONG aforesaid.

11th Charge
Against
Lt. TANAKA
Hitochi only

COMMITTING A WAR CRIME in that he, at No.167 ARGYLE STREET, KOWLOON, HONG KONG, in or about the month of August 1943 when Commandant of the UPPER ARGYLE STREET OFFICERS CAMP and concurrently O.i/c Intelligence Section, Prisoners-of-War Camps Headquarters, was, in violation of the laws and usages of war, concerned in the maltreatment of two unidentified Chinese Drivers and Lt. RADDOK and one or more other British Prisoners-of-War then in his custody and command.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cm	Ref.
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
cm	Ref.
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' Terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.	

BM/JAG/65201,
General Headquarters,
South East Asia Land Forces.
9th May, 1947.

Commander,
Land Forces,
Hong Kong.

Subject:- War Crimes Trial.

Reference the attached proceedings of the trial of

1. Col. Col. TOKUNAKA Isao.
2. Capt. SAITO Shunkichi.
3. Lt. TANAKA Hitochi.
4. Int. TSUTADA Itsuo.
5. Sgt. HARADA Jotaro.

of the Imperial Japanese Army and the attached petitions.

1. The five accused were tried jointly by a military court at Hong Kong in a trial beginning on 17th Oct 1946 and lasting for over 50 days. A mass of evidence was adduced both from live witnesses and in the form of affidavits and this evidence was amplified by extremely voluminous exhibits consisting largely of records relating to the P.O.W. Camps in Hong Kong compiled by the Ps.O.W. themselves.

2. Eleven charges were preferred. The first accused was prosecuted on charges 1 - 10 inclusive, the second accused on charges 1 - 5, the third accused on charges 1, 3, 6 & 11, the fourth and fifth accused on the first charge only. The Court recorded findings of guilty on all charges except the fourth, tenth and eleventh; they also found TANAKA not guilty of the sixth charge. The Court made certain exceptions by way of special finding on the earlier group of charges; in particular as regards the first charge they exempted the 3rd, 4th & 5th accused from responsibility for contributing to the deaths of Ps.O.W. as averred in the particulars.

The accused were sentenced as follows:-

1st Accused	-	Death by hanging.
2nd Accused	-	Death by hanging.
3rd Accused	-	3 years' Imprisonment.
4th Accused	-	2 years' Imprisonment.
5th Accused	-	1 years' Imprisonment.

3. The first five charges deal with the alleged ill-treatment of Ps.O.W. in various camps and hospitals in Hong Kong and with the general maladministration of them. The remaining six charges refer in the main to war crimes committed against individual groups of prisoners. I propose to deal briefly with the first five charges in one group and will then discuss the remaining charges separately.

4. The first five charges cover:-

(a) inadequate accommodation, sanitation, food and clothing

...../2

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235 / 1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.

- 2 -

- (b) harsh treatment of sick Ps.O.W. and failure to provide drugs and other facilities for their treatment.
- (c) beatings and ill-treatment
- (d) working parties sent on war work and dangerous projects
- (e) inhuman working of Ps.O.W. when physically unfit.
- (f) compulsory signing of a parole
- (g) collective punishments
- (h) general ill-treatment.

There was ample evidence adduced by the prosecution to support these charges except the 4th charge which concerned the I.M.H. at Kowloon over which none of the accused apparently exercised control.

Col. TOKIMAYA (the 1st accused) was at all material times in charge of all P.O.W. Camps in Hong Kong and held an overall responsibility for their proper administration. The general facts as to the bad conditions existing are not denied by the defence but it was urged that in some instances the Ps.O.W. themselves contributed to their own discomfort in that, for example, they traded their messing equipment for cigarettes. The main line of defence was, however, that in spite of lack of co-operation from other Military departments, the accused did all in his power to ameliorate the lot of the prisoners. There was little evidence to support any such contention.

Capt. SAITO (the 2nd accused) was on Col. Tokimaya's staff as medical officer in charge of all Ps.O.W. Camps. The defence maintained that he was only responsible as regards Ps.O.W. to supervise the work of their own M.Os. in respect of diagnosis and treatment and that he was never responsible for their health. It was admitted that the sanitary equipment in its widest sense "left something to be desired" but on his behalf again the main line of defence was that he did his best in extremely difficult circumstances. Again there was little evidence to support this contention. There was in fact ample evidence to show that with more reasonable action on his part many deaths from diphtheria, dysentery and other causes could have been avoided and the risks of infection substantially reduced. Much of the evidence against this accused concerned his failure to supply serum and other means to combat a serious epidemic of diphtheria which began in July 1942. It was clear that serum was available through commercial sources in the town and the prosecution urged that Saito therefore had no excuse for not providing it as soon as it was needed. He did eventually make available adequate stocks but these came too late to stem the epidemic which had already resulted in numerous deaths.

Lt. TANAKA (the 3rd accused) was Chief of the Intelligence or Information section and was responsible for investigation of documents and identity of Ps.O.W. He was also, in April 1944, appointed adjutant. There is prosecution evidence to show that he was "concerned" in beating prisoners but the defence submit that he was in no position either to control the guards directly all the time or to give orders to interpreters, and he was therefore not to be held responsible for their misdeeds. The court did not find this to be so and convicted him on the first charge.

.....2/

1		2		Ref.:		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
cms						WO 235/1012 PT1	
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives material.							
						1	
						Ins	
						2	

- 3 -

TSUTADO & HARADA (4th & 5th accused) were on the Camp staff and there is ample prosecution evidence to show that they were concerned in the ill-treatment of prisoners. On their behalf it was contended that the prosecution case against them was somewhat shaky and that though they admitted assaulting Ps.O.W. they denied these assaults to be as severe as averred by the prosecution. The defence of superiors orders was also put forward but this could only influence the court in mitigation of sentence.

5. The next three charges concern the escape and recapture of 4 Canadians and the attempted escape of five British Ps.O.W. The 6th charge is laid jointly against Tokimaya and Tanaka for ill-treating the Canadians. That there was ill-treatment there is no doubt but there is no evidence that Tanaka himself manhandled them and he was therefore acquitted. Tokimaya remains the only person involved in the charge and there was evidence to support the finding of guilty against him.

6. The seventh charge is against Tokimaya alone and the facts are beyond dispute. The Canadians were executed on the orders of this accused and the only apparent variation is the evidence as to the mode of execution. In defence it is said that he was carrying out superior orders. It may be said also of the 8th charge (against Tokimaya only) that the execution is undisputed and that again the plea is superior orders. These two charges are perhaps the most damning against Tokimaya. The circumstances in each were similar except that whereas the victims referred to in the seventh charge had actually escaped from the camp, those mentioned in the eighth charge were merely caught attempting to escape, having dug a tunnel for the purpose.

7. The 9th charge (against the 1st accused only) is for the misappropriation of Red Cross supplies and there is ample direct evidence to support the charge. The defence makes light of the prosecution evidence and says that such stores as came his way were gifts, or that the goods had got on to the market through theft by dock labourers, or by Ps.O.W. selling supplies in exchange for cigarettes, etc. The court did not accept the defence submissions.

8. The tenth charge (against the 1st accused only) concerns ill-treatment and killings of Chinese civilians but the evidence to connect the accused with these offences was not sufficient and he was accordingly acquitted.

9. The eleventh charge is laid against the 3rd accused only and alleges ill-treatment of civilians and Ps.O.W. but it was not satisfactorily established and the accused was acquitted.

10. Summing up briefly the case as a whole the position is as follows:

The 1st accused was in charge of all P.O.W. camps in Hong Kong and the 2nd was on his staff as M.O. Lt. Tanaka was in charge of information and sometimes acted as adjutant. The 4th and 5th accused were also connected with these camps. On the capture of Hong Kong conditions deteriorated and it is admitted that conditions in P.O.W. camps were appalling. The senior officers did little if anything to mend matters and the juniors followed suit. Owing to lack of proper supervision etc. many prisoners

.....4/

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref:		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES			
		WO 235/1012 PT1					
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.							

- 4 -

died whose lives might have been saved and many were illtreated when they should never have been. Red Cross supplies were misdirected and misused and escaping prisoners were shot without trial.

11. The two main lines of defence are, firstly, that the accused did all they could in the circumstances and secondly that superior orders had to be obeyed. In minor offences the facts were admitted but the gravity of the offence was said to be exaggerated by the prosecution. The sentences reflect the opinion of the court regarding the degrees of guilt attributable to each accused. In my opinion you should consider commuting the death sentence passed on the second accused Saito. He was undoubtedly guilty of criminal and callous neglect in the highest degree but his offences were offences of omission rather than of commission. It is apparent from the proceedings that Saito was present (in his medical capacity) at the execution of the victims referred to in the seventh charge. It is possible that the Court may have been influenced by this when considering sentence though Saito was not of course joined in the seventh charge.

12. The petitions disclose no material factors which were not before the court and I advise that except so far as you may vary the sentence awarded to Saito it be dismissed and the proceedings confirmed.

M/N 11

NHN/RRH

Brigadier,
DJAG, South East Asia Land Forces.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	2

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.

00017

TELEPHONES:

D.M.S. 39659
D.D.M.S. 39660
SECY. 39600
ACCT. 39573
GENERAL 39683

MEDICAL DEPARTMENT,
H. K. & S. BANK BLDG., 1ST FLOOR

HONG KONG 17th Feb. 1947.

YOUR REF:

OUR REF: M.D.

Your Excellency,

I have the honour to express my keen appreciation of the courtesy which Your Excellency extended to me in connexion with my submissions for the exercise of clemency by Your Excellency in the cases of Colonel Tokunaga and Captain Saito.

I attach a copy of a letter from Dr. I. Newton, Deputy Director of Medical Services, Hong Kong Government Medical Department, relating to Captain Saito.

All I can add to this is that, while I had very little success in getting medicines, vitamins, etc., into the Prisoner of War Camps and Military Hospitals openly through Captain Saito and was forced to employ other channels involving no little risk to my helpers, I was able to obtain certain drugs, instruments, etc., from Chinese friends during the last ten months after my release from prison and internment in Ma Tau Chung Camp on the Kowloon Peninsula.

In most of the cases affecting the camp, the medical supplies were sent in after they had been examined by Captain Saito, who could have prevented them reaching me. He did prevent small batteries reaching me for an ophthalmoscope on the grounds that they could have been used for directing allied aircraft at night. (The illumination of the instrument, as you know, could not be seen at a distance of 100 feet.) As I was the only doctor in the camp in question for most of the period and had to act as doctor, surgeon, obstetrician, dentist, etc., it made a very great difference to the inmates that Captain Saito should have let through these supplies.

As regards Colonel Tokunaga, about six weeks after the surrender he issued orders to the P.O.W. Camps and Military Hospital guards to allow parcels of food to be sent in weekly, except for a period after escapes when such a privilege was stopped temporarily.

Theoretically, only foods were allowed in, but the guards under Colonel Tokunaga actually allowed a wide range of articles and permitted valuable drugs like thiamin chloride (B1) to go in under the guise of "foot powder".

Eggs, peanuts, sugar, tinned meat and fish, to the extent of six or eight large sacks were taken weekly by my wife and her helpers to Bowen Road Military Hospital and twenty to thirty gunny bags full of tinned foods, toilet articles, shoes, shirts, etc., were carried to Shamshuipo and the other camps weekly by a group of volunteer third national and Chinese women under Miss Helen Ho, O.B.E.

Colonel Tokunaga could have refrained from allowing any such parcels into the camps and they must have contributed very largely to the welfare of the inmates.

From my personal observations on Captain Saito,

1		2		Ref.		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
cms						WO 235/1012 PT1	
1		2		1		Ins	
						2	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.

I am inclined to the opinion that he is not altogether normal mentally.

In the case of Colonel Tokunaga, I should have hazarded the view that he was lazy and greedy rather than deliberately sadistic. He is an oldish man and has been in prison awaiting trial for seventeen months.

I do not wish to give the impression that I am any way critical of the Court and its findings. Such would be most improper on my part. Nor do I wish to try to minimise the offences against humanity for which Dr. Saito and Colonel Tokunaga have been found guilty.

At the same time, I earnestly trust that Your Excellency may be pleased to consider that justice will be met - our British idea of justice - by exercising your prerogative of mercy and commuting the sentence to one of imprisonment for life.

I have the honour to be,
Your Excellency's
obedient servant,



Director of Medical Services.

His Excellency,
Major General G. W. E. J. Erskine, C.B., D.S.O.,
General Officer Commanding the Troops in China,
China Command Headquarters,
HONG KONG.

1		2		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
cms		Ref.:		WO 235/1012 PT1	
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' material.					
1		1		ins	
2		2		2	

COPY.

Dear Dr. Selwyn-Clarke,

You have asked me if there is anything I can say which might weigh in favour of Dr. Saito, and as I had dealings with him for a period of about five months and as during that period my relations with him were as nearly those of one doctor with another as the circumstances permitted, I am glad of the opportunity you have given me.

From the time Dr. Saito came until the middle of June, I was dealing with him almost daily, as the senior medical man in the camp and later on as the senior surgeon.

During that period, he was a Lieutenant, and as such very "small fry" in the Japanese Army and I gained the impression that with the best will in the world his ability to improve conditions or get anything done was almost negligible.

What he did do in a personal capacity to assist he did and it included such items as the following:

I had, with one of his predecessors, made a visit to the La Salle College and collected a large amount of hospital stores and equipment and some forty sacks of cracked wheat for use in Argyle Street which was being converted into a hospital camp. Most of these stores were taken by Dr. Saito's predecessor and sold, I was later informed by a Chinese interpreter. On Dr. Saito's arrival, what was left was brought into the camp including some 12 sacks of cracked wheat which proved invaluable in treating the dysentery cases.

He arranged for me, a civilian, to be transferred to the St. Teresa's Hospital, the only properly equipped hospital available in Kowloon for P.O.Ws. and put me in charge of the surgery. This followed an incident where an officer with an aneurysm of the vertebral artery needed an urgent operation and there was no surgeon available among the P.O.Ws. who was prepared to tackle it. In allowing me to do it, he was running quite counter to his normal duties and I was later informed by a Chinese interpreter that he had met and overcome considerable opposition in arranging my transfer to St. Teresa's hospital which was very definitely to our advantage as there was no other surgeon available on the Kowloon side.

On another occasion, a perforated duodenal ulcer was brought into Argyle Street at night from Shamshuipo and on my request, Dr. Saito allowed me to go to St. Teresa's hospital with the patient and operate, he, himself, being present and afterwards, about midnight took me back to his quarters and gave me some much needed extra food before accompanying me back to Argyle Street.

When at St. Teresa's hospital, I found that the diet was, if anything, poorer than in Argyle Street Camp, I spoke to Dr. Saito about it with the result that he arranged for two sacks of date plums to be sent in. These plums were very sweet and provided a valuable addition to the diet. I think it exceedingly improbable that they were part of the standard ration.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref.
WO 235 / 1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

Before transfer to St. Teresa's hospital, I had seen a P.O.W. with a large abdominal hernia that, although it was in no sense an emergency, needed operation in view of the probable hard manual work that would have to be done. When I was transferred to St. Teresa's this man was transferred to Sham-shuipo and the opportunity would have been lost had not Dr. Saito taken the trouble to find him. In this case, he forgot the man's name but went to the trouble of collecting all the abdominal hernia cases in the camp, some three in all, and brought them to St. Teresa's for me to operate on in order to be sure of getting the right man.

On another occasion, I needed some special instruments for an operation on one of the V.A.Ds. in St. Teresa's hospital and Dr. Saito went to Bowen Road himself and fetched them for me. He, also, on that occasion took a short personal note to Colonel Bowie for me and brought back an answer.

These items may seem insignificant when put down like this, but when the background is remembered of the general Japanese attitude towards P.O.Ws., Dr. Saito's behaviour in my dealings with him presented an enlightenment and revolt against tradition which was unusual in the Japanese and should be counted to his credit.

As I have said at the start of this letter, Dr. Saito's relations with me were those of a fellow doctor working in very difficult circumstances and I hold the impression that shortcomings that existed were the result of his lack of authority in the Japanese Army and not of intentional cruelty on his behalf.

If these remarks are of any assistance in helping Dr. Saito in his present circumstances, I should be more than pleased.

Yours sincerely,

Signed. Isaac Newton.

17th February, 1947.

1		2		Ref.:		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
cma						WO 235/1012 PT1	
						1	
						ins	
						2	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives leaflet

Appeal against the Finding and Sentence of the No.5 War Crimes Court, Hong Kong, taken place on 13th Feb'47.

To:- The G.O.C. Land Forces, Hong Kong.

I, TOKUNAGA Isao, hereby petition against the Finding and Sentence of a Military Court (No.5 War Crimes Court) held on 13th Feb'47, which found me guilty of the following charges, and sentenced me to death by hanging:

1st- Committing a War Crime in that I at Shamshuipo, Hong Kong, between the 31st Jan'42 and 15th Aug'45 when I as the Camp Commandant of the POW Camp, and responsible for the well being of British, Canadian and Dutch POWs interned in the Shamshuipo POW Camp was, in violation of the laws and usages of war, concerned in the inhumane treatment of the said POWs resulting in the death of some and physical sufferings to others.

2nd- Committing a War Crime in that I at North Point, Hong Kong between 31st Jan'42 and 26th Sept'42 or thereabouts when Commandant of all POW Camps in Hong Kong, and responsible for the well being of British and Canadian POWs interned in the North Point POW Camp was, in violation of the laws and usages of war, concerned in the inhumane treatment of the said POWs resulting in physical sufferings to some.

3rd- Committing a War Crime in that I at Kowloon, Hong Kong, between Apr'42 and May'44 or thereabouts when the Commandant of all POW Camps in Hong Kong, and responsible for the well being of British and Canadian POWs interned in the Upper Argyle Street Camp was, in violation of the laws and usages of war, concerned in the inhumane treatment of the said POWs resulting in physical suffering to some.

5th- Committing a War Crime in that I at Hong Kong, between 31st Jan'42 and 15th Aug'45 or thereabouts when the Commandant of all POW Camps in Hong Kong and responsible for the well being of British and Canadian POWs serving on the medical staff and/or receiving treatment at the Bowen Rd Hospital in Hong Kong, was, in violation of the laws and usages of war, concerned in the inhumane treatment of the said POWs resulting in the deaths of some and in physical sufferings to others.

6th- Committing a War Crime in that I at the POW Camp HQ's at Forfar Street, Kowloon, Hong Kong, in or about the month of August 1942 when Commandant of the POW Camp HQ, was, in violation of the laws and usages of war, concerned in the maltreatment of Sgt. J.O. Payne, L/Cpl G.Berzensky, Pte J.H.Adams and Pte P.J.Ellis, all Canadian POWs then in my custody and command.

7th- Committing a War Crime in that I at Hong Kong, in or about the month of August 1942 when Commandant of all POW Camps in Hong

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
Ref:	WO 235/1012 PT1
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet	
1	2

- 2 -

Hong/

Kong, was, in violation of the laws and usages of war, concerned in the illegal killing of Sgt. J.O. Payne, L/Cpl G. Berzensky, Pte J.H. Adams and Pte P.J. Ellis, all Canadian POWs then in my custody and command.

8th- Committing a War Crime in that I at Hong Kong, on or about 14th Sept '42 when Commandant of all POW Camps in Hong Kong, was, in violation of the laws and usages of war, concerned in the illegal killing of Pte V. Branson, L/Cpl W.G. Byrne, P. Connely, Pte Stoppworth and Pte M.T. Dunne, all British POWs then in my custody and command.

9th- Committing a War Crime in that I at Hong Kong, between October 1942 and 15 Aug '45 when Commandant of all POW Camps in Hong Kong, did, in violation of the laws and usages of war, misappropriate for my own use and benefit Red Cross supplies of food, medicine, clothes and other comforts intended for the POWs interned in Hong Kong, and further did permit and condone the misappropriation of such Red Cross supplies by my staff.

The grounds of my ~~XXXX~~ Petition are: -

I was a fighting soldier in the Japanese Army, and had no special knowledge on the maintenance of health and medical standards. Capt. Saito was allotted the duties of Medical Officer at the Hong Kong POW Camp. Capt. Saito had a free hand in all matters within the scope of his duties, though I did sanction major decisions involving big scale changes in the campaigns against disease. You will understand my position sir, I'm confident. In fact, all standards of medical treatment, sanitation, supplies of drugs, medical and surgical equipment necessary for the well being of POWs were applied for to the Governor-General's office on Capt. Saito's advice.

In spite of my many administrative duties, I found time to take an interest in the general health of the POWs. And, indeed, during the outbreaks of diphtheria, Dr. Saito had my every assistance and encouragement in the pursuit of his aims in the interests of the POWs health. In fact, Dr. Saito did make a trip to Canton in search of Diphtheria anti-toxin on my advice and arrangements. There is nothing I can say, that has not been shown in my evidence at the Court. However, I would like to know that this appeal has not been altogether futile. When I took over this position as Camp Commandant, every difficulty surmounted the path to a Model POW Camp, and I was not endowed with any super-powers to aid my cause.

Supplies of drugs and equipment were shipped from Hong Kong to Japan soon after the Japanese occupation. And, some of the remaining stock, inevitably found its way to the

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235 / 1012 PT 1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.

- 3 -

to the/

black market. It is a mistake to hold me guilty for non-availability of serums, and thus indirectly responsible for deaths which occurred under epidemic conditions.

In the matter, therefore, of charges 1 to 3 and the 5th charge I wish especially that the wording "resulting in the deaths of some" be reconsidered.

In no evidence but in some testimonies, there has been a gross distortion of the truth where delays in the hospitalization of POWs have been stated due to negligence and refusals of permission on my part. All POWs hospitalized were as a rule reported to my office. Should a case be an emergency one or a little more serious than usual, there was no order sent out by me saying that these cases must be registered at my office before hospitalisation. It was in order for serious cases to be taken to hospital and reported later.

I ask your sincere reconsideration of the points set out above, and the wording "resulting in the death of some" in these charges.

(B) Re- Charge 6:

On this charge Lt. Tanaka and I are accused of ill-treating 4 Canadians at the POW Camp HQ. The evidence of witness Mak Kee Sing, it appears, was not considered sufficiently condemning - and Lt. Tanaka was found not guilty. On Lt. Tanaka's evidence I was found guilty. He said that he saw me slap a POW. Even had I done so - why should I deny this. According, to the evidence Lt. Tanaka was at this time 25 metres away from me. I think he could so easily have been mistaken in my identity, especially as he states that he was there for a minute of so only. I would like the facts of this charge reconsidered.

(C) Re Charges 7 and 8.

Article 3 of the Prisoner of War Camp Regulation (Exh.V4) verified my evidence re these charges. As Camp Commandant, I ~~have~~ had my superiors, this position did not make me free-lance. Maj. Gen. Shoji stated before the Court that according to Article 9 of the 2nd section the Japanese Army Field Service Regulation, subordinates must absolutely obey their commander's orders under all circumstances. I think this is very clear.

It is expected that POWs will attempt to escape at any opportunity; thus, measures are taken to make escapes undesirable. Nevertheless, escapes from Hong Kong POW Camp continued to take place. On these occasions I was punished by

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref.		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES		1	
				WO 235/1012 PT1		Ins	
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.							

- 4 -

p nished by/

The Governor General of Hong Kong because of the insufficient guards. The materials and labour were then supplied to the Camp to make it Escape proof.

About August, 42, four Canadian POWs escaped from Nth. Point Camp and were recaptured by a marine patrol. ~~Though~~ I reported the matter to the Chief of Staff. Some time later, I was ordered to make arrangements for the execution of the four Canadians. These men were made an example of because it was believed that escapes would cease to be, when POWs were informed of punishment and thus were persuaded that it was a risky business.

A month later at Shamshuipo Camp, a plan for escape was discovered and five British ring leaders were arrested. A report was made. And, I was ordered to arrange their execution.

These POWs were not tried. I expressed my opinion to the Chief of Staff, saying that this was improper. But I was strictly informed to carry out the orders for execution.

I am innocent of any guilt of the executions of these POWs. Was I not merely a bearer of a message? I would like the matter of these executions reconsidered and my innocence established.

Re 9th Charge - Red Cross Supplies

I did not embessel the Red Cross supplies intended for POWs. Neither did I allow my subordinates to do this. This is quite clear, but this charge I wish analized again.

A sentence of Death has been passed on me. It weighs more than does the evidence and circumstances. My conscience is clear, - My task was hard and circumstances unfavourable. And, I humbly beg that the sentence of death be cancelled. And, that if there has been one fleeting doubt in the mind of this Court - that I be allowed to live.

Leave me to a final Judge who has seen all, and needs no further evidence, witnesses, or advisory officers.

26- 2 - 1947.

Signed.

德永德
(TOLULAGA, ISAO)

1		2	
cm		Ref:	
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES		WO 235/1012 PT1	
1		1	
ins		2	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.

Appeal against the Finding and Sentence of the No.5 War Crimes Court, Hong Kong, taken place on 13 Feb 1947.

To:- The G.O.C. Land Forces, Hong Kong.

I, SAITO Shunkichi, hereby petition against the Finding and Sentence of a Military Court (No.5 War Crimes Court) held on 13th Feb.1947, which found me guilty of the following charges, and sentenced me to death by hanging:

1st- Committing a War Crime in that I at Shamshuipo, Hong Kong between the 31st Jan'42 and the 15th Aug.1945 or thereabouts when as the member of the POW Camp staff under the command of Col TOKUNAGA Isao, and responsible for the well being of British, Canadian and Dutch POWs interned in the Shamshuipo POW Camp was in violation of the laws and usages of war, ~~together~~ concerned in the inhumane treatment of the said POWs resulting in the deaths of some and in physical sufferings to others.

2nd- Committing a War Crime in that I at North Point, Hong Kong, between the 31st Jan'42 and the 26th Sept'42 or thereabouts when as a Medical Officer of all POW Camps in Hong Kong, and responsible for the well being of British and Canadian POWs interned in the North Point POW Camp was in violation of the laws and usages of War, concerned in the inhumane treatment of the said POWs resulting in physical suffering of some.

3rd- Committing a War Crime in that I at Kowloon, Hong Kong, between Apr'42 and May'44 or thereabouts when as a Medical Officer of all POW Camps in Hong Kong, responsible for the well being of British and Canadian POWs interned in the Upper Argyle Street Officers Camp was, in violation of the laws and usages of war, concerned in the inhumane treatment of the said POWs resulting in the deaths of some and physical sufferings to others.

5th- Committing a War Crime in that I at Hong Kong, between 31st Jan'42 and 15th Aug'45 or thereabouts when as a Medical Officer of all POW Camps in Hong Kong responsible for the well being of British and Canadian POWs serving on the medical staff/or receiving treatment at the Bowen Road Hospital in Hong Kong, was, in violation of the laws and usages of war, concerned in the inhumane treatment of the said POWs resulting in the deaths of some and in physical sufferings to others.

The grounds of my Petition are that the Verdict is against the Weight of the Evidence. Hereby, I submit the following objections to the Finding that I am guilty of the above charges:-

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235 / 1012 PT1	
1	2
line	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.

- 2 -

charges:-/

I was found guilty in "failure to provide medical treatment, equipment and supplies and harsh treatment of sick POWs" (subparas 'b' of the charges). I carried out my duties as a Medical Officer of all POW Camps in Hong Kong untill Japanese surrender under direct command of the Camp Commandant Col Tokunaga, therefore my responsibilities regarding these charges were extremily limited. The health of POWs was entirely in the hands of POW Medical Officers ~~hands~~, ~~which~~ which is proved before the Court by the testimonies of Col Tokunaga, Maj Ando and the Article 23 of the "Detailed POW Treatment Regulation" (Exhibit W4). My job concernig this was only to supervise the work of the said POW Medical Staff, and to be responsible to the Camp Commandant Col Tokunaga.

It is true that medical supplies and equipment were short at the POW Camp, but it was beyond my powers to fullfill 100% requirements, and mainly due to shortage of such in Hong Kong at the time of Japanese occupation. The necessary amount of drugs and equipment required by POW Medical Staff I always indented and submitted to my direct superior Col Tokunaga, and it was his responsibility to procure them. There is not sufficient evidence to prove that I neglected to apply for the drugs required by POWs. When the Governor General's Office alloted the special sum of money monthly to purchase drugs for the use of POWs, I, complying with the orders of the Camp Commandant, took active part in purchasing all I could in Hong Kong and Canton. At the time of dysentery and diphtheria epidemic at the Camp I managed to procure, to the best of my ability, a great part of the drugs required by the POW Medical Staff. If the POWs were sometimes short of necessary drugs it was only due to: a/ general shortage of drugs on the market; b/ shortage of drugs at the disposal of the Japanese Army Occupation of Hong Kong and also non-cooperation of the higher military circles in providing the same, even they were able to do so. The ~~xx~~ evidences of Col Tokunaga, Maj Ando and the Article 21 of the "Detailed POW Treatment Regulation" are verifying the above stated. The Japanese Army Transmission No.466 (Exhibit B5) and the Article 272 of the Army Internal Service Regulation are also supporting the matter explained above.

It is true that quite a number of deaths among POWs occurred from avitaminosis, dysentery and diphtheria. a/ Avitaminosis was due to the lack of food and partly because of the difficulties in digesting of unknown to the Europeans Japanese diet. Food ration was fixed by the Governor General's Office and the Camp Commandant (assisted by the Intendant Officer) was responsible for the issuing of the same to the POWs. Fundamentally, I had nothing to do with this matter. On several occassions I strongly recommended to the Camp Commandant the importance of improvement in food situation, but

1		2		1		2	
cme		Ref:		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES			
		WO 235 / 1012 PT1					
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.							

- 3 -

but/

he himself was restricted by the Regulations and his superior at the Governor General's Office. There was also unfortunate fact that the first few months of internment the POWs, due to lack of organisation, were rather short of supplementary food rich with necessart vitamins (meat, vegetables, etc.,) which resulted in increased number of beri-beri and palagra cases. Col. Tokunaga has testified to support these facts. To ease the situation on my recommendation, yeast tablets, vitamin 'B' powder were made available to the POWs timely. However, in spite of my and Col. Tokunaga's efforts, avitaminosis among POWs was not completely controlled.

b/ Dysentery, by the time of the Colony's capitulation was prevalent among the British and Canadian Troops in Hong Kong. This fact has been verified by Lt. Col. Crawford's evidence. Overcrowding and inadequate sanitary arrangements were the main reasons in spreading of dysentary among POWs. On my frequent suggestions Col. Tokunaga tried to improve the accommodation situation, but failed to accomplish it successfully due to the general shortage of billets in Hong Kong. The Sanitary conditions of the Camp were gradually improved by the Camp Commandant's orders on my advice. To combat with dysentary I managed to procure a large quantity of magnesium sulphate from the stock of Stanley Fort, and also from the market in Canton I purchased trianon and emetine. Considering the large number of POWs under treatment and rapidly rising prices of drugs on the market, the sum of 10,000 yen allotted monthly to the POW camp was hardly enough to meet the demand. My recommendations for an increase of the said amount of money met with disapproval from higher circles. With effect from Aug. 43 the POW Camp was permitted to draw medical supplies from the Army Hospital and Supply Depot, however, in fact, 20% to 25% of indented by me Requirements were issued to the Camp. This only proved again what kind of attitude existed from the other Japanese Units towards the Camp. c/ Diptheria first suspect cases appeared at Shamshuipo Camp in June 42. I

immediately hospitalised then in St. Theresa Hospital. When after thorough examination was established the fact of real Diptheria, I reported this matter to the Camp Commandant, and made available for the use of POW medical staff all existing stocks of anti - diptheria serum, which was at that time in Bowen Road Hospital. Preventative measures (examination of throats, disinfection of huts and clothing, wearing of masks, using potasium permangnate for gargling, etc.) were inforce by me in the Camp and I strictly observed that they were carried out. As for the anti - diptheria serum, I requested to the Camp Commandant that it should be made available from the Army sources, and meanwhile myself managed to purchase locally 230,000 units in July and Aug. 42.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref.
WO 235 / 1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet

of 1942/.

I also managed to obtain in Sept. and Oct. 1942, through the Medical Staff of Governor General's Office, over 5,000,000 units of serum. Witnesses Hopkins, Gray, Hsu and Nazarin stated that there was enough serum in the Colony prior to Japanese occupation, but they failed to prove whether the said serum was available on the local market during the epidemic. It is well known fact that soon after the occupation Japanese Army and Navy moved out of Colony all available medical supplies for their own use.

Regarding medical equipment. Realising that/St Theresa Hosp closing of would be a ~~serious~~ blow to the seriously ill POWs of the Kowloon POW Camps, I gathered some spare surgical equipment from the Bowe Rd Hospital and established an operation room in Shamshuipo POW Camp. Unfortunately my efforts to do the same at Argyle St Camp were not successful due to the shortage of the equipment. To compensate that, the Camp Commandant, on my suggestion, permitted to use operation room of the Indian Military Hospital for an emergency cases. Regret to say that there were occasions when POWs were short of medical supplies and equipment, however, I did all I can to assist the Camp Commandant to better the existing conditions.

Re- harsh treatment of sick POWs. POW Medical Staff was directly responsible for the diagnosis and treatment of sick POWs (ref: Lt. Col Crawford's statement). I had no hand in that at all. To hospitalise a sick POW must be obtained permission from the Camp Commandant, and there was not a question that I could have done it on my own authority. Transportation of sick to the hospital was in hands of General Affairs Section. Delay in transportation sometimes was unavoidable due to the shortage of MT vehicles at the POW HQ and also due to non-cooperation of the Shipping Unit in providing a boat timely. The above facts have been verified before the Court by Col Tokunaga, Lt Tanaka, Maj Ando and the Article 24 of Detailed POW Treatment Regulation.

The case of delay in hospitalization were: ex-Shamshuipo Camp- Messers Lapoint and Rapp, Maj Hook and seven dysentery cases under charge of Dr Rodrigues; ex-Argyle Str Camp- Maj Armstrong, Lt Boker and Lt Gutters. Their reasons for delay were fully explained by my Counsel for Defence in his Closing Address before the Court. I wish to draw your attention to the above cases and beg you to examine them carefully, and you will see that I had no responsibility whatsoever in that matter.

The main reasons of unusual high death rate among POWs were: a/ Malnutrition (due to lack of food) decreased the body's resistance to diseases, and
b/ Overcrowding helped spread the disease.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235 /1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.

- 5 -

the disease./

To my mind these the main points which caused a lot of deaths during the epidemics. And it is hardly logical to blame me for the inadequate food or accommodation, because I had no authority to improve in these matters. The Camp Commandant whose responsibility was to provide the POWs with food and accommodation, has been strongly advised by me to better condition. However, Col Tokunaga's hands were also tied by the general policy of Japanese Government existing at that time. Strict regarding discipline and indifferent in welfare of POWs the Central Authority with its policy influenced the local Japanese Army Units, who in turn simply refused to cooperate, when the POWs were concerned. According to the opinions of witness Maj.Gen Shoji and Col Tokunaga, there are a large number of the members of various POW Staff now on trials for the War Crimes all over the Asia, because of this rather severe ~~XXXX~~ policy of the Japanese Government.

I was found guilty on four charges against me. I admit that there might have been some minor points I have to share in responsibility of the well being of the POWs. However, the sentence of the Court is very severe, and I am quite sure I never deserved to be punished so heavily. Taking the above stated points in consideration, I humbly beg you to be lenient.

26 Feb'47.

Stanley Gaol, Hong Kong.

齋藤俊吉

Signed

(Saito, Shunkichi)

1		2		1		2	
Cms		Ref.		Ins		Ins	
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES							
WO 235 / 1012 PT1							
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' material.							

00033

Army Form A-4
(adapted)

**FORM FOR ASSEMBLY AND PROCEEDING OF
A MILITARY COURT FOR THE TRIAL OF WAR CRIMINALS.**

A—Order convening the Court.

At *Hong Kong* this *15th* day of *October*. 1946.

Whereas it appears to me, the Commander Land Forces, Hong Kong, an officer empowered in this behalf by warrant of the Commander in Chief, Allied Land Forces, South East Asia, in pursuance of Regulation 2 of the Regulations attached to the Royal Warrants dated 14th June and 4th August, 1945, that the persons named in the annexed Schedule have committed the war crimes mentioned therein, I hereby convene a military court to try the said persons, and to consist of

President.

Lt. Col. R.C. Laming Dept. of J.A.B. in India

Barrister-at-law/Solicitor

Members.

Major J.T. Lorange J.A.B. Branch Canadian Army.

Capt. R.R. Busfield R.A.C.

Waiting Members

(Signed)

J.W. Listering Maj. Gen.

Commander Land Forces, Hong Kong.

(Convening Officer).

1		2		1		2	
cma		Ref:		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES		1	
				WO 235/1012 PT1		1	
						2	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

Number, rank, name and unit of accused	War Crime Charged	Plea	Finding and, if convicted, sentence	How dealt with by confirming officer
	<u>SECOND CHARGE</u> against Col Tokunaga Isao Capt Saito Shunkichi	Not Guilty Not Guilty	Guilty Guilty	
	COMMITTING A WAR CRIME in that they at NORTH POINT, HONG KONG, between the 24 January 1942 and the 26 September 1942 or thereabouts when Commandant and Medical Officer respectively of all Prisoners-of-War Camps in Hong Kong, and responsible for the well being of British and Canadian Prisoners-of-War interned in the NORTH POINT Prisoners-of-War Camp, were in violation of the laws and usages of war, together concerned in the inhumane treatment of the said Prisoners-of-War resulting in the deaths of some and in physical sufferings to others.	<i>Not Guilty</i>	Except that the Court find that the dates in respect of both those accused should be between 24 January 1942 and 26 September 1942 as Commandants and not between 24 January 1942 and 26 September 1942 as Commandants, and except, on respect of both those accused, for the words "in the deaths of some".	BRIGADIER GENERAL HONG KONG
	<u>THIRD CHARGE</u> against Col Tokunaga Isao Capt Saito Shunkichi Lt Tanaka Hitochi	Not Guilty Not Guilty Not Guilty	Guilty Guilty Guilty	
	COMMITTING A WAR CRIME in that they at KOW-LOON, HONG KONG, between April 1942 and May 1944 or thereabouts when the accused Col Tokunaga Isao and the accused Capt Saito Shunkichi were respectively Commandant and Medical Officer of all Prisoners-of-War in HONG KONG and the accused Lt Tanaka Hitochi was Commandant of the UPPER ARGYLE STREET OFFICERS CAMP, and responsible for the well being of British and Canadian Prisoners-of-War interned in the said UPPER ARGYLE STREET OFFICERS CAMP were, in violation of the laws and usages of war, together concerned in the inhumane	<i>Not Guilty</i>	Except for the words "in the deaths of some"	

1		2		1		2	
cms						ins	
Ref: WO 235/1012 PT1							

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.

00035

1		2		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES		1		1		2	
cms		Ref.:		WO 235/1012 PT1						ins	
<small>Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.</small>											

[Handwritten signature]

25.6.47

00036

Number, rank, name and unit of accused	War Crime Charged	Plea	Finding and, if convicted, sentence	How dealt with by confirming officer
	<p><u>THIRD CHARGE (Cont)</u> TREATMENT of the said Prisoners-of-War resulting in the deaths of some and in physical sufferings to others.</p> <p><u>FOURTH CHARGE</u> against Col Tokunaga Isao Capt Saito Shunkichi</p> <p>COMMITTING A WAR CRIME in that they in KOWLOON, HONG KONG, between February 1942 and 16 June 1942 or thereabouts when Commandant and Medical Officer respectively of all Prisoners-of-War Camps in HONG KONG and responsible for the well being of British and Canadian Prisoners-of-War serving on the medical staff and/or receiving treatment at the INDIAN MILITARY HOSPITAL at ARGYLE STREET, KOWLOON, HONG KONG, were, in violation of the laws and usages of war, together concerned in the inhumane treatment of the said Prisoners-of-War resulting in the deaths of some and in physical sufferings to others.</p> <p><u>FIFTH CHARGE</u> against Col Tokunaga Isao Capt Saito Shunkichi</p> <p>COMMITTING A WAR CRIME in that they at HONG KONG, between 24 January 1942 and 15 August 1945 or thereabouts when Commandant and Medical Officer respectively of all Prisoners-of-War Camps in HONG KONG</p>			
		<i>Not</i> NOT GUILTY NOT GUILTY	NOT GUILTY NOT GUILTY	BRITISH COMMANDER LAW FORCES HONG KONG
		<i>Not</i> NOT GUILTY NOT GUILTY	GUILTY GUILTY	EXCEPT THAT THE COURT FINDS THAT THESE TWO ACCUSED WERE RESPECTFULLY COMMANDANT AND MEDICAL OFFICERS OF ALL P.O.W. CAMPS IN HONG KONG BETWEEN 24 JANUARY 1942 AND 15 AUGUST 1945 AT KOWLOON AND NOT BETWEEN 24 JANUARY 1942 AND 15 AUGUST 1945 AT KOWLOON

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref:		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES			
		WO 235/1012 PT1					
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.							

00037

Number, rank, name and unit of accused	War Crime Charged	Plea	Finding and, if convicted, sentence	How dealt with by confirming officer
--	-------------------	------	---	--

FIFTH CHARGE (Cont)

and responsible for the well being of British and Canadian Prisoners-of-War serving on the medical staff and/or receiving treatment at the BOWEN ROAD HOSPITAL in HONG KONG, were, in violation of the laws and usages of war, together concerned in the inhumane treatment of the said Prisoners-of-War resulting in the deaths of some and in physical sufferings to others.

BAHAGIA
COMMANDER - AND FORCES
HONG KONG

SIXTH CHARGE

against
Col TOKUNAGA ISAO
Lt TANAKA
Hitochi only

NOT GUILTY

GUILTY

NOT GUILTY

NOT GUILTY

COMMITTING A WAR CRIME in that they at the Prisoners-of-War Camp H.Q.'s at FORFAR STREET, KOWLDON, HONG KONG, in or about the month of August 1942 when Commandant and Intelligence Officer respectively of the Prisoners-of-War Camp Headquarters, were in violation of the laws and usages of war, together concerned in the maltreatment of Sgt J.O. PAYNE, L/Cpl G. BERZENSKI, Pte J.H. ADAMS and Pte P.J. ELLIS, all Canadian Prisoners-of-War then in their custody and command.

Not

SEVENTH CHARGE

against
Col TOKUNAGA Isao
only

NOT

GUILTY

GUILTY

COMMITTING A WAR CRIME in that he at HONG KONG, in or about the month of August 1942 when Commandant of all Prisoners-of-War

Not

1		2		1		2	
cma		Ref:		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES		ins	
WO 235/1012 PT1							

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' Terms and Conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

00038

Number, rank, name and unit of accused	War Crime Charged	Plea	Finding and if convicted, sentence	How dealt with by confining officer
--	-------------------	------	--	---

SEVENTH CHARGE (cont)

Camp in HONG KONG, was, in violation of the laws and usages of war, concerned in the killing of Sgt. J.O. PAYNE, E/Cpl G. BERZENSKI, Pte J.H. ADAMS and Pte P.J. ELLIS, all Canadian Prisoners-of-War then in his custody and command.

BRANDIS
LAND KONG
COMMANDER

EIGHTH CHARGE

against
Col TOKUNAGA Isao
only

Not

COMMITTING A WAR CRIME in that he at HONG KONG on or about 24 September 1942 when Commandant of all Prisoners-of-War Camps in HONG KONG, was, in violation of the laws and usages of war, concerned in the killing of Pte.V. BRANSON, L/Cpl.W.G. BYRNE, P. CONNELLY, Pte.J. STOPP-WORTH and Pte.M.T. DUNNE, all British Prisoners of War then in his custody and command.

Not

Guilty

NINTH CHARGE

against
Col TOKUNAGA Isao only

Not

COMMITTING A WAR CRIME in that he at HONG KONG between October 1942 and 15 August 1945 when Commandant of all Prisoners-of-War Camps in HONG KONG, did, in violation of the laws and usages of war, misappropriate for his own use and benefit Red Cross supplies of food, medicine, clothes and other comforts intended for the Prisoners of War interned in HONG KONG, and further did permit and condone the misappropriation of such Red Cross supplies by his staff.

Not

Guilty

TENTH CHARGE

against Col. TOKUNAGA Isao
only

Not

COMMITTING A WAR CRIME in that he at divers places in HONG KONG

Not

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235 / 1012 PT 1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.

00039

Number, rank, name and unit of accused	War Crime Charged	Plea	Finding and, if convicted, sentence	How dealt with by confirming officer
--	-------------------	------	-------------------------------------	--------------------------------------

TENTH CHARGE(cont)

between 24 January 1942 and 15 August 1945 when Commandant of all Prisoners of War Camps in HONG KONG, in the beating, torture and unlawful killing of numerous Chinese Civilians in HONG KONG aforesaid.

NOT

GUILTY

NOT GUILTY

WAS, IN VIOLATION OF THE LAWS AND USAGES OF WAR, CONCERNED

ELEVENTH CHARGE

against
Lt TANAKA Hitochi only

COMMITTING A WAR CRIME in that he, at No.167 ARGYLE STREET, KOWLOON, HONG KONG, in or about the month of August 1945 when Commandant of the UPPER ARGYLE STREET OFFICERS CAMP and concurrently O.i/c Intelligence Section, Prisoners of War Camps Headquarters, was, in violation of the laws and usages of war, concerned in the mal-treatment of two unidentified Chinese Drivers and Lt. HADDOCK and one or more other British Prisoners of War then in his custody and command.

NOT

GUILTY

NOT GUILTY

BRIGADIER
LAND FORCES
HONG KONG
COMMANDER

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	2

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives leaflet

PROCEEDINGS OF NO. 5 WAR CRIMES COURT

Held at Jardine Matheson's East Point Godown on Thursday,
October 17, 1946.

(Trial of Col TOKUNAGA ISAO, Capt. SAITO SHUNKICHI, LIEUT
TANAKA HITOSHI, Interpreter TSUTADA ITSUO and SERGT HARADA
JOTARO, of the Imperial Japanese Army).

COMPOSITION OF COURT.

President: Lieut-Col R.C. Laming, Barrister, (Dept. of the
at Law JAG India);
Members: Major J.T. Loranger, (JAG Branch, Canadian Army);
Capt K.R. Busfield, (R.A.C.).
Prosecuting Officer: Major G.B. Puddicombe, Advocate, (The
Victoria Rifles of Canada);
Defending Counsel: Mr Fujita Tetsuo (Japanese Barrister);
Adviser to A Judge of the Court of NIKOSHIMA RCL
Defending Counsel: Lieut J. Benyon, R.E.

~~assembled~~ RCL
The Court sat at 1000 hours.

The accused answered to their names

The convening order was read in the presence of
the accused.

The President and Members were sworn.

The shorthand writers, monitor and interpreters were
sworn ~~affirmed~~ RCL

The President then read the charges to accused as
follows:

FIRST CHARGE lies against all accused: Committing a war
crime in that they at Shamshuipo, Hongkong, between January 24,
1942 and August 15, 1945 when members of the POW Camp staff under
the command of the first-named accused, and responsible for the
well-being of British, Canadian and Dutch POW interned in the
Shamshuipo POW Camp were, in violation of the laws and usages
of war, together concerned in the inhumane treatment of the
said POW resulting in the deaths of some and in physical
sufferings to others.

SECOND CHARGE lies against Col Tokunaga Isao and
Capt Saito Shunkichi: Committing a war crime in that they at
North Point, Hongkong, between January 24, 1942 and September
26, 1942, or thereabouts when Commandant and Medical Officer
respectively of all POW Camps in Hongkong, and responsible for
the well-being of British and Canadian POW interned in the
North Point POW Camp were in violation of the laws and usages

1	2	Ref.	THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	1	2
cms			WO 235/1012 PT1	1	Ins

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' Terms and Conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

READING OF CHARGES TO ACCUSED (cont.):

SECOND CHARGE (cont.): of war, together concerned in the inhumane treatment of the said POW resulting in the deaths of some and in physical sufferings to others.

THIRD CHARGE lies against Col Tokunaga Isao, Capt Saito Shunkichi and Lieut Tanaka Hitoshi: Committing a war crime in that they at Kowloon, Hongkong, between April 1942 and May 1944 or thereabouts when the accused Col Tokunaga Isao and the accused Capt Saito Shunkichi were respectively Commandant and Medical Officer of all POW camps in Hongkong and the accused Lieut Tanaka Hitoshi was Commandant of the Upper Argyle Street Officers Camp, and responsible for the well-being of British and Canadian POW interned in the said Upper Argyle Street Officers Camp were, in violation of the laws and usages of war, together concerned in the inhumane treatment of the said POW resulting in the deaths of some and in physical sufferings to others.

FOURTH CHARGE lies against Col Tokunaga Isao and Capt Saito Shunkichi: Committing a war crime in that they at Kowloon, Hongkong, between February 1942 and June 16, 1942 or thereabouts when Commandant and Medical Officer respectively of all POW Camps in Hongkong and responsible for the well-being of British and Canadian POW serving on the medical staff and/or receiving treatment at the Indian Military Hospital at Argyle Street, Kowloon, Hongkong, were, in violation of the laws and usages of war, together concerned in the inhumane treatment of the said POW resulting in the deaths of some and in physical sufferings to others.

FIFTH CHARGE LIES against Col Tokunaga Isao and Capt Saito Shunkichi: Committing a war crime in that they at Hongkong, between January 24, 1942 and August 15, 1945, or thereabouts when Commandant and Medical Officer respectively of all POW Camps in Hongkong and responsible for the well-being of British and Canadian POW serving on the medical staff and/or receiving treatment at the Bowen Road Hospital in Hongkong, were, in violation of the laws and usages of war, together concerned in the inhumane treatment of the said POW resulting in the deaths of some and in physical sufferings to others.

SIXTH CHARGE lies against Col Tokunaga Isao and Lieut Tanaka Hitoshi: Committing a war crime in that they at the POW Camp HQ's at Forfar Street, Kowloon, Hongkong, in or about the month of August 1942 when Commandant and Intelligence Officer respectively of the POW Camp HQ, were, in violation of the laws and usages of war, together concerned in the maltreatment of Sgt J.O. Payne, L/Cpl G. Berzenski, Pte J.H. Adams and Pte P.J. Ellis, all Canadian POW then in their custody and command.

SEVENTH CHARGE lies against Col Tokunaga Isao only: Committing a war crime in that he at Hongkong, in or about the month of August 1942 when Commandant of all POW Camps in Hongkong, was, in violation of the laws and usages of war, concerned in the illegal killing of Sgt J.O. Payne, L/Cpl G. Berzenski, Pte J.H. Adams and Pte P.J. Ellis, all Canadian POW then in his custody and command.

EIGHTH CHARGE lies against Col Tokunaga Isao only:

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref.
WO 235 /1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

READING OF CHARGES TO ACCUSED (cont.):

EIGHTH CHARGE (cont.): Committing a war crime in that he at Hongkong, on or about September 14, 1942, when Commandant of all POW Camps in Hongkong, was, in violation of the laws and usages of war, concerned in the illegal killing of Pte V. Branson, L/Cpl W.G. Byrne, P. Connely, Pte J. Stoppworth and Pte M.T. Dunne, all British POW then in his custody and command.

NINTH CHARGE lies against Col Tokunaga Isao only: Committing a war crime in that he at Hongkong, between October 1942 and August 15, 1945, when Commandant of all POW Camps in Hongkong, did, in violation of the laws and usages of war, misappropriate for his own use and benefit Red Cross supplies of food, medicine, clothes and other comforts intended for the POW interned in Hongkong, and further did permit and condone the misappropriation of such Red Cross supplies by his staff.

TENTH CHARGE lies against Col Tokunaga Isao only: Committing a war crime in that he at Hongkong between January 24, 1942, and August 15, 1945, at divers places when Commandant of all POW camps in Hongkong, was in violation of the laws and usages of war, concerned in the beating, torture and unlawful killing of numerous Chinese civilians in Hongkong aforesaid.

ELEVENTH CHARGE lies against Lt Tanaka Hitoshi only: Committing a war crime in that he, at No.167 Argyle Street, Kowloon, Hongkong, in or about the month of August 1943, when Commandant of the Upper Argyle Street Officers Camp and concurrently Officer-in-charge, Intelligence Section, POW Camp HQ, was, in violation of the laws and usages of war, concerned in the maltreatment of two unidentified Chinese drivers and Lieut Haddock and one or more other British POW then in his custody and command.

President: Col Tokunaga Isao, are you ^{or not guilty} guilty/of all or any of the charges which you have heard read?
Tokunaga: I plead not guilty.

President: To all charges?
Tokunaga: Yes.

President: Capt Saito Shunkichi, are you guilty or not guilty of all or any of the charges which you have heard read?
Saito: I plead not guilty to all charges.

President: Lieut Tanaka Hitoshi, are you guilty or not guilty of all or any of the charges which you have heard read?
Tanaka: I plead not guilty to all charges.

President: Interpreter Tsutada Itsuo, are you guilty or not guilty of all or any of the charges which you have heard read?
Tsutada: I plead not guilty.

President: Sgt Harada Jotaro, are you guilty or not guilty of all or any of the charges which you have heard read?
Harada: I plead not guilty

President: Mr Fujita, do you wish to apply for an adjournment on the ground that any of the regulations relating

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref.:		1		Ins	
		WO 235 /1012 PT1					
<small>Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.</small>							

PLEAS OF ACCUSED (cont.):

President (cont.): to procedure before trial have not been complied with and that you have been prejudiced thereby or on the ground that you have not had sufficient opportunity for preparing your defence?

Mr Fujita: My last case ended about two days ago and since that date I have not had sufficient time to prepare this case.

President: Are you prepared, as it is rather necessary for one witness to return to Canada at an early date, to hear the evidence of the one witness and cross-examine him on the same, and then ask for an adjournment?

Mr Fujita: That is all right, Sir.

President: Major Puddicombe, will you make your opening address?

Major Puddicombe then delivered his opening address, taking 20 minutes. (Copies of address handed in to Court).
initialed by the President and marked Exhibit E and attached to the proceedings etc.

rec. that will
After the name of Lieut-Col J.N.B. Crawford was called as the first witness for the Prosecution, Major Puddicombe said: "Before he comes in, I should like to say this, Sir, that in presenting his evidence he will endeavour to give you as a background of his imprisonment in various camps in which he was/supply the nucleus of facts from which you will draw his inferences as to incidence of disease and the results of the facts he alludes to in the first part. I want to make that clear so that you will understand the first part of his evidence, which is not necessarily intended to prove guilt, but to supply a background."

P.W. NO. 1 - LT-COL J.N.B. CRAWFORD

After the Witness had been sworn, he was examined by the Prosecuting Officer, as follows:

Q. Will you give your full name, Sir, your rank, your corps and your present address?

A. I am John Neilson Brown Crawford, lieutenant-colonel, Royal Canadian Medical Corps, at present residing at 49 3rd Avenue, Ottawa, Canada.

Q. Can you identify the accused?

A. I can identify three of the accused.

President: Will the witness go over to the dock and indicate which of the accused he identifies.

Lt-Col Crawford walked to the dock where he pointed at Col Tokunaga, Capt Saito and Interpreter Tsutada.

1		2		Ref:		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
cms						WO 235/1012 PT1	
						1	
						ins	
						2	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

EXAMINATION OF P.W. NO. 1 - LT-COL J.N.B. CRAWFORD (Cont'd).

Q. In order to qualify yourself as a medical expert, will you tell the Court what your medical training has been and what further qualifications you have?

A. In 1930, I took the degree of Doctor of Medicine in the University of Manitoba and held the Chown prize in medicine for that year. The same year I qualified by examination as licentiate of the Medical Council of Canada. I then did post-graduate work for one year in a babies' hospital in New York City. I returned to Winnipeg in the fall of 1931 and began to practice as a specialist in children's diseases. In 1932 I was appointed to the staff of the University of Manitoba and the staff of St Boniface and Children's Hospital at Winnipeg. I subsequently became a lecturer in paediatrics and children's diseases and head of the department of ~~and~~ paediatrics in St Boniface's Hospital. I joined the active Army in 1939 as Medical Officer of the Canadian troops until the fall of 1945. At the present time I am Assistant Director of Medical Services in the Canadian Army in charge of medical research and development.

Q. Can you tell the Court something about the qualifications for a specialist in paediatrics? What particular studies did you do?

A. One of the most important parts of the practice of paediatrics is the study of nutritional problems and feeding problems. Equally important are the infectious diseases which commonly affect children. As a specialist in paediatrics, one would receive particular training in respect of these two problems.

Q. I understand you were taken prisoner-of-war in December, 1941, here in the Island of Hongkong, is that correct?

A. That is true.

Q. Will you tell the Court what your appointment was at that time in the Canadian Army?

A. I was at that time senior medical officer in charge of the Canadian troops in the Hongkong area.

Q. What was the designation of the Canadian force here?

A. It was known as Force "C".

Q. Will you now give a brief chronological statement respecting your imprisonment, giving the dates as approximately as possible?

A. I became a prisoner-of-war at the time of the general surrender on December 25, 1941. From that time until December 30, I remained on Hongkong island and then proceeded to Shamshuipo Camp. I remained in Shamshuipo Camp until January 27, 1942. We then proceeded from Shamshuipo to North Point camp on Hongkong island. We remained in North Point Camp until September 27, 1942. I then proceeded once more to Shamshuipo Camp where I remained until our relief in August, 1945. During this latter period at Shamshuipo, I was in the men's camp until May, 1945, and was then transferred to the Officers' Camp in the same area.

Q. When you arrived in North Point Camp in January, 1942, will you tell the Court what the general sanitary conditions of that camp were?

A. The sanitary conditions in North Point Camp were very bad. When we arrived in January, 1942, we found the camp black with ~~fix~~ flies and these flies were present for reasons which were beyond our control. North Point Camp is on the sea front. To the west of the Camp, for a distance of some hundred yards, was a refuse dump which was used by the city of Victoria. South of the camp, across the road, was an area which had been used for horse-lines

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' material.

EXAMINATION OF P.W. NO. 1 - LT-COL. J.N.B. CROWDER (Cont'd).

by the Japanese Army. On the beach east of the Camp were numerous dead bodies which lay there rotting and breeding flies. For these reasons it was extremely difficult to keep the Camp rid of flies.

Q. Have you told the Court what lay west of the Camp?

A. A refuse dump of some sort.

Q. Can you tell the Court what the conditions of the horse-lines were?

A. There were no longer any horses there ^{but see} there was a great deal of horse manure lying on the ground.

Q. Will you tell the Court what the barrack accommodation was when you arrived there?

A. When we arrived in North Point Camp, there were also in the Camp a great many British Army and Navy personnel. I do not know how many barrack huts there were in North Point Camp but each hut was about 125 feet long by approximately 20 feet wide. Into these huts we placed 150 men each. Such conditions, of course, were horribly overcrowded. The situation improved to some extent when the British Army and Navy personnel left, which was in the month of April or thereabouts but we still accommodated approximately 80 men in each of these huts.

Q. What would be a fair estimate of the number of men who should have been accommodated in the huts 125 feet by 20 feet?

A. I should say that 50 people would be the maximum accommodation for such a hut.

Q. What were the hospital arrangements in that Camp?

A. In the Camp the hospital accommodation consisted of a godown on the western edge of the Camp. For equipment in the hospital I had 12 beds. The number of patients in the hospital were never less than 16 and reached as high as 42 during these months.

Q. Can you give some indication of the size of the hospital?

A. About 30 feet wide and 40 feet long. The roof of this hospital leaked very badly. During rainy weather, it was not uncommon to find an inch of water on the floor. Large numbers of patients had to sleep on the floor because we did not have enough beds to accommodate them.

Q. You say you have had anywhere from 16 to 42 patients in the hospital. What relation had that number to the number of sick in the North Point Camp?

A. It bears very little relation to the actual number of sick in the Camp. This was due to two factors. First, that we were able to get the extremely ill patients to the British military hospital at Bowen Road and secondly, we did not admit everyone who was sick to hospital; if he was not ~~too~~ too ill we kept him in his own barrack room huts. The patients in hospital at North Point camp therefore represented the middle group -- not too sick to go to Bowen Road Hospital and too sick to stay in their huts.

Q. What conclusion is the Court to draw from the observations you have made?

A. I would suggest that the figures of 16 to 42 be considered as a small fraction of the sickness that was in the Camp at that time.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cm	Ref:
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	ins

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

EXAMINATION OF P.W. NO. 1 - LT-COL. J.N.B. CRAWFORD (Cont'd).

Q. Will you describe to the Court the diet received by the prisoners-of-war at North Point Camp during the period you were there?

A. The basic diet consisted of rice or flour, fish, vegetables, some peanut oil, sugar and salt. We received these commodities in North Point Camp in sufficient quantities to supply a caloric value as high as 2,600 grammes and as low as something under 1,900 grammes per man per day. The average caloric intake was about 2,000 calories per man per day at the North Point Camp.

Q. In respect of the conditions which you found there during the period of your imprisonment, will you tell the Court what, if any, representations you made to the Japanese authorities?

A. By the month of August, 1942, sickness had reached alarming proportions in the Camp. At that time about 300 men were attending sick parade every day. In July our rations had dropped to a level of about 1,900 calories. In August also we began to develop cases of diptheria in Camp. In August then, I prepared a report which I gave to the senior Canadian officer, Lt-Col Home, which he transmitted to the Japanese authorities. This report pointed out that sickness had increased by 50 per cent and that the increase in sickness appeared to be related to the ~~large~~ decrease in the rations. I also pointed out that cases of diptheria were occurring in Camp and asked that certain measures be taken to prevent the spread of an epidemic of diptheria. I asked particularly in that report that the Camp population be subjected to throat swabbing for the protection of diptheria and that carriers of diptheria be isolated in some way from the rest of the Camp. At that time also I asked verbally from Sgt Ueyama, who was the medical sergeant in the Camp, for a supply of anti-diptheria serum.

Q. What response did you receive to this report?

A. At that time no action was taken on the report at all.

Q. To your knowledge, Sir, what became of the report?

deliberations
A. In October, after we had returned to Shamshuipo Camp, I was asked by a Japanese staff officer whom I did not know whether I thought that the move from North Point Camp had had any ~~dilatory~~ effect on our cases of diptheria. I pointed out to him then that in August I had predicted an epidemic of diptheria among the Canadians. This officer told me in October that my report had been received by the Japanese but that it was not felt necessary to do anything about it at that time.

Q. When did you leave North Point Camp?

A. We left North Point Camp on September 27, 1942.

Q. Where did you go?

A. We went to Shamshuipo.

Q. Will you describe the general sanitary conditions you found when you arrived in Shamshuipo in September, 1942?

A. We arrived in Shamshuipo to find the Camp population somewhat reduced by the draft that had gone on the Lisbon Maru. Barrack accommodation which had been vacated by this draft were allocated to the Canadians who arrived from North Point. I took a great many sick with me from North Point Camp to Shamshuipo but when I wished to have them admitted to the hospital accommodation that existed at Shamshuipo I found that the hospital was full and could not accommodate any more. Therefore I had to use some of the huts which had been intended for barrack accommodation and turn them into hospital accommodation.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref.:
WO 235 / 1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives leaflet.

EXAMINATION OF P.W. NO. 1 - LT-COL J.N.B. CRAWFORD (Cont'd).

Q. Can you give some indication of the general sanitary conditions of the locality itself?

A. Generally speaking, the Camp was fairly clean, but there were some factors which were very bad indeed. For example, the latrine accommodation in Shamshuipo Camp was very limited. I am not certain of the number of latrine buckets which was provided for the entire Camp

Q. If I may interrupt for a moment, Sir, I would like you to describe the ground itself rather than the barracks for the moment. We will come to the barracks later.

A. Shamshuipo is built on reclaimed land. It is low lying but drained by typhoon drains which run through it.

Q. What was the condition of these typhoon drains?

A. The typhoon drains were obstructed by barbed wire at the seaward end. The barbed wire caught refuse coming down the drain and caused a damming effect. As a result of this, stagnant waters lay in the drains and bred mosquitoes. This in turn caused a malaria hazard. In order to clean the drains, we had to get permission from the guard commander to lift the wire. This permission was not always granted. On one occasion, I was accompanying Lt Saito on an inspection of the camp. I pointed out the condition at one typhoon drain which lay beside the old NAAFI building which we were using as a dysentery hospital. I asked his assistance in obtaining permission in having the wire lifted so that we could clean the drain. He told me not to make suggestions to ~~him~~ my senior.

Q. Who were you referring to when you spoke of Lt Saito?

A. The accused, who was at that time a Lieutenant.

Q. Turning again to the accommodation of the barracks, will you tell the Court what accommodation there was for the ordinary prisoner-of-war, exclusive of hospital accommodation?

A. The troops were accommodated in barrack huts which had been built for our use in peace time and built to accommodate 32 men.

Q. Why do you say 32 men?

A. That is the normal number of men we put into a barrack hut of that size. Into these huts we put as many as 80 prisoners-of-war, and at the very best the number of men contained in one of these huts was 50.

Q. During the course of the imprisonment at Shamshuipo to your knowledge, what further accommodation was there for the prisoners-of-war?

A. We had used the Jubilee Building as a diptheria hospital

Q. Excuse me, doctor. I am not speaking of the hospital but of the barrack huts themselves. You told us that there were sometimes 80 and never less than 50 in a hut. I want to know if you can tell the Court what available accommodation there was from time to time during the imprisonment.

A. The Camp population was reduced from time to time by drafts which went to Japan. This would normally lead to an improvement in the accommodation in the Camp; we would have fewer people to put into the same spaces. This in fact did not take place because the confines of the Camp were shrunk as each draft left -- the wire was drawn a little tighter around. This left empty huts outside the boundary of the wire. For a long time these huts were used for storing empty oil drums.

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref:		The NATIONAL ARCHIVES		1	
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives leaflet.		WO 235/1012 PT1				ms	

EXAMINATION OF P.W. NO. 1 - LT-COL. J.N.B. CRAWFORD (Cont'd).

Q. Now, Sir, getting back to the huts as you found them. Will you indicate to the Court what bedding arrangements there were for the men in the huts?

A. We found when we arrived that the barrack rooms were furnished with wooden platforms along one side of the hut. On these platforms were placed thin straw mats and this was the sleeping accommodation for the POW.

Q. What provisions for blankets were made?

A. The men in the lines generally were issued with two cotton blankets. That was their quota.

Q. For what time of the year was that?

A. For all seasons of the year.

Q. What was the conditions of the huts in respect of lights and ventilation?

A. First of all, in regard to ventilation, of course, the huts were badly overcrowded. Windows were very rare indeed. The window spaces had been bricked up, some completely and some half-way up their height. In those that were bricked up half-way, strips of metal or wood closed the opening above. These, open, allowed a certain amount of light and air to enter but, closed, allowed no light. For a long time, ~~xxx~~ until sometime in 1944, we had electric light in Camp. We were allowed one light per hut until 9 o'clock at night. Sometime in 1944, the electricity was no longer available in Camp. After that time no light was allowed in the barrack room huts whatsoever.

Q. What about washing facilities?

A. There was an ample water supply in Shamshuipo Camp. On the other hand there was never enough soap. The issue of soap to the ordinary POW was one cake for every three months. One of these cakes would be about 2½ inches square by 1½ inches thick.

Q. What had he to do when the soap was issued?

A. With this soap he had to keep himself and his clothing clean.

Q. What about toilet paper?

A. Toilet paper was also issued once every three months. It was on the basis of one packet of 50 sheets to each man.

Q. You spoke a moment ago, when I interrupted you, of the latrine accommodation in the barracks. Will you indicate to the Court what they were?

A. At the very beginning in Shamshuipo, there were flush latrines near the seawall. These were very early put out of bounds by wiring off and after that date we had to rely on bucket latrines. I don't know how many buckets there were but I do know that they were insufficient in number. These buckets became rusted through. They were repaired as well as they could be repaired by the prisoners-of-war but finally they could be repaired no more. They were never replaced. This led to filthy conditions in the rooms that had been put aside as latrines and formed a constant menace from the point of view of dysentery.

Q. Just to make the record clear, can you indicate the size of these buckets?

A. The standard latrine bucket would be about 24 to 26 inches high and perhaps 15 inches across at the top; they were oval shaped. In addition to these we used a number of Asiatic type buckets which were oblong, four feet long and about eight inches across at the top.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref.
WO 235 / 1012 PT 1	
1	2
ins	ins

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

EXAMINATION OF P.W. NO. 1 - LT-COL J.N.B. CRAWFORD (Cont'd).

Q. Were these Oriental type buckets included among those you mentioned?

A. Yes.

Q. Will you describe to the Court the hospital accommodation in Shamshuipo?

A. I have already mentioned that when we came to Shamshuipo the Canadians were unable to use the British hospital accommodation because they were overcrowded. This meant that the Canadians had to find hospital accommodation for themselves. We took over huts that had been allocated for barrack accommodation for this purpose. Three types of cases had to be accommodated. These were diptheria cases, dysentery cases and general cases which were not infectious. At first we put the diptheria cases in the compound which had been used as an Officers' Mess before the war. We very quickly developed so many cases that they could no longer be accommodated there and they were then moved to the Jubilee Building where an isolation hospital for diptheria was established. The Canadians for some months treated their dysentery cases in the barrack room huts. They were separated but remained in the same general area as the general non-infectious cases. When the Canadians established a hospital in Shamshuipo Camp, we were issued with 12 latrine buckets. In the month of October, 500 odd patients were admitted to this hospital. These patients used 12 latrine buckets. Many of these cases were suffering from dysentery and the latrine accommodation was very inadequate.

Q. To return to the diptheria accommodation. You referred to the Officers' Mess and later to the Jubilee Building. Will you tell the Court the number of patients a room accommodated in the Jubilee Building?

A. The rooms in the Jubilee Building, I suppose, were 12 feet by 15 feet. In one of these rooms we accommodated four patients.

Q. Normally how many patients would be accommodated in a room of that size?

A. Under ordinary circumstances we would consider two patients for such a room as adequate.

Q. Will you repeat when you left the Jubilee Building?

A. We left Jubilee Building about the end of January, 1943.

Q. What was the reason for leaving at that time?

A. A large draft had left in the month of January for Japan. This made some additional accommodation in the barrack area. The diptheria epidemic appeared to be over; not many new cases were expected and we were ordered by the Japanese to vacate Jubilee Building and set up a hospital in the ~~barrack area~~ barrack area again.

Q. Will you tell the Court what disposition was made of Jubilee Building by the Japanese subsequent to your evacuation in January, 1943?

A. For some months the Building was empty. Then empty oil drums were placed in the rooms on the ground floors. Late in 1944 or early in 1945, the Building was used as quarters by the Japanese Camp Staff.

ADJOURNMENT.

The Court adjourned at 1230 hours until ~~100~~ 1400 hours.

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref.		ins			
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES							
WO 235/1012 PT1							
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.							

RESUMPTION OF HEARING*The Court resumed at 1400 hrs. Rec*

When hearing was resumed at 1400 hours Major Puddicombe continued his examination of Col. Crawford.

EXAMINATION OF P.W. No. 1 - COL. CRAWFORD - (Contd)

Major Puddicombe: Col. Crawford, at the interval you were talking about the hospital which you had in Jubilee Building to accommodate diphtheria patients. I think you have told us that there was another hospital in which you had dysentery and general cases. Will you please tell the Court again what that accommodation consisted of, the number of huts, the normal capacity of each hut and the number of patients actually in the huts?

A. Cases of dysentery and non-infectious diseases were housed in the general barrack area. We took over a number of huts in the barrack area which was designed for barrack accommodation. These huts would normally hold 32 soldiers in barracks. We first had four of these huts, subsequently the number was reduced to three. In these huts we placed patients never less than 50 to a hut, sometimes more. Until January, 1943 the Canadian hospital was quite distinct from the British hospital in camp. We maintained our own dysentery hospital then in huts such as I have described. The accommodation in the hospital huts was very similar to that in the barrack room huts. We did have some beds in the hospital huts but in the barrack room huts there were sleeping platforms. Until January, 1943 one of the three Canadian huts continued to have a sleeping platform in it. The situation as regards the windows and doors was the same in the hospital as it was in the barrack room huts. That is we had window spaces half bricked-down with metal flaps on hinges above the brick works.

Q. How long did this condition of windows being boarded up persist?

A. In January, 1943 the Canadian hospital was combined with the British hospital following a large draft that left for Japan in January. Some time about the middle of 1943--I don't know the exact month, it might have been July or August--there was a Red Cross inspection of the camp. Following that inspection Chinese workmen came into the camp and placed proper windows and doors on a number of huts, about six in number in the barrack area and the whole NAAFI building which we subsequently used as hospital. I am sorry, there were more than six huts provided with windows and doors. The number was ten, so that after the middle of 1943 we had hospital accommodation which was equipped with windows and doors.

Q. You were going to speak of latrine facilities in the hospital. Will you produce to the Court this document which is ~~signed by you~~ signed by you. It is here marked Exhibit B2, and if you receive it, Sir (President),

President: Has the defence got the copy? Rec

Major Puddicombe: Yes, Sir, they have. If you receive it, the shorthand writer will be obliged if you will let him know the exhibit number. Apparently he has had difficulty in the past.

Col. Crawford: This is a copy of a receipt which I gave to the Japanese on October 20, 1942 for 12 latrine buckets for hospital use. These 12 buckets that I received on October 20 were latrine accommodation for the entire Canadian hospital.

1		2		1		2	
CMA		Ref.		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES		1	
				WO 235 / 1012 PT1		1	
						2	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' material.

EXAMINATION OF P.W. NO. 1 - COL. CRAWFORD - (Contd)

Q. How many huts?

A. There were four huts in the barrack area and we have several buckets in the Jubilee Building as well. I would like to point out that by October, 1942 526 Canadians had been admitted to this hospital and 191 of this number were suffering from diarrhoea or dysentery.

The receipt was then handed to the Court by Major Puddicombe.

President (to Col. Crawford): Is that ~~his~~ signature on the document your signature?

A. The signature on the original is: that is a copy.

Q. The signature on the copy, is that your signature also?
After looking at the document, Col. Crawford answered: Yes.

Q. Can you tell the Court what happened to the original document?

A. I don't know. It may be in Canada. I thought it was over here. I really don't know.

Major Puddicombe: This document was attached to the original affidavit which Col. Crawford made in Canada.

President: When you made out this document did you have the original before you or did you do it from memory?

Col. Crawford: I made it out from the copy which I retained at the time.

Q. Is it a true copy of the document?

A. It is.

President: The Court accepts this receipt which is for latrine buckets. It is to be listed as Exhibit F, *being a receipt of a receipt. Not attached to the proceedings etc.*

Major Puddicombe: You have mentioned the figure of admissions. Have you anything to authenticate the estimate which you made or the figure you have given?

A. I would like to produce here an admission and discharge book for Shamshupo Prison Camp Hospital from September 27, 1942 to June 26, 1943 in respect of Canadian soldiers.

Major Puddicombe (to Court): There are six copies of this. You can have them now if you wish.

President: I think it will be more convenient if all spare copies are provided at the end of the trial.

President (to Col. Crawford): Who made this record?

A. A very great part of it is in my own hand writing. The rest of it was maintained under my direction by various clerks who worked for me in the prison camp.

Q. Can you indicate to the Court the dates between which you kept it yourself?

A. I can show you from the book. The entries of the first two pages, that is covering the period of September 27, are in my own hand writing. Following that from September 27 to January 24 the entries appeared to be mostly in the hand writing of Staff/Sgt Moss.

Q. Is his hand writing familiar to you?

A. Yes.

Q. Did you see him in some cases making these entries?

A. Yes, I have seen him making these entries myself. I may say this book was also checked by me practically daily during the period of internment.

Q. There are several comments made in the final column under

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cm	Ref:
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

EXAMINATION OF P.W. NO. 1 - COL. CRAWFORD - (Contd)

the heading "Observation." Were these made by you throughout?

A. Observation, Sir?

Q. Yes, for instance, we have here cases transferred to Bowen Road Hospital.

A. Entries like that will be made by the clerk automatically--- the date of discharge, the date of transfer and so on.

Q. These things are not clinical?

A. No, but diagnosis is clinical.

President: The Court will accept this exhibit---Admission and Discharge book at Shamshuipo Prison Camp from September 27, 1942 to June 26, 1943 in respect of Canadian troops. It is to be listed as Exhibit G, *having been initiated by the President and is attached to the proceedings. etc.*

Major Puddicombe: At this point will you produce the balance of admissions and discharges from hospital?

A. I produce here an admission and discharge book at camp hospital, Shamshuipo, from June 26, 1943 to August 24, 1945 in respect of Canadian troops.

President: Are these in your hand writing?

A. No, all these were made by the clerk under my direction.

Q. Do you know the name of the clerk?

A. Yes, most of them was done by Cpl. Green, RAMC.

Q. Cpl. Green's writing is familiar to you?

A. Yes.

Q. You have seen him making these entries?

A. Yes.

President: The Court will accept this exhibit---Admission and Discharge Book at Shamshuipo Camp from June 26, 1943 until August 24, 1945 in respect of Canadian troops. It is to be listed as Exhibit H, *having been initiated by the President and is attached to the proceedings. etc.*

Col. Crawford: I also produce forms MFB 1405 and 1405A of the Canadian Army. These forms are nominal rolls of various admissions and discharges from hospital together with a summary of admissions and discharges statements, showing the number remaining in hospital. These forms were made up by myself and in my own hand writing and covered Canadian troops in North Point and Shamshuipo from December 28, 1942--the first two days of that being copies from other records--to January 31, 1942 and in North Point camp for the months of February to July inclusive.

President: They are all in your own hand writing?

A. Some of them I have typewritten and where the script appears it is all in my own hand writing.

President: The Court will accept this exhibit as monthly returns of sick in hospital at Shamshuipo and North Point, Hongkong from December 28, 1941 till July 31, 1942 inclusive. It is to be listed as Exhibit J, *having been initiated by the President and is attached to the proceedings. etc.*

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref.:		1		Ins	
		WO 235 / 1012 PT1					

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.

EXAMINATION OF P.W. NO. 1 - COL. CRAWFORD - (Contd)

Col. Crawford: I would also like to produce pages cut from the admission and discharge book which was kept in the prison hospital at North Point camp. These pages cover the period from August 1 to September 25, 1942.

President: In whose hand writing are these?

A. These are in the hand writing of a clerk but I tore or cut them from the admission and discharge book myself. I am familiar with the hand writing on the first four pages. They are in the hand writing of Cpl. Veale, Winnipeg Grenadiers.

Q. Why were these pages torn from the register?

A. When we moved from North Point to Shamshuipo bulk was very troublesome. I already had records on admissions and discharges in the forms which I have submitted. I had no forms made up for the months of September and October and I therefore cut them from the book.

President: The Court accepts this exhibit--sheets cut from the hospital admissions and discharges book between July 6, 1942 and September 24, 1942. It is to be listed as Exhibit K, *having been initiated by the President and is attached to the proceedings.*

Col. Crawford: These exhibits formed the basis for the figures which I have mentioned to the Court in respect to the sick in hospital.

Major Puddicombe: You have told us of the number of latrine buckets that you had in hospital. Will you describe to the Court the conditions, particularly in the dysentery wards, which arose from the number of buckets that you had?

A. The situation was one of almost indescribable ~~filth~~ filth. Artificial light was at a minimum, and with the large number of dysentery patients that we had ~~in~~ crowded into the latrine during the night, fumbling in the dark, the buckets were very quickly filled. The floor was a filthy mess and our first duty every morning was to try and clean it up and put it into some sort of order.

Q. Will you now tell the Court the situation in regard to diet and food in Shamshuipo? I will give you now a document which is labelled Scale of Rations Issue signed by you. I may say that no copies of this were made--it is quite impossible---but Mr Fujita has had it for several days.

Col. Crawford (looking at the document): This is a sort of variety. I know what they are all right, but I don't see the connection.

President: Will Witness tell the Court exactly what these documents are?

Col. Crawford: Yes. The first ten pages are packing notes issued by District Medical Stores in Military District No. 10, Winnipeg, Manitoba, on October 13, 1941. That shows the drugs which I took with me from Military District No. 10 when I left Canada in 1941 and brought to Hongkong with me as part of the medical stores for the forces. The next seven pages show the rations which were issued to POW or which were received by POW from January, 1942 to July, 1945. They show the commodities and the weight of commodities in grams which were issued by the Japanese--what we called the Japanese issue. They also show the commodities and the weight of commodities in grams which were issued from Red Cross sources. They also show the weight of commodities which were produced by the camp farm and issued to the troops. The remaining three pages show the monthly rate of sick in respect of Canadian troops from January, 1942 until July, 1945. They repeat the North Point period mentioned in the exhibit that you have.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.

EXAMINATION OF P.W. NO. 1 - COL. CRAWFORD - (Contd)

President: Is the signature on the documents yours?

A. Yes.

Q. What about the signature of the officer below yours?

A. Gent, Sir?

Q. Yes.

A. He is the notary public to whom I swore the accuracy of the documents.

President: The Court will accept these papers and will make four separate exhibits from them. The list of drugs will be Exhibit L. The Rations Scale Issue of the Japanese Army will be Exhibit M. The ~~standard~~ schedule showing Red Cross issues and the issue from the farm will be Exhibit N, and the sick reports will be Exhibit O; *all being then exhibited by the President and attached to the preceding list.*

Major Puddicombe: From your examination and knowledge of these records will you tell the Court what the diet provided by the Japanese was during that period in Shamshuipo in relation to caloric value and so on?

A. From September 27, 1942 until sometime late in November the diet in Shamshuipo camp consisted of rice, some flour, vegetables, fish, salt, sugar and peanut oil. This diet we estimated provided a caloric value of slightly less than 2,000 calories, allowing for wastage and cooking. During the entire period of internment the caloric value supplied by the diet issued by the Japanese, as opposed to the Red Cross issue, provided between 1,900 and 2,100 calories. The average would work out pretty close to 2,000 calories all the way through. Late in November, 1942 we received a shipment of bulk foodstuffs through the agency of the Red Cross. In this shipment we received attar, ghee, bully beef or tinned meat, M. and V. rations, dried fruits, sugar and cocoa. This supply of foodstuffs was placed in the custody of the Japanese, of course, and issued to the cookhouse. The POW officer in charge of rations in the camp and the medical officer in the camp in conference decided to issue these foodstuffs in such a way as to bring our caloric value or diet up to about 3,000 calories. This was done in December, 1942 until about June, 1943. The caloric value of our diet ranged between 2,900 and 3,000 calories per man per day. At this time we began to suspect that we might never again receive a similar shipment of foodstuffs and we decided to reduce the issue to the cook to the point ~~where~~ where the diet would obtain 2,500 calories. We managed to maintain the level of the diet at 2,500 calories or slightly less until March, 1944. At that time the supply of bulk foodstuffs received from the Red Cross was entirely exhausted and our diet once more fell to 2,000 calories on the issues supplied by the Japanese. In April, 1944 we received a small shipment of foodstuffs through the agency of the Lobo Red Cross in Hongkong. This shipment was not large but it was sufficient to raise the caloric ~~level~~ level of our diet to something between 2,400 and 2,500 calories and we maintained this level, swinging from 2,000 to 2,500 as repeated shipments came in from the Lobo Red Cross Organisation.

President: Are you going to a new subject now, Major Puddicombe?

Major Puddicombe: Yes.

President: In that case the Court will recess for five minutes. It has been a rather long and tiring session.

ADJOURNMENT

The Court then adjourned for five minutes. (1500 hours).

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref.:
WO 235 / 1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

EXAMINATION OF P.W. NO. 1 - LT-COL. J.N.B. CRAWFORD (Cont'd).RESUMPTION

The Court resumed at 1505 hours.

The Prosecuting Officer continued his examination.

Q. You have spoken of the sanitary arrangements, the diet at your disposal and the accommodation in both camps. Will you tell the Court now what the result of the sanitary arrangements as you found was?

A. The insanitary conditions of flies, poor drains and overcrowding, either singularly or in combination, gave rise to three diseases. These diseases were dysentery, malaria and diphtheria. The inadequate diet gave rise to a series of diseases due to nutritional deficiency. Examples of such diseases were pellagra and beri-beri and we have grouped them generally under the name of avitaminosis.

Q. What about accommodation in the barracks. You have mentioned the sanitary arrangements by which I visualise the latrine arrangements and the dietary situation. I will ask you if it is pertinent to make a comment on the accommodation as you have described overcrowding in relation to disease.

A. I think I have already answered that question when I said that the insanitary conditions, the flies, bad drains and overcrowding, either singularly or in combination, produced -- they were inter related. Overcrowding played the part of spreading an epidemic, the bad drains the part of breeding mosquitoes causing malaria and the ~~flies~~ flies spreading dysentery.

The first accused (Col Tokunaga) at this point appeared to have difficulty in hearing the translation of the questions and answers in Japanese. The interpreter was brought nearer him.

President: Mr Fujita, will you ask Col Tokunaga if he can now hear what is going on?

After this had been done by Mr Fujita, Col Tokunaga answered: "As a result of your kind consideration, I am able to hear very well now."

Q. If the Court permits we will take up the three diseases the witness has mentioned singly. Taking dysentery first. Will you give the history of dysentery in the North Point Camp and Shamshuipo Camp, Col Crawford? I presume you will speak for the Canadian cases and will you indicate if there are more than Canadian cases with which you are conversant?

A. It was apparent from the first days of internment that dysentery was going to form a very serious problem for us. Many of the POW had contracted dysentery during the fighting in the hills and the conditions of overcrowding, malnutrition and insanitary conditions in the prison camp provided an ideal situation for the spread of the disease. Reference to the monthly report of sick in hospital for North Point Camp in respect of Canadians will show that admissions for diarrhoea and dysentery to the hospital alone varied from 70 to roughly 125 a month. This does not by any means represent the amount of dysentery in the Camp. If a man were strong enough to get to the latrine by himself, he stayed in his barrack hut at North Point Camp. On the other hand if he were desperately ill, he was transferred to Bowen Road Hospital. Something between 100 and 200 cases a month occurred while we were in Shamshuipo until about November,

1		2		1		2	
cme		Ref:		1		Ine	
		WO 235/1012 PT1					

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.

EXAMINATION OF P.W. NO. 1 - LT-COL J.N.B. CRAWFORD (Cont'd).

1943. At this time the incidents of dysentery began to fall off. This was due to two causes. First, our gradual victory in our battle against flies in the camp and secondly that repeated drafts out of camp to Japan had decreased the pool of population upon which we could draw.

Q. Will you just explain that last remark? The "pool of population from which you could draw" means what?

A. We had started off with roughly 1500 troops to any one or number of whom could develop dysentery. We finally ended up with 350 Canadians in Shamshuipo. Consequently we could not have so much dysentery in such a small group. About April, 1944, dysentery ceased to be a major threat to us but in the meantime it had killed a large number of Canadians who should not have died.

Q. Will you produce two exhibits "J" and "K"? Can you tell from these exhibits precisely the number of cases which arose during the various periods of time?

A. If I may refer to some notes dealing with the summary of admissions and discharges I should like to do so, otherwise I can reproduce it from the admission and discharge book.

President: Have you these notes with you?
Lt-Col Crawford: Yes.

President: If you are prepared to ~~swear~~ swear they are extracts taken from books we can admit them in evidence.

Lt-Col Crawford: Yes. I would point out that in the months of October, 1942, in the prison camp hospital at Shamshuipo admitted 191 Canadians suffering from dysentery and diarrhoea. During the same period, 284 Canadians were admitted with diphtheria. The balance of 52 patients admitted that month were suffering from general diseases such as malnutrition or fevers or other diseases non-infectious. During the month of October, 41 Canadian soldiers died mostly as a result of diphtheria and many from dysentery and malnutrition.

Q. Will you tell the Court what aid in combatting dysentery the Japanese provided to you? I will ask you to produce receipts you gave to the Japanese for various medical stores.

A. The drug of choice in the treatment of the type of dysentery we had is some drug of the sulpha ~~group~~ group variously known in England as M and B or a Japanese preparation known as Trianon. Such a drug given early in the course of dysentery saves lives. The normal dosage of such a drug would be expected to be something between seven and 10 grammes per patient. I produce here receipts or groups of receipts which I have given the Japanese for drugs of one kind or another received at various times during my imprisonment. They are not complete in that they do not represent all the drugs I got. These are merely copies of receipts I happened to have with me at the time I was liberated. On the other hand the receipt on the first page dated October 16, 1942, represents all the drugs I received in the month of October, 1942.

Q. Before you proceed, in order to prevent any misunderstanding, will you refer to the second page of Exhibit Three?

A. Oh, yes. I also received 30,000 units of diphtheria anti-toxin. I gave a separate receipt for that. Reference to this receipt shows that on October 16, I received 220 tablets of Trianon, each of which weighed .2 gramme. That means that

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref.		Ins			
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES				WO 235/1012 PT1			
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.							

EXAMINATION OF P.W. NO. 1 - LT-COL J.N.B. CRAWFORD (Cont'd).

I got a total of 44 grammes of Trianon.

Q. Will you refer again, Sir, to the notation following immediately?

A. I don't know how strong these were. It was additional Trianon. They possibly had a .2 gramme content also. In such a case, 20 grammes of Trianon would be represented in the 50 ampules received, making a total of 94 grammes of Trianon by tablet or injection. Each case of dysentery required 7 to 10 grammes for treatment. During the month of October, I had 191 cases to treat. I had less than 100 grammes of Trianon with which to do it.

Q. I realise this is simply a matter of arithmetic, but what would have been an adequate amount of trianon to supply the 191 cases?

A. I should have had 1,910 grammes.

President: The Court will accept these collection of receipts for drugs and refer to it as receipts for drugs issued by the Imperial Japanese Army for the months of October, 1942, November, 1942, and December, 1942. It will be listed as Exhibit "P." *having been submitted by the President and is attached to the proceedings.*

Q. As to the other remedies or preventatives for dysentery, that is, the sanitary arrangements and accommodation, what provision did the Japanese make to prevent the spread or enlargement of the disease in these two headings?

A. We did receive ~~in~~ creosol and disinfectants in small quantities with which we were able to disinfect articles of clothing, hospital equipment and barrack room huts and so on but that was very weak measure against an epidemic and from the point of effect, apart from supplying us with this little bit of Trianon, we got no assistance in combatting dysentery.

Q. Would you comment on the accommodation factor in the fight against dysentery?

A. Just before I do that, I would like to make one addition to something that was done by the Japanese. We did have fairly regular inoculations for various vaccines including cholera and typhoid, the value of which has been proved. We also received ~~anti~~ injections of anti-dysentery serum, the value of which to my knowledge has never been proved by a truly scientific work. *acc*

President: Before we leave the subject of dysentery, can you tell the Court what type of dysentery was the most prevalent, whether it was bacilliary dysentery or ~~anemic~~ *amoebic* dysentery? *acc*

Lt-Col Crawford: Both were present but bacilliary dysentery was much more dominant.

Continuing his evidence, Lt-Col Crawford said: A question was asked as to what role was played by overcrowding in the spread of dysentery and what was done by the Japanese in this respect. Dysentery is spread by the contamination of food stuff by the dysentery germ. It is handed out directly by one person who spreads it or indirectly by flies. In either case, overcrowding facilitates the spread of dysentery. As drafts left for Japan, the overcrowding in the barrack room huts improved slightly. We reduced the population of a hut from about 80 to about 50 -- a hut that should normally contain 32. It never got better than 50.

1		2	
cm		Ref:	
WO 235/1012 PT1		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1		2	
ins		ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.

EXAMINATION OF P.W. NO. 1 - LT-COL J.N.B. CRAWFORD (Cont'd).

Q. What, if any, other accommodation to your knowledge was available?

A. After the draft left in January and as each subsequent draft left, more barrack space became available but these huts were wired off from the rest of the Camp and left empty or for the storage of oil drums. When we left Jubilee Building at the end of January, 1943, it stayed empty for many months before it was finally used as a Japanese quarters.

Q. You have spoken of the number of deaths from dysentery. Have you a document, a compilation of deaths by disease during the Japanese occupation?

A. I will produce here, Sir, a nominal roll of Canadians who died in the Hongkong area including the Bowen Road Hospital, North Point Camp and Shamshuipo Camp during the period of the internment. The names shown on this list have been derived from two sources: one group are the names of those who died in Shamshuipo Camp and these names appear in the admission and discharge book for the Hospital which you already have. These are ~~men~~ men whom I attended myself or whom I saw attended during their illness. The other group are names of men who died in Bowen Road Hospital. I did not see these men die. I did not attend them during their illness. The details of the deaths have been obtained by word of mouth from reliable persons coming down from Bowen Road Hospital into Camp and many times the evidence has been substantiated by case history sheets which were smuggled into Shamshuipo Camp to me. That list is in my own handwriting.

President: Did you sign it at any time?

Lt-Col Crawford: No.

President: It is in your own handwriting?

Lt-Col Crawford: Yes.

President: Can you give the total figures of deaths from this?

Lt-Col Crawford: 128 names appear there, Sir.

Major Puddicombe: We will have ~~an~~ occasion to refer to that list on several subsequent matters, Sir.

President: In that case, the Court will list it and hand it back. The Court accepts this and lists it as a nominal roll of Canadian POW who died during the period of internment at Shamshuipo Camp, North Point Camp and Bowen Road Hospital Camp from disease; and will be listed as Exhibit "Q." *having been submitted by the President.*

Q. I should like to ask about the number of deaths.

A. It is very difficult in many cases to say whether the man died of dysentery or not. It is true he had dysentery when he died. At the same time he might have had diptheria or he might have had malnutrition or avitaminosis. He might have had dysentery when he died. Having gone over this nominal roll of 128 deaths, I ~~think~~ have decided that 21 can fairly be said to have died primarily of dysentery without undue provocation.

President: Can the witness give us the figure for diptheria in the same way?

Maj Puddicombe: That will be brought out when we discuss the disease itself.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref.
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

EXAMINATION OF P.W. NO. 1- LT-COL J.N.B. CRAWFORD (Cont'd).

President: The Court would like to have placed on record that they have compared the figures given in the witness' notes of admission to hospital for dysentery, diptheria and malaria with the actual names in Exhibit "G" and "H" for the month of October and find they are substantially correct.

President: As it is now a convenient time to adjourn, the Court is adjourned to 10 a.m. to-morrow.

ADJOURNMENT.

The Court adjourned at 1600 hours until 1000 hours on Friday, October 18th, 1946.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235 / 1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	2

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

NO. 5 WAR CRIMES COURT

SECOND DAY'S proceedings of the trial of Col TOKUNAGA ISAO, Capt. SAITO SHUNKICHI, Lieut. TANAKA HITOSHI, Interpreter TSUTADA ITSUO and Sergt HARADA JOTARO, of the Imperial Japanese Army.

(Held at Jardine Matheson's East Point Godown on Friday, October 18, 1946.

 1116

The Court re-assembled at 1000 Hours

Capt P.E. Kostiloff took the place of Lieut J. Benyon as Adviser to the Japanese Defence Counsel, owing to the absence of Lieut Benyon on duty.

EXAMINATION OF P.W. NO. 1 - LT-COL J.N.B. CRAWFORD (cont.):

After Lt-Col Crawford had been reminded by the President that he was still on oath, the examination of Witness by the Prosecuting Officer continued as follows:-

Q. At the adjournment yesterday you had, Sir, I think completed discussion on dysentery, the incidence of the disease and the number of Canadian casualties. Have you anything further to add before we proceed with the next disease?

A. No.

Q. To pass from dysentery to avitaminosis, would you commence your statement on this with an indication to the Court of the minimum requirements for diet?

A. What I am about to say in connection with minimum requirements for diet is based on our own observations in camp and on the observations of a great many ~~doctors~~ all over the world who have studied nutritional problems. Food is required by the human body to carry on bodily activity. The amount of food required depends upon the size of the individual and on the amount of activity which he is doing. The amount of food required by an individual at rest has been carefully worked out and is universally accepted throughout the world. This amount which is known as basal metabolic requirement is the amount that is required to maintain such bodily functions as heart beat, respiration, digestive functions and so on. Under conditions of rest the individual requires 30 calories per kilogram of body weight. Let us take, for example, a man who weighs 160 lbs, an average weight for a European. The weight of such a man converted into kilograms would be approximately 70 kilos. At 30 calories per kilogram such a man, then, requires, in order to maintain such activity as heart beat, respiration, digestive function, resting in bed doing no other work - such a man requires 2,100 calories per day. A bigger man requires more. A man doing any activity, moderate work or heavy work requires still more. In addition to the caloric requirements that have been indicated here, the diet must contain a certain number of accessory food substances that we know as vitamins, and mineral substances of various kinds such as iron, calcium, sodium and so on. As an example of the latter, the minimum

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

EXAMINATION OF P.W. NO. 1 - LT-COL J.N.B. CRAWFORD (cont.):

A(cont.): requirements for salt under ordinary temperate conditions is ten grams per day.

Q. Will you give an outline of the history of the avitaminosis group in North Point and Shamshuipo?

A. Nutritional deficiencies began to show up in North Point camp in late February or early March 1942. The first signs that we noticed were swelling of the ankles or face and various signs of numbness and tingling in hands and feet which were due to nerves involved. I had been able to obtain a supply of a preparation known as Thiamin from Dr Selwyn-Clarke.

Q. Who was Dr Selwyn-Clarke?

A. Dr Selwyn-Clarke had been Director of Medical Services in the colony before the war and during the early part of the Japanese occupation he was not interned. The use of this Thiamin in patients suffering, as I have described, brought about recovery. We felt as a result of this that there was no doubt that the condition with which we were dealing was through vitamin deficiency. In the course of the summer of 1942 other signs appeared which we need not explain here, but by the end of the summer - in August or September 1942 - almost every one in North Point camp was suffering from nutritional deficiency to some degree or another. Only toward the end of September did the cases begin to become alarmingly serious. When we went to Shamshuipo in September 1942, a condition that we called electric feet, which was a very severe pain in the feet of people suffering from nutritional deficiency, began to occur. Beginning at this time cases began to be admitted to hospital for nutritional diseases. I would like to refer, Sir, to the exhibit of summary of statements of sick in hospital for those months, if I may.

After the required exhibit was handed to the Witness he continued:

A(cont.): In September 1942 - from the 27th to the end of the month - we admitted 15 cases suffering from nutritional disturbance. That indicates that 15 men were by this time so ill with nutritional disturbance that they had to be sent to hospital. In October 1942 we admitted 32 men for the same reason. In November 1942 119 were brought into hospital for the treatment of nutritional disturbance. I must point out here that that sudden increase does not indicate a sudden increase in the amount of nutritional disturbance. The reason for this large number coming into hospital was that in the month of November we had received a supply of bulk Red Cross food stuffs and for the first time we felt that we had some weapon with which to combat nutritional disturbance. We therefore brought men into hospital who heretofore had been living in the huts, there being no way of treatment. We admitted 19 men in December 1942, 53 men in January 1943 and 111 men in February 1943. It will be noted that there is considerable increase in the month of February 1943, 111 men being admitted. This, too, is an indication of a fact that at this time we had another weapon with which to treat the disease. At this time Dr Saito, the camp medical officer, brought in a few bottles of a Japanese preparation known as Apellagrin. We used this preparation and found that it was quite useful. We were unable to get any more through the normal Japanese issue of drugs so we set about to buy some, utilising sentries in the camp to

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref.		ins		ins	
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES							
WO 235/1012 PT1							
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.							

EXAMINATION OF P.W. NO. 1 - LT-COL J.M.B. CRAWFORD (cont.):

A(cont.): buy it for us in town. From this time on we always had a little Apellagrin or similar preparations for the treatment of nutritional disease. The admissions for avitaminosis and nutritional disease carried on in smaller numbers for the remaining months of our internment. The decrease in the numbers of cases admitted to hospital is again two in number, first the numbers of Canadians in camp were being constantly reduced by drafts to Japan and secondly we were greatly becoming accustomed to the type of diet on which we existed. Malnutrition killed a great many Canadian soldiers. Almost every soldier who died from any cause suffered from malnutrition as well, but in referring to the nominal rolls on deaths of Canadian soldiers in this area, I feel that 15 Canadians died from malnutrition along without⁴ other contributing factors. An adequate diet would have prevented these deaths. ALL

Q. Colonel, if you will refer back again to August 1942. Did your report on that date cover the deficiency of diet in any way?

A. In the report that I wrote in August 1942 I pointed out that sickness had increased in the camp by about 50 per cent, and that this increase was related to the decrease of rations which took place at that time.

Q. Before we leave avitaminosis, would you recapitulate a summary of the caloric diet you received in Shamshuipo, that is from the Japanese?

A. I would just like to point out again that on a diet that at its best was 3,000 calories with at its average something between 2,000 to 2,500, our men, ~~were~~ who were in work parties either outside or inside the camp, were by no means under basal conditions, which conditions required 2,100 for a man of average weight.

Q. Now, Sir,

President: Before we leave this question of avitaminosis I should like to ask Col Crawford whether he can tell the Court what is the basic metabolic requirement for a man doing manual work?

Col Crawford: The metabolic requirements of a man doing work varied with the amount of work that he is doing. A man doing moderate work of average bill will require something between 2,700 and 3,000 calories. The British Army ration supplies about 3,500 calories.

President: Was that the type of work, to your knowledge, that was being done by the prisoners in and around camp or in working parties?

Col Crawford: Yes, I know that was the type of work that was being done.

Major Puddicombe: Shall I now proceed, Sir, with the next disease?

President: Please.

Q. Diphtheria. Will you give a history of that disease in both North Point and Shamshuipo?

A. During the summer of 1942 we had an epidemic of sore throat in North Point camp. This condition was basically one of malnutrition but the condition of the throat made it

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235 / 1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	2

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.

EXAMINATION OF P.W. NO. 1 - LT-COL J.N.B. CRAWFORD (cont.):

A(cont.): an ideal medium on which diphtheria germ could grow. Diphtheria was first definitely diagnosed in North Point camp in August 1942. In that month we diagnosed 12 cases which we sent to Bowen Road hospital. From September 1 to 25, 29 cases developed in North Point camp and were sent to Bowen Road. During this period there was no particular difficulty in moving the cases to Bowen Road hospital. On occasion a truck went up twice a day to Bowen Road to take patients from the camp. Between September 25 and 27, six cases of diphtheria developed in camp. Permission to move these cases to Bowen Road hospital was refused.

Q. From whom, do you recall, Colonel, was permission requested?

A. Actually permission for that move was requested from an interpreter named Kochi. These six cases that developed were taken with us in the ferry to Shamshuipo camp on September 27. I had asked on several occasions from Sgt Ueyama, medical sergeant in North Point, that I be given anti-diphtheric serum or diphtheria anti-toxin for treatment of these cases. Ueyama pointed out that the cases need not be treated in camp, that they were being taken to Bowen Road hospital and that they could be treated there. I subsequently learned that there was no serum in Bowen Road hospital either. When we got to Shamshuipo camp we realised that we would not be able to send diphtheria cases to Bowen Road hospital any longer. I asked Dr Saito for a supply of anti-diphtheric serum. He told me that there was no serum available. I then asked him to cable Tokyo and ask that some serum be flown down to us. Dr Saito said he would see what he could do about that. I would like again, Sir, to refer to the exhibit of sick in hospital in Shamshuipo.

Handed the required exhibit, Witness continued:

A(cont.): For the last four days in September, from 27th to 30th, we admitted 35 cases of diphtheria to Shamshuipo camp hospital. In October we admitted 248 cases. The medicine that saves lives in diphtheria is anti-diphtheric serum. On October 3, I was given a few thousand units of anti-diphtheric serum by the British medical officers. They had been able to buy some serum through sentries and through the agency of one of the Japanese interpreters, and some serum had been issued to them by the Japanese authorities. On October 3 for the first time I had some diphtheria anti-toxin with which to treat cases of diphtheria. On October 5 I was issued 10,000 units of anti-toxin by the Japanese. The normal dose for an adult who contracts diphtheria is in the vicinity of 100,000 units per individual. It was obvious, if the small amount of serum which we had was going to do any good it had to be given at the very first stages of the disease. We therefore had to refuse serum to ~~of~~ cases who had had diphtheria for more than 48 hours. Of the serum that we had, we used for early cases and it saved life in early cases. In all 76 Canadians who developed diphtheria received no serum. Fifty four Canadians died of diphtheria and almost all of that number were included in the 76 who received no serum. In all 494 Canadians developed diphtheria. With adequate treatment the death rate from diphtheria would certainly not be higher than two per cent. That means that had we adequate supply of serum not more than 10 Canadians would have died. On the

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref.
WO 235 / 1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

EXAMINATION OF P.W. NO. 1 - LT-COL J.N.B. CRAWFORD (cont.):

A(cont.): other hand the use of serum in diphtheria is only part of the treatment. The thing to be sought after is prevention. It is comparatively easy to detect the carrier of diphtheria. A swab of the throat planted and grown under certain conditions would show the germ in a carrier. That is, when a person who is carrying diphtheria germ had throat swabs taken, we could detect carriers in groups of people. In August 1942, we asked the Japanese that throat swabs be done in North Point camp. Had this been done we would probably have stopped the epidemic of diphtheria sometime early in September. Up until the middle of September we had had only 41 cases of diphtheria developed. Beginning October 1 in Shamshuipo camp throat swabs were taken. That we repeated for the next two months until all carriers had been detected and isolated. From October 5 serum was issued to me in ever increasing amounts. By the end of October or middle of November we had ample serum. By this time the damage had been done.

Q. Have you any knowledge, Sir, of the laboratory facilities of the Japanese in regard to throat swabs at the time you made your ~~recommendations~~ recommendations in July?

A. In October I asked a Japanese, a member of their military laboratory, if the laboratory had been functioning in August 1942. He told me that it had. I know also that throat swabs were being done by this laboratory for cases of diphtheria which arose in Shamshuipo camp in August.

Q. You have told us you made three recommendations for prevention. Now, about segregation. What facilities were there for segregation. What was the implication regarding segregation in so far as you and the Japanese were concerned?

A. There were facilities for segregation to this extent, that we having detected the carriers could put them together in one or more huts in the camp and keep them from contact with the rest of the camp. This in effect was done in Shamshuipo once throat swabs began to be done.

Q. What requests were made for serum and from whom?

A. First to Sgt Y. Ueyama, the medical sergeant at North Point camp, in August 1942 and next to Dr Saito, camp medical officer in September 1942.

Q. What response did Saito make?

A. He told me that there was no serum available.

Q. Have you any comment to make on Saito's reply to that effect?

A. I know that at the time the British medical officers were buying serum in Hongkong. I know that a few days later I bought serum myself that was purchased locally.

Q. Is there anything further now before leaving diphtheria that you want to add to your statement or comment ~~upon~~ on?

A. Nothing I wish to add.

President: There are two points the Court would like to clear up. When you referred to the camp medical officer as Saito are you referring to anyone in Court?

Col Crawford: I am referring to the accused.

1		2		Ref:		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
cms						WO 235/1012 PT1	
						1	
						Ins	
						2	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

EXAMINATION OF LT-COL J.N.B. CRAWFORD (P.W. NO. 1)(cont.):

President: Have you any knowledge of the supply of diphtheria serum possessed either by the Canadian forces or the English forces on the island at the time of capitulation?

Col Crawford: I know that diphtheria serum was contained in the medical stores. How much there was I am unable to say.

President: One last question. At the time the British medical officers gave you some serum, had you any idea how many British cases of diphtheria there were in Shamshuipo at that time?

Col Crawford: The epidemic in Shamshuipo was just about over at the time we arrived. I understood they had some 500 cases among the British troops in Shamshuipo.

President: You also told the Court on one occasion you were refused permission to evacuate certain diphtheria cases from North Point camp to Bowen Road hospital by a Japanese interpreter named Kochi. Can you tell the Court if this was the responsibility of a Japanese interpreter or did he just do it off his own bat?

Col Crawford: At that time the question of command in North Point camp seemed to be a little confused. We were just about to move to Shamshuipo. The camp commandant had been Lieut Wada and about the 24th or thereabouts he disappeared from our view. We subsequently learned that he was preparing to go on the Lisbon Maru. We saw nothing of Wada for something like a week perhaps before we left the camp. Mr Kochi who had been the interpreter all the time we had been in North Point camp seemed to take on a little additional authority when Lieut Wada left us.

President: Did you bring this refusal to the notice of the accused Capt Saito?

Col Crawford: I had not seen Saito for perhaps two weeks before we left for Shamshuipo.

Q. There are two additional ^{new} questions I should like to ask. In regard to the patients who developed the disease between September 25 and 27, how did you transport them?

A. We carried them on a truck to the ferry, put them on the ferry boat along with the rest of the population of the camp and took them across to Shamshuipo.

Q. What was the condition of the ferry boat in so far as numbers were concerned?

A. It was extremely crowded.

Q. The other question I have is: Will you tell the Court if any suggestion was made to Saito respecting possible sources of serum?

A. I made no such suggestion myself. I believe that the medical officers at Bowen Road hospital at one time offered to show where serum could be obtained in town.

Q. On receiving the reply that there was none available from Saito in October as you have spoken of, have you any comment to make as to that reply at that time?

A. I have pointed out the suggestion I made to Saito at that time that he communicate with Tokyo for serum to be flown down. His reply was that he would see what he could do. Only two days later did I learn that serum might be obtained through irregular channels.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.

EXAMINATION OF P.W. NO. 1 - LT-COL J.N.B. CRAWFORD (cont.):

A(cont.): cases numbered 27. The balance of ~~it~~ 101 cases are in my considered opinion cases which need not have died. Fifty four men died of diphtheria - they should not have died. Twenty one men died of dysentery - they should not have died. Fifteen died of uncomplicated malnutrition, starvation, avitaminosis. The balance to make up 101 died of a combination of dysentery and avitaminosis in which I am not prepared to say which was the primary cause of death.

Q. Will you tell the Court what the position in a POW camp was that of the accused Saito?

A. Saito was, as far as I could determine, the medical officer of all POW camps. He was at any rate the Japanese medical officer in charge of the camps in which I was. He was the only Japanese medical officer I ever saw. From time to time he ordered inoculation parades against cholera and typhoid and that sort of thing. From time to time he ordered weighing parades at which POW would be weighed and occasionally he attended these parades. From time to time he inspected the general medical and surgical wards of the hospital. I do not know of any occasion on which he ever inspected the dysentery hospital or the diphtheria hospital. Requests for drugs which we made were made through the Japanese medical orderly in charge of the camp and were sometimes discussed with Dr Saito.

Q. Do you remember any particular medical inspection which you would care to comment on with regard to general fitness?

A. There was one occasion in the spring of 1945, I think, when something occurred which I believe was a medical inspection on the part of the Japanese. The circumstances surrounding this ~~affair~~ affair were as follows: We were called out to the parade square - that is the entire camp was called - and placed in groups in various ways such as by corps or regiment or huts but I forget just how we were arranged. We were ordered by groups to run around the parade square. Some men did not run at all but walked around the parade square. Some ran a few steps and then walked the rest of the way. All these men who were unable to run the full distance were segregated into a separate group by Dr Saito. This group then that had been segregated was ordered to run as if in a foot race, competing one with another. The only member of this group who ran was a Pte Talbot of the HKVDC. Saito thereupon slapped Talbot's face presumably because he did not run the first time.

Q. In regard to your diagnosis of diphtheria what, if any, instructions did you receive from the accused Saito in respect of these diagnoses?

A. Through the camp interpreter I was instructed ~~to sign~~ on several occasions that I must not put diphtheria as the cause of death on death certificates. The acceptable substitute for the term was acute ~~membro~~ tonsillitis and we utilised that nomenclature on some occasions. We were also instructed on one occasion that dysentery was not an acceptable term on death certificates.

Q. What designation was indicated for dysentery then, doctor?

A. It was called acute enteritis or ~~in~~ ileo-colitis or mucositis, anything that would indicate to us subsequently what the ~~actual~~ real thing was.

Q. President: You said you received instructions from the camp interpreter as to these acceptable substitutes. Where did these instructions come from?

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
line	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

Examination OF P.W. NO. 1 - LT-COL J.N.B. CRAWFORD (cont.):

Col Crawford: I don't know who gave the instructions to the interpreter but they were given to me. I was told that Japanese HQ did not accept these diagnoses on the death certificates. I may say in regard to that that these instructions were more often carried out in the breach than in the actual observation. We continued to use the term diphtheria.

Q. What scientific interest did Saito show in the conditions of disease and malnutrition evident in the two POW camps?

A. There were two indications of what one might call scientific interest. The first was in respect to avitaminosis particularly pellagra. I have already indicated that Dr Saito did bring into camp a few bottles of a Japanese preparation of nicotinic acid known as Apellagrin. This was in February 1943. He instructed us to use this preparation for treating pellagra and to report to him upon the results. He also at a subsequent date asked us to show all our cases of skin pellagra to him and another Japanese officer. The other occasions which might be mentioned is an occasion on which he asked us many months after the diphtheria epidemic was over to prepare a report on the diphtheria epidemic. Apart from these two occasions I have no personal knowledge of any interest that was shown in our condition by Saito.

Q. What became of the medical records of the British Military hospital?

A. At the time of the relief of Hongkong, the British Military hospital was located in the Central British School, Kowloon. The officer in command of the hospital at that time was Lt-Col Bowie. Sometime about the middle of August 1945 Saito went into the Military hospital and demanded all the medical records that were stored there. These records included the hospital admissions and discharges book, the records of operations, the lists of deaths and the individual medical case sheets on the patients who had been in the hospital. These records were produced and given to Saito and were never seen again by Col Bowie. After August 15, Col Bowie asked for the return of these records. Saito stated that the records had been destroyed by burning and he gave Col Bowie a certificate to this effect. Col Bowie gave me a certified true copy of this certificate.

President: Are you producing this now?

Major Puddicombe: I have not got it with me now, Sir.

President: Was any similar attempt made to get hold of the records of the Canadian hospital?

Col Crawford: As far as I know the records in the camp hospital were never asked for.

Q. Were there any other indications of inhumane treatment?

A. There were several cases of beatings of which I had knowledge and numerous cases of slappings which were less severe of which I have knowledge. Of the latter type I have personal knowledge of one case when I was slapped. This occurred on October 17, 1942. At this time the diphtheria was at its height. Forty one Canadians died during the month of October. There had been three or four deaths in the 24 hours immediately ~~pre~~ preceding these circumstances. Saito came into camp and ordered me to assemble the hospital orderlies on the road. Saito was accompanied by Kochi, the interpreter and by a Japanese soldier with rifle and fixed bayonet and by another Japanese officer wearing a sword.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref.
WO 235 / 1012 PT 1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' material.

EXAMINATION OF P.W. NO. 1 - LT-COL J.N.B. CRAWFORD (cont.):

A(cont.): Saito himself was wearing a sword. I assembled about 20 orderlies on the road. These Canadian orderlies were non-professional nurses. They were fighting soldiers who had volunteered to do duty in the hospital because of the great need for them. The only medical training which they had was what I had been able to give them in the camp hospital at North Point and for a few weeks at Shamshuipo. Saito addressed the parade through Kochi and told them in effect that their comrades were dying of diphtheria because they, the orderlies, were not doing their best to save them. He then asked any orderly who thought that he was doing his best to step forward. All the orderlies stepped forward. Saito then walked down the two rows of orderlies, slapping their faces with his open hand or with the rubber tubing of his stethoscope. After he had slapped, perhaps, half a dozen faces he ordered Kochi to step in and slap faces too. After he had finished the two rows of orderlies he stepped in front of the parade and drew his sword. He then said through the interpreter that any orderly who still felt he was doing his best was to step forward and that he, Saito, would cut off his head. One orderly, L/Cpl Varley, did step forward. Saito sent Varley to one side and then facing me slapped my face. He then told Varley he was a very brave man and sent him away. I know of two cases which were rather more severe beatings than that. Shortly before Christmas 1942 an ordinary muster parade was held in which all prisoners were expected to appear except hospital patients. At this time the diphtheria patients were accommodated in the Jubilee hospital and the orderlies who were looking after them slept in the hospital but came on parade for counting purposes. On this particular day two orderlies were sleeping in the Jubilee building and through some oversight of their comrades were not awakened. They were late for muster parade by about 10 minutes. The camp commandant at this time was, I think, Saikino, and the ~~man~~ interpreter was a man named Inouye. The camp commandant seemed very upset that these two men were late. He demanded to know who was responsible for these two men. I suggested that as the men were acting as nursing orderlies and as I was in charge of the hospital, that the responsibility for their behaviour was mine. These two men were both members of the Winnipeg Grenadiers.

President: Were any of the accused present on this occasion?

Col Crawford: No, Sir.

President: Did any of the accused have any connection with this incident?

Major Puddicombe: This evidence, Sir, is under the general charge of inhumane treatment of POW in camps, particularly at Shamshuipo. It has been our intention, Sir, to show you a number of these beatings on which the witness will speak in an endeavour to show there was a general system of maltreatment and humiliation sanctioned by the principal accused.

President: Oh, all right, then.

Witness then continued his evidence.

A(cont.): Because these men were Winnipeg Grenadiers the responsibility was finally fixed on their company commander,

1		2		1		2	
cm		Ref:		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES		1	
				WO 235/1012 PT1		line	
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' material.							

EXAMINATION OF P.W. NO. 1 - LT-COL J.N.B. CRAWFORD (cont.):

A(cont.): Capt John Norris. He had in fact nothing to do with these men since they began to work in the hospital. Nevertheless he was called before the parade and Inouye began questioning him, at first translating for the camp commandant. The interrogation by Inouye soon became violent. He punched Norris, tripped him, knocked him down and kicked him. After some minutes of such treatment he turned to Major Atkinson, who was staff officer at the time, and kicked him on the knee-cap. I asked and obtained permission from the camp commandant to remove Norris to the medical inspection room where I examined him for injuries. While I was doing so Inouye and the camp commandant came into the room and asked if any severe damage had been done. When I replied that Norris's eye had been injured I was told that I must do my best to save Norris's eye-sight. I know of one occasion apart from this - that of Sub-Lt ~~Heiderkoper~~ Heiderkoper of the Royal Netherlands Navy. A radio had been discovered in camp in the hut occupied by the crew of a Dutch submarine. Lt Heiderkoper did not live in this hut with the rest of the crew but lived in the officers hut. He himself knew nothing of the existence of the radio. Because he was the only Dutch officer present he was called to the camp HQ and told that he must apologise for the action of the crew of the Dutch submarine. He refused to do so, saying that he knew nothing about what was going on. Thereupon the interpreter Tsutada, who is in the dock, removed his belt and beat Lt Heiderkoper with it about the face and head. I was not present at this but Heiderkoper immediately afterwards reported to me in my quarters in order to receive medical attention for cuts and bruises that he had received. At that time he told me what had happened.

President: Can you say when this took place?

Col Crawford: I can bracket it, Sir, between January 19, 1943 and the middle of August of the same year. It was in the first half of 1943.

President: On the occasion when Major Atkinson was kicked, did any injury result?

Col Crawford: To Major Atkinson?

President: Yes.

Col Crawford: His knee is apt to go out of joint now Sir. At the time he had a badly swollen knee.

Q. What do you know in respect to the type of work which POW on working parties did?

A. I did not go on working parties myself but I was in medical charge of the men who went out on working parties and they told me the type of work that they were doing. They did a variety of work, for example, they did work on enlarging Kai Tak Airport - pick and shovel work. They loaded aerial bombs on ships and off ships. They loaded gasoline drums. They dug tunnels in the hills which were for Japanese use. For the rest they did gardening and farming.

Q. What do you know of the physical fitness of men sent on work details?

A. I know that many men who went on working parties were in my opinion not fit to go. On many occasions men had come to me on sick parade and asked to be excused from going on work parties. I have had to point out to such men that while I agreed that they were not fit to go, if they remained at home, it would mean some one less fit would have to go in their place.

1		2		Ref:		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
cme						WO 235/1012 PT1	
						1	
						line	
						2	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.

EXAMINATION OF P.W. NO. 1 - LT-COL J.N.B. CRAWFORD (cont.):

Q. Will you tell the Court why you had to tell them they would have to go otherwise less fit people would have to go?

A. We were required to send a certain number on each working party. This number had to be met. There were not sufficient fit men in the camp to make up the required number.

Q. To what extent to your knowledge would these requirements be filled by men who were considered by you as unfit?

A. As far as the Canadians were concerned I think that we never sent out the lowest category of men on work parties. We had to send out men who were unfit to do the type of work they were required to do. I can say about 30 per cent of any working party would be made up of such men unfit to do what they were required to do.

Q. What do you know of the medical inspection of drafts going to Japan?

A. I can tell you what occurred prior to the selection of the first Canadian draft that left in January 1943. About January 12, 1943, the Canadian other ranks were lined up on the road at Shamshuipo camp in five rows. The interpreter and a Japanese officer from HQ then ordered the first row to march five paces forward. Those who were unable to march five paces were allowed to fall out to one side. These manoeuvres were then repeated for the remaining four rows. The group which was left which had been able to walk five paces forward was then reviewed by Saito. These men were not stripped. They were clad in what clothes they had and Saito on visual inspection only selected cases that had severe war injuries to the upper extremities and faults that were obvious to the eye. This group contained many men who had suffered damage as a result of malnutrition, bad vision, damage to the heart, damage to the kidneys, but they were left in the group which was to go to Japan. After this process of selection had taken place the group was not large enough to suit the Japanese authorities. I and three other Canadian medical officers were then ordered to select from the group already discarded by the Japanese 50 men to join this parade. ~~Manoeuvre~~

Q. Have you anything to submit to the Court respecting the actual physical fitness of the men who actually went on draft other than the statement you have just made?

A. I would like to submit this document which is a nominal roll of Canadians who went on drafts at one time or another to Japan. Beside each name is some comment in abbreviated form explaining what diseases the man had prior to the time he went on draft. Opposite the names of those who formed the first draft in January 1943 there is very little in the way of comment. After the names of those who went on subsequent drafts there is an ever increasing amount of comment on their condition. ~~Important document~~ On the basis of this document it is safe to say that many men who went on labour drafts to Japan were in no condition to go.

President: Is this document written by yourself?
Col Crawford: It is in my own hand writing.

President: When was it done?

Col Crawford: At various times as drafts left. The first part had been just after the departure of the first draft and the others as they followed.

1		2		Ref.		WO 235 /1012 PT1		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
cms								1	
								ins	
								2	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet

-33-

EXAMINATION OF P.W. NO. 1 - LT-COL J.N.B. CRAWFORD (cont.):

President: It is a contemporary document?
 Lt-Col Crawford: Yes.

President: Can you give the Court any idea as to the portion of unfit men who might go on drafts. Supposing a draft was 1,000. Have you any idea?

Lt-Col Crawford: Judging by our standard of fitness, I would say not more than 10 per cent of any draft was, strictly speaking, fit to go.

President: Was there a medical inspection prior to each draft being sent?

Lt-Col Crawford: No, Sir. On subsequent drafts, we did not have such a large quota and we were able to select a little more logically ourselves as to who should go.

President: So except for this first draft incident which you have described, the accused Saito had no direct connection with the sending of the subsequent drafts?

Lt-Col Crawford: Yes, he did, Sir. Men who went sick after they had been selected for the draft had to report to him or his representative, the sergeant.

President: What would happen then?

Lt-Col Crawford: Sometimes they got sent back to the draft group; occasionally they were taken off.

President: This document will be listed as a nominal roll of all Canadian prisoners sent to Japan on drafts during the period under consideration together with comments on their condition. It will be listed as Exhibit "R." *submitted by us*
President as attached to the proceedings R-1

President: When a man went sick, having been picked for a draft and ordered to report to Saito or one of his minions, were you present or ever called in in consultation by Saito?

Lt-Col Crawford: I personally was not, but another prisoner medical officer, Major Ashton-Rose, was present at some of these examinations.

Q. My last question is general. On the first two charges, roughly the charges of inhumane treatment of POW at North Point and Shamshupo camps, have you any addition to make to the statement which you have given in such great detail up to this moment?

A. I have nothing further to add.

Major Puddicombe (to President): The only other thing, Sir, is that I would like to have a direction. In Col Crawford's affidavit which was first submitted before we knew he would be here as a witness there is a reference to an exhibit, a book of war wounded. It has nothing to do with the case in my opinion but it was mentioned in the affidavit. I should like to know whether it should be presented to you or if my friend would desire it, it would be made available. Personally I can see no value to the Court in this document at all, but I would like to give an opportunity to my friend.

President: The Court has considered that this document might be of some assistance to the Court and it should be produced and put in as an exhibit if you have it here.

Major Puddicombe (to Lt-Col Crawford): I will ask you

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives Terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives leaflet.

EXAMINATION OF P.W. NO. 1 - LT-COL J.N.B. CRAWFORD (Cont'd).

to produce your list of casualties and if you will, signify to the Court what they are. There is a copy for the Defence. Many photostatic copies are available.

Lt-Col Crawford: This I cannot claim to be a really authentic document. In April, 1942, I went up to Bowen Road for a period of about three weeks. During that time I gathered together all the information I could in respect of admissions and discharges from the various hospitals which had been operating on the Island during the period of fighting. They were not all complete. There were many omissions and errors. I have copied what information I could gather into this book and it begins only at Page 14. The first 13 pages of this book has nothing to do with the thing. It was merely a second-hand book I picked up at the time. It is then a hospital admission and discharge book in respect of various hospitals in the Hongkong area between November 16, 1941 and sometime in January, 1942. It covers that general period.

President: This typewritten paper, is that part of the exhibit?

Lt-Col Crawford: It does not belong to it.

President: Is this written in your own handwriting?

Lt-Col Crawford: It is written in my own handwriting.

President: The Court accepts this exhibit and it is listed as an admissions and discharges book for hospitals on Hongkong Island from November 16, 1941, until sometime in January, 1942, and will be listed as Exhibit "S." *is attached to the proceedings*

President: Is it Hongkong area or Island?

Lt-Col Crawford: Hongkong area. It has something to do with the combined military hospital which was in Whitfield Barracks sometime in November.

President: Does that conclude your examination-in-chief, Major Puddicombe?

Major Puddicombe: Yes, Sir.

President: Mr Fujita, in view of the fact that it has been a very long examination, would you like the Court to adjourn until to-morrow so that you may prepare your cross-examination, or would you prefer to go straight on?

Mr Fujita: I shall be very pleased if the Court will adjourn.

Major Puddicombe: In that event, Sir, would it be possible to continue in the afternoon to-morrow?

President: Yes. The Court is adjourned until 10 o'clock tomorrow morning and will also sit tomorrow afternoon.

ADJOURNMENT.

The Court adjourned at 1250 hours until 1000 hours on Saturday, October 19th, 1946.

1		2		Ref.	
cms					
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES					
WO 235/1012 PT1					
1		1		2	
ms					

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.

NO. 5 WAR CRIMES COURT

THIRD DAY'S proceedings of the trial of Col Tokunaga Isao, Capt. Saito Shunkichi, Lieut. Tanaka Mitoshi, Interpreter Tsutada and Sergt. Harada Jotaro, of the Imperial Japanese Army.

(Held at Jardine Matheson's East Point Godown on Saturday, October 19, 1946.)

RCL
The Court re-assembled at 1000 Hours

CROSS-EXAMINATION OF P.W. NO. 1 - LT-COL J.N.B. CRAWFORD.

Lt-Col Crawford was reminded by the President that he was still on his oath, after which he was cross-examined by Counsel for the Defence.

Before the cross-examination commenced, Lt-Col Crawford, addressing the President, said: May I ask one question, Sir. I should like to have the exhibits which I have put into Court, after they have served their purpose, to be returned to me or to the officer-in-charge of the Canadian War Crimes Investigation. I understand that there are photostatic copies available.

President: Yes, I think we shall be able to do that. If you will leave particulars as to where you want them sent, the Court will arrange that.

Cross-examination then commenced:

Q. Did Canadian prisoners have their separate medical squads and did the Canadian medical officers treat only Canadian prisoners?

A. There were four Canadian medical officers. There were no trained nursing orderlies among the Canadians. During the period at North Point Camp, we treated Canadians and the crew of the Dutch submarine. In Shamshuipo, Canadian medical officers occasionally treated British personnel, but only occasionally.

Q. Can you tell me the way in which the Camp was kept clean?

A. The Camp was kept clean by the efforts of the prisoners-of-war.

President: Which camp are you referring to now?

Lt-Col Crawford: Both North Point and Shamshuipo.

Q. In August, 1942, some Canadians had sore throats. What application was handed in to the Japanese authorities to treat these cases.

A. We asked for materials with which to make gargles for throats and once the condition of diphtheria was diagnosed, we asked for serum.

Q. How long was it after the Canadians got sore throats that you discovered they were ill with diphtheria?

A. We began to have sore throats in June or early July of 1942. Diphtheria did not appear until August, 1942.

Q. What medicines were supplied by the Japanese after they were applied for?

A. The supply of medicines in general received from the

1		2		Ref.		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
cms		1		2		WO 235/1012 PT1	
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.		1		ins		2	

CROSS-EXAMINATION OF P.W. NO. 1 - LT-COL J.N.B. CRAWFORD (Cont'd).

Japanese was always less in quantity than we requested. When a request would be put in, some of the items would be supplied in less quantity than we had asked for. Some would not be supplied at all and other items which we did not ask for would be given to us. The latter group we found quite useless for treatment.

Q. After medicines were applied for, did you ever receive from the Japanese any disinfectant or gargle medicines for sore throats?

A. Yes, we did.

Q. Have you ever received from the Japanese ^{mask}medicines to cover the ^{mouths}mouths?

A. Yes, we did.

Q. Were all these medicines supplied to the Canadians?

A. Yes.

After referring to Exhibit P¹, dated October 16, 1942, Mr Fujita continued:

Q. There are receipts for all drugs that were supplied by the Japanese. Were supplies of diphtheria serum given other than on these receipts?

A. Yes, I have already stated that these receipts are not complete. We got much more than is shown on these receipts.

Q. Does this also include diphtheria serum?

A. That also refers to diphtheria serum.

Q. Do you know a Major Ashton-Rose?

A. Yes.

Q. Have you ever heard from the accused Saito that he gave this Major Ashton-Rose five million units of anti-diphtheria serum and that you should ask him to receive some for your own use?

A. No.

Q. Yesterday, you testified that you received some diphtheria serum from the British POW. Did the British POW say where they got this serum from?

A. Yes, some had been issued by the Japanese and some had been purchased locally.

Q. Do you know in what stores locally this serum was bought?

A. I personally did not know from which stores they were bought.

Q. In what sort of place should diphtheria serum be stored?

A. Ideally, it should be stored in an ice-box but it does retain its potency stored in room temperature.

Q. Yesterday you testified that you heard there was no serum at Bowen Road Hospital. Where did you receive this information? Who told you about this?

A. From patients returning to North Point Camp from Bowen Road Hospital.

Q. Yesterday you also stated that in September, 1942, six patients with diphtheria were not allowed to enter hospital. Do you know the person who refused this permission for admission into hospital and the reason?

A. I have ^{already} ~~also~~ stated that permission was refused by

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref:		Ins			
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES							
WO 235 / 1012 PT1							
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.							

CROSS-EXAMINATION OF P.W. NO. 1 - LT-COL J.N.B. CRAWFORD (Cont'd).

the interpreter at North Point Camp, Mr Kochi. The reason I do not know.

Q. Yesterday you also stated that on September 27, these six patients were transferred to Shamshuipo, but before this date do you know whether all other diphtheria patients were entered into hospital?

A. Before the 25th, all diphtheria patients in North Point Camp were sent to Bowen Road Hospital.

Q. What was the percentage of the Canadian prisoners included in the working parties, that is, the total working party strength?

A. I cannot tell you exactly but we were sending out at one time from North Point Camp 400 Canadians on working parties and the Camp strength at that time was about 1,300-1,400, something like that. I am not sure of the exact figure.

Q. Was there a difference in rations given to the workers and the non-workers, that is, was there a difference in quantity?

A. As far as I know, the difference in rations was made by the POW themselves. We did give working parties extra rations when they came in. We gave them more to eat.

Q. You stated yesterday that one of the reasons why there was a decrease in the number of patients was that the patients were becoming used to the food. Does that mean they became used to rice or to Japanese food?

A. That is an opinion which I have formed myself. It is concurred in by many of the other medical officers in Camp. We believe that after some months or years on rice diet, a European does learn to get more good out of it.

Q. From the medical view-point, if a European diet is changed to a Japanese diet, what effect would this have on a person?

A. It depends on the quantity of Japanese diet which he is given. If he has enough, he does very well. If he has not enough, he will either die or if he survives, within some months or years he learns to live on a much lower level.

Q. There was a statement to the effect that there were many flies in the Camp. Were the flies bred in the Camp or came from ~~the~~ somewhere outside the Camp?

A. In North Point Camp, the Camp to which that statement was made particularly, flies bred on the refuse dump to the west of the camp, on the horse-lines to the south of the camp and on the dead bodies east of the camp.

Q. Were any steps taken to do away with these flies. Was there any plan offered by the Japanese to help do away with the flies?

A. Permission was asked and obtained from the Japanese -- an action initiated by the POW -- to send parties out of Camp to clean out the horse-lines and to bury the dead on the beach.

Q. Was there a plan by the Japanese to the effect that any prisoner who caught many flies would be given cigarettes in return as a reward?

A. There was such a plan in operation, but it had nothing to do with the Japanese. The officer-POW bought cigarettes with their own money and offered prizes to the men in the Camp.

Q. Yesterday, you testified that the windows were bricked up. Do you know why these windows were bricked up?

A. Because there was not sufficient other materials with which to fill the spaces and it was very cold. We had to have

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' material.

CROSS-EXAMINATION OF P.W. NO. 1 - LT-COL J.M.B. CRAWFORD (Cont'd).

some sort of shelter.

Q. Yesterday, you also stated that on one occasion when you went around on ~~an~~ an inspection tour with the accused Saito and asked for permission to have the barbed wire round one of the drains lifted so that the drain could be cleaned, the accused Saito told you not to tell senior officers about this request. What does this refer to. What was the meaning of this request?

A. My statement was that I was not to make suggestions to my seniors, not that I was not to tell senior officers this. I was not to suggest things to my senior officer.

President: Did you understand by that that Saito was referring to himself?

Lt-Col Crawford: I understood that Saito was referring to himself as my senior officer.

Q. Could you give the approximate time when the Dutch officer, Heidermoper, asked you for treatment?

A. No, I can only fix the date within very wide limits. I do not know the hour. I should think in the afternoon, but I am not certain of that.

Mr Fujita: That concludes my cross-examination, Sir.

RE-EXAMINATION BY THE PROSECUTING OFFICER.

Q. With regard to the masks that have been spoken of. What effect did these have in the prevention of disease?

A. I know that these masks are very popular among the Japanese for the prevention of the spread of infection. In our own experience and accepted by European epidemiologists, the use of such masks is quite useless.

QUESTIONS BY THE COURT.

Q. These masks which were issued by the Japanese. Were they used at all in Camp?

A. Yes, they were. We were punished if we did not use them.

Q. Did you notice any effect on the number of cases in addition or otherwise after the masks were issued?

A. No, it made no difference whatsoever in the incidence of death ~~cases~~. ~~etc~~

Q. You told the Court just now that permission was sought and obtained from the Japanese to go out of Camp to clear up the fly-breeding areas. To whom was the request submitted and who gave the permission?

A. The Camp Commandant, Lt Wada.

Q. As far as you know, did the accused Saito have anything to do with that decision?

A. I know nothing about that, Sir.

Q. Had complaints been made to Saito about these fly-breeding areas?

A. No, I think not. Only to Wada, the Camp Commandant.

Q. With regard to the refuse dump, was that still being used?

A. No, it was cleaned up by Chinese labourers in the course of the summer.

Q. You told the Court that the reason why windows in these

1		2		Ref.:	WO 235 / 1012 PT1	THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	1	2
cms								

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

QUESTIONS BY THE COURT OF P.W.NO.1 - LT-COL J. CRAWFORD (Cont'd).

barrack huts were bricked up was on account of the cold. Was that done after you became prisoner-of-war?

A. Yes.

Q. Was it done at your request?

A. It was done by ourselves as a method of desperation. There was a good deal of rubble lying about the camp, the materials was to hand and it was used. It was the only material that was at hand that we could use.

Q. You told the Court that later on ~~the~~ proper repairs were made to the windows and doors of these huts?

A. Yes.

Q. At whose instigation was this done?

A. I don't know. I believe it was done at the instigation of Mr Zindel, the Red Cross representative here but I have no authority really for saying that.

Q. You answered a question by Mr Fujita as to the effect of a switch over from European food to Japanese food. Could you amplify that a bit more and tell the Court what you ~~know~~ noticed to be the immediate effects of the switch over?

A. The immediate effects of the switch over and the diet which we received was first, very much less of weight. On the average it amounted to something between 15 to 20 per cent of the body weight of the individual over the whole Canadian force. That was followed by the development of swelling ~~in~~ in some individuals, numbness in certain areas of the body in some individuals and finally by development of a very painful neuritis which developed eventually in some cases in paralyses.

Q. In your opinion as a medical officer, was this effect due to the switch over or to the fact that the switch over ~~was~~ was to a diet insufficient in quantity, apart from the change in material?

A. It is my opinion, Sir, that the factor in the development of these diseases was the insufficiency of the diet rather than the fact that it was a Japanese type of diet. I think had we had a greater supply of roughly the same types of food-stuffs that these conditions would not have arisen.

Q. Would you consider the diet was fairly well balanced here, apart from the actual shortage?

A. No, Sir. On the contrary, I think it was a very badly balanced diet. I have already suggested that the protein requirements of an individual is one gramme per kilogramme of body weight; that means roughly 70 grammes of proteins for a European per day. Our usual issue of fish which was not all proteins was something under 30 grammes and only a limited part of that ~~a~~ edible. Our diet was very low in protein and very low in ~~fat~~. The energy value of our diet was based largely on starches, rice and vegetables.

Q. Would it perhaps be fair to say that the shortage of diet was due to a shortage of food not altogether ~~with~~ ^{under the} control of the Japanese prison staff?

A. That, Sir, I have no idea what the supply of food we might have received was.

Q. You told the Court yesterday that the Japanese authorities required certain quantities of men to go on working parties. Do you know who fixed these quotas?

A. No, I do not know who fixed the quotas.

1		2		1		2	
cme		Ref:		1		lms	
		WO 235/1012 PT1					

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.

QUESTIONS BY THE COURT OF P.W. NO. 1 - LT-COL J. CRAWFORD (Cont'd).

Q. You pointed out the interpreter Tsutada as one of the accused you recognized. Can you tell the Court between what periods Tsutada was at the camps where you were?

A. I first saw Tsutada when we arrived in Shamshuipo in September, 1942. He remained there for the balance of 1942 and I believe for the greater part of 1943. I am not quite clear as to when I no longer saw him but I believe it was in the fall of 1943.

Q. You referred to the striking of Lt Heiderkoper by the interpreter Tsutada. Was any other action taken against Heiderkoper in connection with this wireless being discovered?

A. No, no further action was taken.

Q. You identified the first accused, Col Tokunaga. At what times did you see him and as far as you know what were his functions in connection with POW?

A. The first time I can remember Col Tokunaga clearly was in August, 1942. I had heard his name mentioned before that as being a very high ranking officer in charge of POW Camps. I continued to see him at fairly frequent intervals until August, 1945. He was in charge of all POW camps in this area.

Q. Did he come to inspect the camps at Shamshuipo and at North Point?

A. Yes, he made inspections at intervals of two to three months during the internment.

Q. And on these occasions did you have a chance to inform him about conditions and make complaints to him?

A. No, Sir, no such opportunity was ever given.

Q. To come back to Tsutada for a moment. Apart from that assault on Lt Heiderkoper, do you know yourself of any other occasion when Tsutada struck or beat prisoners?

A. I am very hazy about one other situation in which Tsutada beat a Winnipeg Grenadier by the name of Ballingall.

Q. You don't remember the details?

A. No, sir, I am very foggy about the details of that case.

Q. Can you tell the Court what was Tsutada's general attitude towards the prisoners?

A. His overt actions as regards POW ^{were} ~~was~~ not too bad. He did not as a rule resort to violence the way some of the others did. We were always more concerned about Tsutada than we were with the other interpreters because we felt he spoke English much more fluently than the others and we considered him to be a very dangerous man who might over-hear our conversations and that sort of thing.

Q. Did he interfere unduly with the work in the camp or was he obstructive?

A. No, Sir.

Q. Was any complaint ever made to Saito about the diet being unbalanced and requests being made for some improvement in it?

A. The first official request of this nature was made in August, 1942, through Col Home, the senior Canadian officer. It was made to the Japanese authorities generally. I cannot say it was made directly to Saito. Repeated requests were made all during the period of internment ~~for~~ to various people, usually to the people in charge of rations in the Japanese Army. On one occasion, Major Ashton-Rose, the senior British medical officer, in the camp, told me that he had complained to Saito about the ~~tax~~

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref.		Ins			
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES							
WO 235/1012 PT1							
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' material.							

EXHIBITS BY THE COURT OF P.M. NO.1 - 11-001 J. SHAMSHUPO (Con'td).

low protein content of our diet and that Saito had agreed that it was deficient in protein and had stated that he would endeavour to improve it.

Q. Can you tell the Court from your knowledge whether the accused Saito was in control of all matters concerned with health and sanitation of prisoners and whether he was the person to have the last word in these matters?

A. I cannot answer that question. We knew that he was the medical officer in charge of POW camps but what ^{his} relation to the other Japanese officers in the Army ~~was~~ ^{all} I did not know.

Q. You told the Court about the number of men who were sent out to working parties from North Point camp. Could you tell the Court what the number of men was that were sent out from Shamsuipo Camp?

A. At the same period, Sir?

Q. No, after you went to Shamsuipo.

A. Working parties of about 400 Canadians alone continued to go out of Shamsuipo Camp from our arrival in September, 1942, until the middle of December, 1942; then the working parties suddenly ceased altogether and did not resume until sometime in February, 1943. During that time, the first Canadian draft had left for Japan. Working parties began then in the early part of 1943 but never again were the parties as large nor was the work quite as strenuous as it had been in 1942.

Q. During this first period then to which you have referred between the time that you got to Shamsuipo and when the first Canadian draft left, approximately how many Canadian troops were there in Shamsuipo?

A. There was approximately 1,400 Canadian troops in Shamsuipo of which roughly 500 were sick in the hospital and a very large number were sick in quarters.

Q. Would it be correct to say then, that although you had more sick in Shamsuipo camp than you had had at North Point camp, that the working parties did not decrease in numbers?

A. They did not decrease appreciably until they ceased altogether in the middle of December.

(Continued on Page 42).

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref:		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES		1	
				WO 235/1012 PT1		line	
						2	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.

QUESTIONS BY THE COURT OF P.W. NO. 1 - LT-COL J.N.B. CRAWFORD
(cont.):

Q. Were protests made by you or by any other medical officers as to sending unfit men to work?

A. Yes, Sir, protests were made by me and by many other officers in camp.

Q. And to whom were these protests made?

A. These protests were made to the camp commandant.

Q. Were such protests ever made to the accused Saito?

A. I cannot remember any occasion on which formal protests were made to Saito.

Q. You told the Court also of the number of latrine buckets that were issued to you for the hospital by the Japanese. Were representations made that this number was highly insufficient?

A. Yes, Sir, repeatedly requests were made for additional buckets to the Japanese officer in charge of supplies in camp, at that time a sergeant.

Q. In view of his position as medical officer in charge of camps, did you ever request the Accused Saito's help in getting additional latrine buckets?

A. No, Sir.

Q. Could you tell the Court, Col Crawford, what was the result from the health point of view of the unfit POW who were sent out to work?

A. That is a very complicated question to answer, Sir. Very frequently we would send men out to work after he had been sick for a long time as a sort of test cure. We did not know whether he could stand up to it or not, if he could we would want him to do it because it would relieve general labour situation in camp. Many times we saw such men go out on work parties and break down under working conditions and then they would be re-admitted into hospital for a further period. Generally speaking, it is quite safe to say that working conditions had a very deleterious effect upon the health of the POW.

Q. Would it be right to say that there were cases in which men were sent out and came back very seriously ill or came back in a state of collapse? Were there such cases?

A. That was not a serious condition among Canadians. It did happen - I know of one case - affecting a British soldier or a volunteer in which the man was found dead from exhaustion in the morning when they went to wake him for work party.

Q. You told the Court that some of the POW were employed in gardening and farming and you have also stated certain products were sent in and used in camp. Could you state roughly what proportion of this stuff was allowed to go into camp?

A. There were several gardening projects, one at Taipo in the spring of 1945. The gardening project out there in which Canadian troops were used but none of its products ever came into camp. There was also some digging done for a garden in Happy Valley. If any produce resulted from that none of that ever came into camp. There was a garden that was run in the camp itself, and that was run not by working party prisoners but by the half-sick in camp. Officers did a great deal of work in that garden from choice. The bulk of produce from that garden came to

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref.:		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES		1	
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.		WO 235/1012 PT1				1	
						2	

QUESTIONS BY THE COURT OF P.W. NO. 1 - LT-COL J.N.B. CRAWFORD
(cont.):

A(cont.): POW, some of it might have gone to the Japanese authorities, but that amount was not significant. In total the garden benefitted us to the extent of a maximum of 27 calories per day.

Q. Who supplied tools and seeds for this garden?

A. I know that some seeds were bought by money that the officers provided, some seeds were provided through Red Cross sources and I believe that finally some seeds were provided from Japanese sources.

Q. Did you ever have a canteen, either in Shamshuipo or in North Point?

A. We had what was called a canteen, Sir. It came in once a week or once every two weeks. The trouble was there was never anything very much to buy.

President: Mr Fujita, arising out the questions which the Court has asked witness, do you wish to ask any further questions?

Mr Fujita: I wish to question witness about how diphtheria is spread?

Lt-Col Crawford: Diphtheria is caused by a specific germ. This germ grows in the human body on certain open surfaces or on certain mucous surfaces such as the lining of the throat. The germ itself is about 7,000th of a millimeter in length. It is spread from person to person by food, such as contamination of milk or other food by people contaminating food, and also by infection through coughing or speaking to other people. In view of the relative sizes of the germ causing diphtheria and the holes in a gauze mask, the gauze mask will not prevent the spread of diphtheria.

President: Arising out of your answer to Mr Fujita's question, were these masks impregnated or soaked in any kind of chemical or disinfectant?

Lt-Col Crawford: No, Sir. They were simply double or triple or quadruple cotton masks.

Q. Is it true that there is an immunisation serum as well as serum given when the disease shows itself?

A. A preparation known as Toxoid or Anatoxin Ramon given to well subjects, usually children, will develop immunity against diphtheria.

Q. Was any attempt made to get such serum from the Japanese?

A. No. That would be quite useless in the presence of an epidemic.

President: Have you any further questions, Mr Fujita?

Mr Fujita: No.

President: Have you any questions to ask, Major Puddicombe?

Major Puddicombe: What would be the comparable duty of a British medical officer situated in a corresponding position in a POW camp to Saito?

President: I don't think that question is very relevant.

Major Puddicombe: The Court has asked, what representations were made to Saito in regard to latrine buckets. Well, now, what I would like to know is, in the event of the position,

1		2		Ref:		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
cms						WO 235 / 1012 PT 1	
						1	
						ins	
						2	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.

-44-

QUESTIONS BY THE COURT OF P.W. NO. 1 - LT-COL CRAWFORD (cont.):

Major Puddicombe (cont.): being ^{consequently} opposite would a British medical officer wait until he was told that that condition was such as it was, or would it be his duty to inspect the camp himself?

Lt-Col Crawford: Am I to answer the question, Sir?
President: Yes, please.

Lt-Col Crawford: I would like to tell you, Sir, the position in which I found myself from the months of May 1940 to October 1941. At that time I was serving in Jamaica and was medical officer in charge of an internment camp which contained German and Italian POW. It was my duty at that time to make inspections of the camp every day. We had 13 medical officers, German and Italian medical officers, in the camp. They did the sick parades every day. The sanitary inspection made of the camp every day I did myself. Following a sick parade I saw any cases that had been put aside for me to see by the prisoners medical officers, and made complete rounds of the hospital every day. That was in addition to other duties.

President: Arising from that, on how many occasions in a month or in a week, did accused Saito inspect the camp, either in North Point or Shamshuipo?

Lt-Col Crawford: He made one inspection at North Point camp - only one - and he inspected the Shamshuipo camp at irregular intervals, perhaps once every three months or something like that.

Q. On those occasions did you ever put aside special cases of interest or urgency for him to see?

A. We never knew in advance when these inspections were going to be, Sir.

President: Any further questions, Mr Fujita?

Mr Fujita: In your testimony just now you said that accused Saito only inspected the North Point camp once, and that he inspected the Shamshuipo camp only once every three months. Does that mean that those were the occasions that you saw the accused inspect the camp? Does that mean that these were the occasions only ~~that~~ when the accused inspected the camp?

Lt-Col Crawford: These were the occasions on which I saw him myself.

Q. So that for all you know, there might have been occasions when he inspected the camp that you did not see him?

A. There might be.

Q. When the accused Saito made these inspections did he ask you to go round with him?

A. No, Sir, he did not. He was accompanied on most occasions by Major Ashton-Rose, the senior British medical officer.

President: Any further questions, Mr Fujita?

Mr Fujita: No, Sir.

President: Any other questions, Major Puddicombe?

Major Puddicombe: No, Sir.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	
Ref:	
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

-45-

CONCLUSION OF TESTIMONY OF P.W. NO. 1 - LT-COL J.N.B. CRAWFORD:

That ended the testimony of P.W. No.1, Lt-Col J.N.B. Crawford.

President: I think, Mr Fujita, that you had an application to make to the Court in respect of an adjournment?

Mr Fujita: I have not made my preparations yet and also the case is very complicated, also there are many notes to be translated, therefore I would like the case adjourned for four weeks to make my preparations.

President: Mr Fujita, I think four weeks is no reasonable length of time. On the other hand, as the Court has another case ready to start early next week - the case against Kyoda, captain of the Lisbon Maru - the Court will at any rate grant an adjournment until such time as the case of the Lisbon Maru is finished. We can see, then, how far you have got on with your case. I think that should give you at least 10 days and possibly a fortnight. I am granting this adjournment until such time as the Lisbon Maru case is finished, subject to your right to make a further application for adjournment if you wish to do so, through your advisory officer.

President: The Court is adjourned sine die.

ADJOURNMENT

The Court adjourned sine die at 1146 hours.

1		2		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
cms		Ref:		WO 235 /1012 PT1	
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.					
1		1		ins	
2		2			

NO 5 WAR CRIMES COURT

FOURTH DAY'S proceedings of the trial of Col TOKUNAGA ISAO, Capt. SAITO SHUNKICHI, Lieut. TANAKA HITOSHI, Interpreter TSUTADA and Sgt. HARADAJOTARO, of the Imperial Japanese Army.

(Held at Jardine Matheson's East Point Godown on Saturday, November 30, 1946).

1000 hours.

The Court re-assemble, pursuant to adjournment, sine die, on October 19, 1946. Present - same Members and President RCL

Mrs L. MARRICKS RCL

The shorthand writer, is sworn.

Defence mentions HASEGAWA who will assist in defence, *for Captain Saito* RCL

PROSECUTOR: I have here a statement for each member of the Court. This statement is a list of all the witnesses and affidavits, in the order in which they would appear. Today we have two witnesses, Sgt R. ITO *RCL* and Capt. F.V. COLLINSON *RCL*

RCL 2ND WITNESS FOR PROSECUTION - Sgt R. ITO *having been duly sworn* RCL

Q. What is your name?

A. My name is ROY ITO.

Q. What is your rank?

A. Sergeant.

Q. What is your Corps?

A. Canadian Intelligence Corps.

Q. What is your present employment?

A. I am presently employed as interpreter and translator with War Crimes Investigation Team, HONG KONG.

Q. Will you tell the Court briefly what your qualification as a translator is?

A. I attended the Japanese Language night school in Canada for 12 years and I also graduated from the Canadian Army Japanese Language School, Canada.

Q. Will you produce the document which you have in your hand, of which you have made a typewritten translation, and will you tell the Court what you have done in respect of this translation?

A. This Japanese version was handed to me by my Commanding Officer, Lieut BRETT. I made a translation of it and I checked it with GEORGE TONG, Court Interpreter for No. 7 War Crimes Court.

Q. Will you tell the Court if the translation is correct insofar as your knowledge of interpretation is concerned?

A. This is a translation on "DIPHTHERIA" and is correct as far as I know. It is a true copy of the original.

The Document is handed in to the Court.

President: The document described is headed 'TRANSLATION "DIPHTHERIA".'

Witness: The original document is there; I have it in my own notes as the Japanese Medical Report.

President: We will list it as the 'Japanese Medical Report in respect of Diphtheria' on the HONG KONG POW Camp.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235 / 1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	2

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives material.

-47-

The document is initialled by the President and is marked as Exhibit "T". The Japanese original of translation is initialled and marked as Exhibit "U".
both are attached to the proceedings. Rec

Court
 Rec

Witness may stand down.

3RD WITNESS FOR PROSECUTION - Capt. F.V. COLLINSON.

Rec 3rd witness for prosecution is sworn.

Q. What is your name.

A. FREDERICK VICTOR COLLINSON.

Q. What is your rank?

A. Captain, *investigator*, attached to No. 14 War Crimes Investigation team, HONG KONG.

Q. What is your employment?

A. I am investigator for War Crimes Unit, HONG KONG.

Q. Capt COLLINSON, will you produce an affidavit signed by Col KERIN?

A. The document which I hold in my hand is an affidavit made by Col F.C.A. KERIN. Col. KERIN, to the best of my knowledge, is now in SINGAPORE.

President: By whom is this affidavit signed?

Witness: Signed by Col KERIN.

President: Are you familiar with his signature?

Witness: Yes, I am familiar with his signature.

President: Are you going to read this affidavit?

Prosecutor: It is proposed to tender all affidavits, this morning if possible, and have them read later as there are so many of them.

President: As this affidavit authenticates other documents I think this one should be read now.

Capt COLLINSON reads the affidavit signed by Col. KERIN, and hands it to the Court.

This document is initialled by the President and listed as "V".
marked Rec and attached to the proceedings Rec

Prosecutor: Will you produce the affidavit of Major J.A.G. REID.

Witness: The document I now hold in my hand is an affidavit made by JOHN ANTHONY GIBSON REID, major in the Royal Canadian Army Medical Corps, sworn before me in the City of OTTAWA in the Province of Ontario, Canada, the 4th day of March 1946.

To the best of my knowledge and belief Major REID is not in HONG KONG.

There are three copies of this affidavit; one is in possession of Defence Officer, one with Prosecuting Officer and one with ALFSEA.

President: This document is handed in, initialled by the Court, and is marked "W" *and is attached to the proceedings Rec*

Prosecutor: Will you now produce the second affidavit by the same officer?

Witness: The document I hold in my hand is an affidavit by Capt. J.A.G. REID, R.C.A.M.C., sworn on the 10th day of December 1945 in the City of Toronto. To the best of my knowledge and belief Capt REID is not in HONG KONG.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' material.

-48-

This document is initialled, handed in and marked as "X", and attached to the preceding *Rec*

Prosecutor: Now produce the affidavit of Major JAMES DOUGLAS ALLAN GRAY.

Witness: The document in my hand is an affidavit by Major JAMES DOUGLAS ALLAN GRAY of the Royal Army Medical Corps, sworn at 6 Spring Gardens, London, on the 13th of February 1946.

President: Are there two affidavits? One appears to be only extracts?

Witness: There are two affidavits from the same man. One from Capt REID, of which four copies are handed in and the other affidavit deals with a number of subjects which do not have anything to do with the case.

Prosecutor: The practice is to produce copies of extracts together with the original document so that the Court may be satisfied that the extracts are the same and pertain to the case.

Witness: In this case the extracts used are marked "R" in the original.

Attached to the affidavit of Major Gray is a further affidavit relating to photographic plates, which will be handed in later.

President: This affidavit is handed in, initialled, and marked "Y" and attached to the preceding *Rec*

Prosecutor: Will you now produce the affidavit of Major-General MALTBY, MC, together with copy of letter dated 4th February 1942 addressed to The Colonel, Commanding all POW Camps, HONGKONG.

Witness: The document I hold in my hand is an affidavit by Major-General CHRISTOPHER MICHAEL MALTBY, MC, Officer Commanding British Troops in China, sworn at 6 Spring Gardens, London, on the 16th day of November 1945. To the best of my knowledge and belief Maj-Gen. MALTBY is not in HONGKONG.

Also a second document, which is copy of a letter written by Maj-Gen MALTBY, dated 4th February 1942. This is addressed to The Colonel, Commanding All POW Camps, HONGKONG.

President: How did these two documents come into your hands?

Witness: The first document was forwarded from CANADA; the second was found in the War Crimes Office files. The original, however, was missing. Every effort was made to trace the original but it cannot be located.

President: What is there to show that Major-General MALTBY wrote this letter on the 4th of February?

Witness: I could not swear to that document myself.

President: Is it referred to in any other affidavit, or in Gen MALTBY'S affidavit.

Witness: It is mentioned in a general way, but no specific mention is made of this letter.

President: The affidavit of Major General MALTBY is handed in, initialled, and marked "Z". Copy of the letter found will be signed by *initialled by the President Rec*

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235 / 1012 PT 1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

marked R11

~~will be signed by the President and listed as "A1".~~
~~and attached to the proceedings R11~~

Prosecutor: Will you now produce the affidavit of Lt Col PRICE.

Witness: The document in my hand is an affidavit by Lt-Col JOHN HERBERT PRICE, sworn in the City of QUEBEC on the 28th day of December 1945. To the best of my knowledge and belief Lt-Col PRICE is not in HONGKONG.

President: This document is handed in, signed by the President ~~and listed as "B(1)"~~ *and attached to the proceedings R11*

Prosecutor: Will you now produce the affidavit of Major F.T. ATKINSON.

Witness: The document I hold in my hand is an affidavit by Major F.T. ATKINSON, Royal Rifles of Canada, C.A., sworn before a Justice of Peace, Quebec, on the 1st December 1945. To the best of my knowledge and belief Major ATKINSON is not in HONGKONG.

President: This document is handed in to the Court, initialled by the President ~~and marked "C(1)"~~ *and attached to the proceedings R11*

Prosecutor: Will you now produce the affidavit of Lieut. J.D. McCARTHY.

Witness: The document I hold in my hand is an affidavit made by Lieut JAMES DORMER McCARTHY, Winnipeg Grenadiers, C.A., sworn in the City of Winnipeg in the Province of Manitoba, on the 4th December 1945. To the best of my knowledge and belief Lt McCARTHY is not in HONGKONG.

President: The affidavit of Lieut J.D. McCARTHY is handed up, initialled by the President ~~and marked "D(1)"~~ *and attached to the proceedings R11*

Prosecutor: Will you now produce the affidavit of Cpl J. PORTER.

Witness: The document I hold in my hand is an affidavit made by Cpl. JACK PORTER, Royal Rifles of Canada, C.A., sworn before a Notary Public in and for the Province of Ontario on the 13th December 1945. To the best of my knowledge and belief Cpl PORTER is not in HONG KONG.

President: The affidavit by Cpl. PORTER is handed to the Court, initialled by the President ~~and marked "E(1)"~~ *and attached to the proceedings R11*

Prosecutor: Will you now produce two affidavits by Pte A. HENKEL. The spelling of this signature varies a bit. This may be ~~mentioned~~ *noticed* by the Court.

Witness: The documents I now hold in my hand are affidavits sworn by No. H6953 Pte ALEX HENKEL, Winnipeg Grenadiers, C.A. sworn in Winnipeg on the 7th January 1946; the second document by H6935 Pte ALEXANDER HINKEL, sworn in the City of Winnipeg on the 11th July 1946. To the best of my knowledge and belief Pte HENKEL is not in HONGKONG.

President: The affidavit by Pte A. HENKEL is handed in to the Court, initialled by the President and marked "F(1)". The second document is handed in, initialled by the Court and marked "G(1)".
Both are attached to the proceedings.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

-50-

Prosecutor: Will you now produce two affidavits of Major S.R. KERR.

Witness: The two documents I hold in my hand are affidavits made by Major STANLEY ROBERT KERR. The first one was sworn at Spring Gardens, London, on 15th February 1946; the second one sworn in Bangkok, Siam, on the 27th July 1946. To the best of my knowledge and belief Major KERR is not in HONGKONG.

President: The first affidavit by Major KERR is handed in, initialled by the President, and marked "H(1)" *and attached to the proceedings. R.L.*

Prosecutor: The second affidavit is by Lt Col KERR. I think it should be explained to Defence that the Christian names are the same and it is possible that this officer had been promoted in the interim from Major to Lt Col. His residence is also the same in both affidavits.

President: The second affidavit by this officer, now Lt.Col. KERR, is handed in to the Court, initialled by the President and listed as "J(1)" *and attached to the proceedings. R.L.*

Prosecutor: Will you now produce the affidavit by Mr.S.N. POTOULOFF.

Witness: The document I now hold in my hand is an affidavit by Mr. SVIATOSLAV NICHOLAS POTOULOFF, sworn before me on 22nd March 1946. To the best of my knowledge and belief Mr. POTOULOFF is not in HONGKONG.

President: Do you recognize that as the signature of Mr. POTOULOFF.

Witness: Yes.

President: The affidavit of Mr. POTOULOFF is handed in, initialled by the President, and listed as "K(1)" *and attached to the proceedings. R.L.*

Prosecutor: Will you now produce the affidavit of Capt. ARTHUR STRAHAN.

Witness: The document which I now hold in my hand is an affidavit by Capt ARTHUR STRAHAN, sworn in Edinburgh on the 1st July 1946. Attached to this document is a second affidavit which refers to the photographic plates attached. To the best of my knowledge and belief Capt STRAHAN is not in HONGKONG.

President: The affidavit of Capt Arthur STRAHAN is handed in to the Court, signed by the President, and marked "L(1)". *and attached to the proceedings. R.L.*

Prosecutor: Will you now produce the affidavit by Major ASHTON-ROSE, together with the attached certificate.

Witness: The document which I now hold in my hand is an unsworn statement made by Major ASHTON-ROSE, of the Indian Medical Service, dated 29th August 1945. The original forms parts of a number of such unsworn, but signed statements, and I have left them all attached together. Attached to the copy of this document is a copy of a certificate, the original of which will be handed in later, as I have not got it at the moment.

President: The statement and certificate of Major ASHTON-ROSE are handed in to the Court. The first statement is listed as "M(1)" and copy of certificate as "N(1)", *and attached to the proceedings. R.L.* when the original certificate is produced that will be listed also as "N(1)" and attached to one of these exhibits. The original manuscript of Major ASHTON-ROSE will also be marked "M(1)" and attached to the typewritten copy listed as "M(1)."

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

-51-

Prosecutor: Will you now produce the affidavit of Surgeon Lt. JACKSON.

Witness: The document I now hold in my hand is the affidavit made by Surgeon-Lieut. ~~ANTHONY~~ CHARLES ANTHONY JAC KSON, R.N.V.R., sworn in London on the 13th February 1946. To the best of my knowledge and belief Lt JAC KSON is not in HONGKONG.

President: The affidavit by Surgeon Lt. JACKSON is handed in to the Court, initialled by the President and marked "O(1)" *and attached to the proceedings R/L*

Prosecutor: Will you now produce the affidavit of Lt.Col. SHAC KLETON.

Witness: The affidavit I now hold in my hand is the document made by Lt.Col. CEDRIC OVERTON SHACKLETON, R.A.M.C., sworn in London on the 11th of December 1945. Extracts only from this affidavit are being used. The extracts are marked in red on the original. To the best of my knowledge and belief Lt.Col. Shackleton is not in HONGKONG.

President: The affidavit of Lt.Col. SHAC KLETON is handed in, initialled by the President, and marked "P(1)" *and attached to the proceedings R/L*

Prosecutor: Will you now produce two affidavits of Capt. WELLWOOD and with the first affidavit produce Exhibit "A" referred to therein.

Witness: The two documents I hold in my hand are affidavits sworn by IDA LORENA WELLWOOD, Captain in the Royal Canadian Army Medical Corps. Both sworn in Ottawa on the 26th March 1946. The photostatic copy referred to in the first affidavit is marked as Exhibit "A" and attached to the original.

President: The affidavit of Capt WELLWOOD together with the photostatic summary referred to, and marked as exhibit "A" is handed in to the Court, initialled by the President and marked as "Q(1)" *and attached to the proceedings R/L*
The second affidavit by Capt WELLWOOD is handed in to the Court, initialled by the President and marked as "R(1)" *and attached to the proceedings R/L*

Prosecutor: Will you now produce the affidavit of Lt.Col. ROBERTSON.

Witness: The document I now hold in my hand is an affidavit by Lt Col. HAMISH GORDON GRANT ROBERTSON, R.A.M.C. sworn at Spring Gardens, London, on the 21st of March 1946. To the best of my knowledge and belief Lt.Col. ROBERTSON is now in HONGKONG.

President: The affidavit of Lt.Col. ROBERTSON is handed in to the Court, initialled by the president, and marked as "S(1)" *and attached to the proceedings R/L*

Prosecutor: Will you now produce the affidavit of Capt BARD.

Witness: The document I now hold in my hand is an affidavit by Captain SOLOMON BARD, Hong Kong Volunteer Defence Corps. This is more in the nature of record of facts taken in London by Major McDONALD of the Canadian Infantry Corps. It is not dated. It will be in order for this statement to be accepted as evidence produced in Court, taken by a Court reporter who has been sworn.

1		2	
cms		Ref:	
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES			
WO 235 / 1012 PT1			
1		2	
ms		ms	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' material.

President: This deposition by Capt. BARD is handed in to the Court, signed by the President, and listed as "T(1)" and attached to the proceedings *ack*

Prosecutor: Will you now hand in the affidavit of Lt Col BOWIE.

Witness: The document I now hold in my hand is the affidavit of Lt. Col. DONALD CAMERON BOWIE, R.A.M.C., sworn in London on the 23rd February 1946. In this statement he refers to a second document which is an unsworn statement, dated the 8th September 1945, made in HONGKONG. The unsworn statement is also made by Lt Col. BOWIE. To the best of my knowledge and belief Lt Col. BOWIE is not in HONGKONG.

President: The affidavit by Lt Col. BOWIE, unsworn statement and appendices thereto are handed in to the Court, initialled by the President and listed together as "U(1)", and attached to the proceedings *ack*

Prosecutor: Will you now produce an affidavit by Capt EVANS.

Witness: The document in my hand is an affidavit sworn by Dr. BENJAMIN IFOR EVANS, M.R.C.S., L.R.C.P. (late of the Indian Medical Service), sworn in Wales on the 28th of June 1946. To the best of my knowledge and belief Dr. Evans is not in HONGKONG. Attached is the usual supplementary affidavit identifying photographs.

President: The affidavit by Dr. Evans is handed to the Court, initialled by the President and marked "V(1)" and attached to the proceedings *ack*

Prosecutor: Will you now produce a solemn declaration made by the Accused, Dr. SAITO, dated 27th April 1946.

Witness: The document I hold in my hand is a solemn declaration made by Dr SAITO SHUNKICHI, made before me, on the 27th of April 1946 in HONGKONG.

President: Was this statement made before you?

Witness: Yes, this was made before me.

President: The statement of Dr. SAITO SHUNKICHI, one of the Accused, is handed to the Court, initialled by the President and marked "W(1)", and attached to the proceedings *ack*

~~President:~~

Prosecutor: Will you now produce the affidavit of The Revd. E.J. GREEN.

Witness: The documents which I now hold in my hand are the affidavits of the Rev d. ERIC JOHN GREEN, M.M., C.P.(R.C), sworn in London on the 11th December 1945. To the best of my knowledge and belief Revd. GREEN is not in HONGKONG.

President: The first document by the Revd. E.J. GREEN is initialled by the President and marked "X(1)". The second affidavit by the Rev d. GREEN is initialled by the President and marked "Y(1)", both are attached to the proceedings *ack*

Prosecutor: Now produce the affidavit of Cpl. HURLEY.

Witness: The document which I hold in my hand is the affidavit of Cpl JAMES JACOB HURLEY. Fitter, Royal Canadian Army Service Corps, sworn at Halifax on the 12th of February 1946. Attached to the affidavit is a photographic exhibit mentioned in the affidavit. To the best of my knowledge and belief Cpl HURLEY is not in HONGKONG.

President: The affidavit of Cpl HURLEY is handed in to the Court, initialled by the President, and marked as "Z(1)". and attached to the proceedings *ack*

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cm	Ref:
WO 235 / 1012 PT1	
1	2
line	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' material.

-53-

- Prosecutor: Will you now produce extracts of an affidavit by Rfm. A.K. PIHFER.
- Witness: The document which I hold in my hand is the affidavit of Rfm. A.K. PIHFER, sworn at the city of Toronto on the 13th December 1945. Extracts only are being used in the affidavit and are marked in red on the original. To the best of my knowledge and belief Rfm. Pihfer is not in HONCKONG.
- President: The affidavit of Rfm. PIHFER is handed in to the Court, initialled by the President and marked as "A(2)" *and attached to the proceedings R.C.*
- Prosecutor: Will you now produce three affidavits by WILLIAM JAMES HOME, formerly Lt.Col. now Brigadier.
- Witness: The documents which I hold in my hand are three affidavits sworn by Lt Col, now Brigadier, WILLIAM JAMES HOME, Canadian Army; the first is sworn in Quebec on the 12th December 1945; attached are two plates and a certified true copy of a Japanese report given to the senior officer at Shamshuipo C camp in 1945. The certified true copy is signed by, now Brigadier, Lt.Col. HOME.
- President: The affidavit of Lt Col HOME together with original documents and annexures referred to in the affidavit are handed in to the Court, initialled by the President, and marked as "B(2)", *and attached to the proceedings R.C.*
- Witness: The second affidavit made by Brigadier HOME, sworn in Montreal on the 4th April 1946, and the third document sworn by Brigadier HOME in Montreal on the 23rd August 1946. To the best of my knowledge and belief Brigadier HOME is not in HONGKONG.
- President: The second and third documents by Brigadier HOME are handed in to the Court and initialled by the President. The second is marked "C(2)" and the third "D(2)", *both are attached to the proceedings R.C.*
- Prosecutor: Now produce the summary of examination of S.F. NEWTON, L/C 1st Middlesex Regt.
- Witness: The document in my hand is an affidavit of L/Cpl S.F. NEWTON, 1st Middlesex Regt., sworn in Hong Kong on the 25th of April 1946 before Lieut. J.B. Fallace. Neither L/Cpl Newton nor Lieut Fallace are in Hong Kong at present. *(I do not recognize the signature of Lieut Fallace) R.C.*
- President: The statement of L/C pl NEWTON is handed in to the Court, initialled by the President and marked "E(2)", *and attached to the proceedings R.C.*
- Prosecutor: Will you now produce a similar statement by Pte GREEN.
- Witness: The statement I hold in my hand is a sworn statement made by Pte H. GREEN, 1st Middlesex Regt. sworn before Lt Fallace on the 25th of April 1946. Neither Pte Green nor Lt Fallace are at present in HONG KONG.
- President: The sworn statement of Pte GREEN is handed in to the Court, initialled by the President, and marked "F(2)". *and attached to the proceedings R.C.*
- Prosecutor: Will you now produce the statement of Rfm. TIBBETTS.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
line	line

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

-54-

Witness: The document which I now hold in my hand is a sworn statement made by Rfn C. TIBBETTS, Royal Rifles of Canada, sworn in Montreal on the 29th January 1946. To the best of my knowledge and belief Rfn. TIBBETTS is not in Hong Kong.

President: The sworn statement of Rfn TIBBETTS is handed in to the Court, initialled by the President and marked "G(2)", and attached to the proceedings REX.

Prosecutor: Will you now produce the affidavit of Sgt KERR.

Witness: The document in my hand is a deposition sworn by Sgt. R.A. KERR, a member of His Majesty's Canadian Army, sworn in the city of Winnipeg on the 20th November 1946. To the best of my knowledge and belief Sgt KERR is not in Hong Kong.

President: The sworn deposition by Sgt. KERR is handed in to the Court, initialled by the President and marked "H(2)", and attached to the proceedings REX.

Prosecutor: Will you now produce an affidavit by Sgt.A.T. BALLINGALL.

Witness: The document in my hand is an affidavit made by Sgt ARTHUR THOMAS BALLINGALL, Winnipeg Grenadiers, sworn at Toronto on the 11th February 1946. To the best of my knowledge and belief Sgt BALLINGALL is not in HONGKONG.

President: The affidavit of Sgt BALLINGALL is handed in to the Court, initialled by the President and marked "I(2)", and attached to the proceedings REX.

Prosecutor: Will you now produce the sworn deposition by Pte DUKELOW.

Witness: The document in my hand is a sworn deposition by Pte DUKELOW, sworn in the city of Winnipeg on the 6th of February 1946. Extracts only are being used. To the best of my knowledge and belief, Pte DUKELOW is not in Hong Kong.

President: The sworn deposition by Pte DUKELOW is handed in to the Court, initialled by the President, and marked "J(2)", and attached to the proceedings REX.

Prosecutor: Will you now produce two documents by Capt. BARNETT.

Witness: The documents I now hold in my hand are two affidavits made by Captain, now Major, BERNARD RAYNER BARNETT, of the Hong Kong Volunteer Defence Corps; the first affidavit was sworn before me on the 23rd of March 1946 in Hong Kong and the second affidavit was sworn in Buckinghamshire, England, on the 17th July 1946. To the best of my knowledge and belief Major BARNETT is not in Hong Kong.

President: The affidavits of Major BARNETT are handed in to the Court and initialled by the President. The first is listed as "K(2)" and the second is listed as "L(2)", both are attached to the proceedings REX.

Prosecutor: It is presumed that Major BARNETT returns to the Colony before the case closes he can be used as a live witness.

President: This is dismissed. In provided notice is given and sufficient notice is given to BARNETT.

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref:		1		Ins	
				WO 235/1012 PT1			
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES							
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' material.							

-55-

Prosecutor: Will you now produce the affidavit by Major MacAULAY.

Witness: The document in my hand is an affidavit made by Major M.T. GORDON MacAULAY, sworn at Quebec on the 18th December 1945. Attached to the affidavit it are two photographic exhibits marked "A" and "B". To the best of my knowledge and belief Major MacAULAY is not in Hong Kong.

President: The affidavit of Major MacAULAY, together with the Exhibits attached to same, are handed in to the Court, initialled by the President and marked "T(2)", and attached to the proceedings R12

Prosecutor: Will you now produce the unsworn statement of P.O. Van Vaanterberg.

Witness: The document in my hand is the original & signed but unsworn statement made by P.O. Van Vaanterberg of the Royal Netherlands Navy. To the best of my knowledge and belief P.O. Van Vaanterberg is not in Hong Kong.

President: The original statement and typewritten copy of P.O. Van Vaanterberg are handed in to the Court, signed by the President and marked "O(2)", and attached to the proceedings R11.

Prosecutor: Will you now produce the pencilled unsworn statement by Lt Comdr. SOLWAY.

Witness: This is the original of an unsworn statement written in pencil by Lt Comdr. E.R. SOLWAY, R.N. It bears no date. To the best of my knowledge and belief Lt Comdr SOLWAY is not in HONGKONG.

President: The original statement of Lt Comdr SOLWAY, and the typewritten copy thereof, are handed in to the Court, initialled by the President and marked "P(2)" and attached to the proceedings R12

Prosecutor: Now produce the record of interrogation of Anne Willem HUIDEKOPER.

Witness: The statement I hold is a record of interrogation of 2nd Lt. Anne Willem HUIDEKOPER of R.N.V. sworn at Bussum on the 13th August 1946, with an interpretation by P.A. van Lijst.

President: The record of interrogation by Anne Willem HUIDEKOPER, together with the attachments thereto, are handed in to the Court, initialled by the President and marked "Q(2)" and attached to the proceedings R12

Prosecutor: Now produce a statement of the Accused, TSUTADA ITSUO, dated 26th July 1946.

Witness: The document in my hand is a sworn statement made by TSUTADA ITSUO, sworn before me, Capt F.V. COLLIER, Hong Kong, at Murray Barracks on the 26th of July 1946.

President: The statement on oath by the Accused TSUTADA ITSUO is handed in to the Court, initialled by the President and marked "T(2)" and attached to the proceedings R12

Prosecutor: Will you now produce the statement on oath of the Accused, HARADA.

Witness: The document in my hand is a sworn statement made

1		2	
cms		Ref:	
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES		WO 235/1012 PT1	
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.		1	
		ins	
		2	

-56-

JOTARO HARADA, before me, Capt. F. W. SCHLITZ, at Stanley Court
on the 2nd of August 1946.

President: The statement on oath by the Accused JOTARO HARADA
is handed in to the Court, initialled by the President
~~and listed as "S(2)"~~ and attached to the proceedings ~~list~~
~~minutes~~

President: I have mentioned a Mikovits told by two of the
Accused, ISUJATA and HARADA; indicate to the Court
if you can identify these two men.

Witness: The Accused in the back row, as he faces me, is
Interpreter ISUJATA, from whom I took the statement
in Murray Barracks. The Accused next to him is
Sgt JOTARO HARADA, from whom I took the statement,
now in possession of the Court.

At 1225 the Court adjourned until 1400 hours.

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref:		1		ins	
		WO 235/1012 PT1					

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.

30 November, 1946. P.M.

At 1400 hrs. the Court re-assemble pursuant to adjournment; present the same Members as at adjournment.

4 WITNESS FOR THE PROSECUTION - Dr. A.M. RODRIGUES

On being sworn, is examined by the Prosecutor.

Q. Will you tell the Court your full name?

A. Alberto Maria RODRIGUES.

Q. What is your profession?

A. Medical practitioner.

Q. What is your age?

A. 35.

Q. What is your present residence?

A. I live in HONG KONG, BOWEN Road.

Q. Will you tell the Court your medical degrees and experience?

A. I am qualified from the HONG KONG University, a Bachelor of Medicine and Bachelor of Surgery. I qualified in 1934 and did 2 years post-graduate study in ENGLAND and PORTUGAL. Then I returned to private practice in HONG KONG, which practice I held till the outbreak of war.

Q. Would you look at these men in the dock and tell the Court if you know any of them?

A. I recognize the Colonel sitting in front, Col. TOKUNAGA pointed out to us as Commander-in-Chief of the camp. I recognize Dr. SAITO as the Japanese Medical Officer in charge of our camp.

Q. Who is this Dr. SAITO?

A. The one on the extreme right, facing me. The one on the extreme left I recognize as an interpreter in camp, Mr. TSUTADA. He was not there all the time; I cannot quite remember now, but he left sometime I think it was in 1944. The other two in the centre I recognize as having been in the officers' camp. I was not there so I am not certain of their names.

Q. I understand Doctor that you were in the HONG KONG Volunteer Field Ambulance and that you were taken prisoner of war in December 1941.

A. That is correct.

Q. Where were you interned while a POW?

A. SHAM SHUI PO.

Q. How long were you there?

A. I was there for the duration, from 1941 30 December to 1945 August.

Q. Who was Dr. SAITO?

A. He was the Japanese Medical Officer attached to the camp.

Q. Can you tell the Court what superior medical officer SAITO had to acknowledge?

A. As far as I knew there were not any superior medical officers in HONG KONG.

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref.		ins		ins	
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES							
WO 235 / 1012 PT1							
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.							

- Q. What was your occupation in the camp? Will you give a brief outline of the history of your internment?
- A. When we first went into camp we had some early cases of dysentery. I was delegated to form a dysentery hospital. I ran the hospital for a year, 1942. After 1942 the incidence of dysentery had gone down considerably so the system of medical treatment was changed and each Medical Officer in camp was allotted in the region of 200 men to look after. We were then responsible for these 200 men for out-patients work, hospitalization and after-cure.
- Q. To start then with your first occupation there, will you tell the Court first what the sanitary conditions were in SHAM SHUI PO during 1942? I am speaking of the camp as a whole, not the hospital.
- A. The general sanitation in camp was such that it left much to be desired. We were very much over-crowded, the flies were abundant, drains were not running well, and apart from the sanitation in camp, the surrounding area was all debris which was just the right medium for the growth of flies.
- Q. Can you tell the Court why there were flies?
- A. Principally because of these conditions in the surrounding district which was of demolished houses where people surrounding the place went and used as a feeding house, as a latrine and various other things. The flies collected and, being in close proximity with camp, they naturally flew into the camp, and that is how it spread.
- Q. Will you tell us the history of your dysentery hospital?
- A. With the flies around camp the spread of dysentery was very rapid and we had in the hospital I think at one time 180 cases for a month. Reckoning on 3,000 men that was a fairly high incidence among a body of men who were, when they went into camp, fairly fit.
- Q. If you will revert to the hospital itself for a moment before proceeding with your description of the course of the disease, where was the hospital that you set up?
- A. I set up hospital in the first instance at the corner of JUBILEE Building.
- Q. How long were you there?
- A. I was only there for 2 weeks.
- Q. How long were you in the JUBILEE Building?
- A. I think I was there only about 2 weeks.
- Q. Then where did you go?
- A. We moved to the old Sergeants' Mess.
- Q. Why did you move to the old Sergeants' Mess?
- A. Because the number of cases that came in did not allow us to continue. The place was just 2 flats with 4 rooms.
- Q. What were the conditions like in the Sergeants' Mess?
- A. When we first went in there, there were hardly any windows to be found. The roof was leaking in many parts. There was only one room we could use as a latrine.
- Q. How about your latrine facilities? What latrine facilities outside the flats when you moved in did you have?
- A. We had to have recourse to a trench latrine outside the hospital. That was not very satisfactory for 2 points, one it had to be built at least 20 yards from the hospital and therefore accessible only to the walking patients, of which there were not many, and the other, that in getting away from the hospital we got near the perimeter, to the fence.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref.
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives leaflet.

- Q. What receptacles did you use in the latrines?
 A. We had to have recourse to anything we could use. With 180 patients we had I think at the most about 10 bed pans.
- Q. What sort of condition were the bed pans in?
 A. I should think about 25% of them were leaky.
- Q. Will you describe the conditions in this hospital from the point of view of patients, when you first opened?
 A. The patients were laid on iron beds side by side. They were all allowed two blankets per man and some were fortunate in having Army "biscuits", a mattress in 3 separate parts. You put the 3 side by side and they served as a mattress. But there were not many with "biscuits" so the majority were lying on one blanket on the steel and covering themselves with one. If it was warm they used two blankets underneath.
- Q. How did this affect a man with dysentery?
 A. Far from comfortable; in fact I think it was very detrimental to his chances of recovery.
- Q. Where did the patients sleep?
 A. In the dormitories in that Sergeants' Mess.
- Q. Where were the dormitories?
 A. They slept as in an ordinary Army dormitory, side by side facing each other. There was quite often an overflow, then these had to sleep in the porch outside. This porch had a cover to it but it was exposed all round the 3 sides. In the season when you had these violent HONG KONG squalls the patients left on the outside got invariably drenched with rain.
- Q. What was done about these hospital conditions in regard to the Japanese?
 A. We applied often enough for more bed pans for complete windowing of the premises, mattresses and more medical supplies which I have mentioned.
- Q. What about space, what applications did you make about space?
 A. In camp we had none; it was over-crowded already. But bad cases were sometimes allowed to be moved out of camp to St. TERESA's Hospital.
- Q. Do you mean that there was no available hospital space in camp, a space which could be used for a hospital in camp?
 A. There may have been one or two open houses but they would have been much worse because most of them had their roofs blown off.
- Q. What was the condition of the JUBILEE Building?
 A. JUBILEE Building was in fairly good condition.
- Q. Do you know who or how many were in it during 1942?
 A. I could not give you figures for JUBILEE Building. There were so many shifts in camp one gets a bit confused.
- Q. I am not making myself plain. I want to know if JUBILEE Building was occupied or not.
 A. In 1942 it was occupied; it was used for diptheria patients.
- Q. When you made these applications to the Japanese, who did you make them to?
 A. I made it direct to the O/C Hospital who in turn made it to the Japanese Sergeant or Dr. SAITO when he came to camp.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cm	Ref.
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
line	line

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.

- Q. Just before we leave the hospital: you say you had 180 patients there. What was the normal accommodation of that space for a hospital?
- A. I think at the most it would hold about forty comfortably.
- Q. Will you tell the Court what medical supplies you received and how frequently you received them?
- A. Applications for medical supplies were made in the form of indents monthly, but what we received in reply was seldom the amount asked. It was always less. Often the indent may have been sent in but there would be some delay in receiving it. We sometimes passed a week or two without anything in the way of treatment. The drug supply was limited to castor oil, mag. sulph which is Epsom salts and the Japanese equivalent of our sulfa pyridine tablets which they called trianon. Then again trianon was supplied in two or three tubes of 20. Then these tablets were of .2 grs. which is half the normal sulfa pyridine one which is .5. So 2 tubes of 20 tablets, making 40 tablets, gave one .8 grs., just about the ideal amount for one bad patient of dysentery.
- Q. I want to be sure of this. They gave you that quantity which was sufficient for one patient? Is that correct?
- A. Yes, the 40 tablets would be sufficient for one patient.
- Q. How long would you be before you got another issue of it?
- A. We put in indents every month.
- Q. I understand you got 40 every month?
- A. Yes.
- Q. Did you have access to any other medicine beside the castor oil and the trianon?
- A. From the Japanese for dysentery - no.
- Q. What other drugs could you have used effectively in the treatment of dysentery?
- A. Apart from sulfa pyridine and salts there would not be any other one we would like to use, but we had in camp some powder which was left behind by our troops, and it was called "kieselguhr".
- Q. You could have used then sulfa pyridine and Epsom salts?
- A. In sufficient quantity, yes.
- Q. Had the men been furnished with Epsom salts in sufficient quantity, what would the effect have been on the dysentery in camp?
- A. I should figure round about 70 percent of cases' recovery as compared to what we had in the way of deaths, and the remaining 30 percent, the bad cases, would certainly have to have sulfa pyridine. I think I should clear that point. Mag. sulph. treatment is the treatment of purging and ridding the intestines of the bacillus of dysentery. That naturally leads to a certain amount of dehydration and in a camp like ours, where the men were already in many cases suffering from malnutrition, that was rather the drastic. Sulfa pyridine, on the other hand, did not cause any purgation; it is bacteriostatic substance. It does not allow the germs to multiply and it shortens the disease considerably.
- MONITOR: The Interpreter is having difficulty with these medical terms.
- Q. What is mag.sulph?
- A. Epsom salts. It carries with it some dehydration.

1		2		1		2	
cme		Ref:				ins	
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES				WO 235 / 1012 PT1			
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.							

COURT: Could we put it this way? That the treatment of Epsom salts aimed at driving the waste products out, but in doing so caused the water in the body to dry up which had a bad effect on men who were already suffering from malnutrition?

A: Yes, that has put it very well.

COURT: Would it be right to say that sulfa pyridine did not have that effect?

A. No, it did not.

COURT: Would it be right to carry it a step further and say that if you had had enough sulfa pyridine you would have preferred to use that treatment rather than the Epsom salts?

A. Yes.

Q. Some statements ago you said that 70 percent would have been affected by the Epsom salts and the other 30 percent by sulfa pyridine. Would you clarify that? 70 percent of whom? All the patients or certain of the patients?

A. No, I think 70 percent of those who died as a result of dysentery.

Q. 70 percent of those who died would have been affected by the treatment of Epsom salts and the other 30 by sulfa pyridine? When you say "affected" what do you mean?

A. There was a chance that they might have recovered.

Q. You have mentioned the castor oil, the trianon and the powder. What else did you use?

A. The only thing left was morphia.

Q. How did you use that?

A. We used it when the patient was so bad he would not have recovered anyway, and the morphia was just to allay the pain.

Q. What is the importance of diet in the treatment of dysentery?

A. I think diet is of major importance in dysentery as in any intestinal disease.

Q. What diet were you furnished with in your hospital?

A. We had rice principally, some vegetables and flour which we tried to make into a sort of doughnut; but a lot of people would not touch the thing, it was much too hard because the supply of oil was not very liberal.

Q. How did this diet compare with the prescribed diet in cases of dysentery? Would it be bad or indifferent?

A. The rice was all right, as I said, because you could make it into a broken-rice soup which acted like a starch or albumen drink. There was nothing else of any use; the vegetables were of rather poor quality. One had no beef to make broth for the patients and there was not enough sugar supplied.

Q. Can you tell the Court what notice the Japanese had of these conditions?

A. They were quite well aware of the cases because we had case sheets made out. These sheets were supplied by the Japanese authorities and filled up by the M.Os in charge and returned to the Japanese authorities when the patient was discharged or otherwise.

COURT: Did you say when the patient was discharged or died?

A. Yes, that is right.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref.:
WO 235 / 1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

- Q. What inspection was made of the hospital building itself and by whom?
- A. As far as I recall I think the dysentery hospital was inspected once only, by the Camp Commandant. He went round with the Interpreter and he remarked then on the inadequacy of ventilation, light and accommodation.
- COURT: Who do you mean by the "Camp Commandant"?
- A. I think then Lieut. or Capt. SAKAINO. I think that was his name. I think the Interpreter with him was called WATANABE. That is as far as he got because no windows were added nor were lights supplied.
- Q. You said very serious cases were moved to St. TERESA's Hospital. How were the arrangements made to move serious cases?
- A. There was a Sergeant or Corporal, I am not sure, who was attached as a liaison man between the hospital and the Japanese medical officer. We informed him if there were cases we thought were deteriorating, to advise the Medical Officer to move the men.
- Q. What was the response to these requests?
- A. Cases were left waiting for very often 3 or 4 days before they were eventually moved.
- Q. How did you account for this long delay?
- A. The reply we got was quite often that there was not any truck available to move them, or that there was not enough space in St. TERESA's to receive them. Or they just said, "tomorrow".
- Q. To your knowledge Doctor, who made the final decision in respect to whether or not a patient was moved?
- A. I think Dr. SAITO had the final word.
- Q. Why do you think he had the final word?
- A. I recall one case when one of my patients in dysentery developed a tenderness in the abdomen which I diagnosed as appendicitis. He was first seen I think in the afternoon and I asked for his removal. Nothing had been done by 7 o'clock in the evening. The senior Medical Officer sent word again to the camp office repeating the request and at 10 o'clock Dr. SAITO drove up in a saloon car, examined the patient, agreed with my diagnosis and took the patient in his car.
- Q. Do I understand that as immediate?
- A. At 10 o'clock.
- Q. He made his examination and immediately put him in the car?
- A. Yes.
- Q. Will you tell the Court of any other instances where removal was required and what happened about it?
- A. I recall one case when at the height of the dysentery epidemic I had about 7 bad cases which required removal and they were removed I think only about 3 days after my first application. They were in such a bad way that the Medical Sergeant insisted on my going with them in the bus. (They used a KOWLOON motor bus, big things, for transporting). I went with them to St. TERESA's and 3 died that night, 3 others within the next 4 days. Only 1 recovered of the 7.
- Q. What was the relation between the deaths and the 3 days' delay?
- A. Of the 6 I should think 4 would have had a pretty good chance of recovering.

1		2	
cms		Ref.	
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES			
WO 235/1012 PT1			
1		2	
ins		ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

- Q. They would have had a good chance of recovery under what conditions?
- A. They would have had probably a saline intra-venous treatment. If they had had attention 3 days earlier they might have had sufficient fluids to replace their loss.
- Q. What was the accommodation in your hospital in regard to furnishings generally, light and other equipment and so on?
- A. We had no lights in the dysentery hospital till towards the end of the year 1942. The orderly on duty went about with a candle. There was another candle left in the latrine.
- Q. Who was your Quarter Master?
- A. Lieut. TAYLOR, R.A.M.C.
- Q. What did he do about this accommodation?
- A. He made various applications to Dr. SAITO and so did the Senior Medical Officer for lights and some equipment. Also as Quarter Master RAMC, he had been the Quarter Master for Field Ambulance and he knew where all the depots were. He made a application to the Japanese Medical Officer offering to go under escort to these depots to gather what was necessary.
- COURT: Who was this Japanese Medical Officer?
- A. Dr. SAITO.
- Q. He made application through Dr. SAITO. What became of the application?
- A. It was never allowed.
- Q. I would like verification of these documents. ^{A set of documents are handed to the witness.} (I am sorry there will not be 6 copies of this; it is the original). Would you tell the Court what that series of documents is?
- A. These are case sheets of all cases who died in hospital, made out by the Medical Officer who attended them. It outlines the treatment and course of the disease and sometimes gives the findings of post-mortems.
- Q. Does that form show the diagnosis of the disease?
- A. In some, yes; in some, no. Originally I signed all my cases, as should have been, as bacillary dysentery, but later on Dr. SAITO gave an order that none was to be put as dysentery unless they had been diagnosed by the microscope.
- Q. What was the reason for that order?
- A. I took it that increasing dysentery was probably upsetting HQ and I was told to put enteritis or colitis in-stead of dysentery.
- Q. Have you any particular instances you want to show, Doctor?
- A. Yes there is one. Here is a case in point. It is marked down - "stool" 3 crosses, "mucous" 3 crosses. That is obviously dysentery and we put "enteritis". This concerns a Pte. MERRY who died in September 1942. There is another case here, also September of Gnr. BARKER. On 27 August he shows blood and mucous, 2 plusses for blood 3 plusses mucous, temperature 105 Farenheit. He shows on 28 August as having 11 stools during the night, and on 29th as 26 during the night. This is marked as "enteritis and septicaemia".
- Q. Who kept these records?
- A. They were sent in to HQ.
- Q. Who made the actual entries there?
- A. I made them myself.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref.:
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	ins

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives leaflet.

Q. The ones referred to are made by you?
A. Only by me.

Q. To cut this a little short, if there were other instances I think it is not necessary to have the Doctor go into each one individually. There are copies and we produce them for your consideration. Shall I say - were there other instances of interference or directed diagnosis?
A. There are many more which were marked out.

COURT: These case sheets you have there, are they case sheets of dysentery only or for all diseases?
A. These are for all diseases; I am picking those I signed only.

PROSECUTOR: One other Doctor appears, a Dr. ^{RCL} ^{COOMBS} KEONS who has also flagged a number of cases there.

COURT: Do you recognize the signature of other medical officers in addition to yours?
A. I recognize them all; I know who they are.

COURT: Do you wish to put this in now or after you have called all your other medical witnesses?
PROSECUTOR: I will put it in now and refer to it again.

Prosecutor hands Exhibit of case sheets in the POW Hospitals to the Court. It is marked "T 2", and attached to the proceedings. *Initialed by the President RCL*

Q. Can you give any indication of the number of deaths from dysentery?
A. It is not easy because the cases that were sent to St. TERESA's, I was not aware of the cases, all that died there. In camp I should think in the region of 20 deaths.

Q. Before leaving the subject of dysentery epidemic, is there any further information you wish to give the Court?
A. The only thing I like to point out is although there were 20 deaths perhaps in the camp of dysentery, many of the cases that were discharged eventually were in such a state of health that with later food deficiency their conditions of beri-beri and pellagra and other vitamin deficiency diseases were aggravated.

Q. During 1942 were there to your knowledge any other epidemic diseases in your camp?
A. There was a diphtheria epidemic.

Q. Can you say briefly how serious that epidemic was, and about when it occurred?
A. Around July I should think it occurred. It was serious enough. To give one an idea there were so many deaths that it was thought best to give up sounding of the "Last Post" which we had had up to that time for all deaths in camp.

Q. Why was that given up?
A. Because it had such a depressing effect on the rest of the camp.

Q. Will you tell the Court briefly what representations were made to the Japanese about this epidemic?
A. When the epidemic first started, representations were made to Dr. SAITO for serum. We were told there was not any available.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.

- Q. What was your knowledge of his attitude in regard to the epidemic?
- A. I think he was callously indifferent to the epidemic as a whole.
- Q. On what do you base that?
- A. Because he did not produce the serum when we asked them, saying he could not get any - but we managed to get some through one of the Japanese who we gave money to and who bought the serum and brought it into camp under cover.
- Q. You were in practice before the war here, Doctor, what was the supply of this serum, ordinarily existent in HONG KONG?
- A. Just before the war there was an adequate supply of serum in HONG KONG. We had various drug houses, British and American firms and also serum made locally and in SHANGHAI. The serum we received under cover was of the SHANGHAI variety.
- Q. Respecting surgical instruments, have you any information to give the Court of their supply?
- A. We had very little supply of surgical instruments, using only what was brought in by individuals earlier on. Cases for operation were sent down to the Indian Hospital MATACHONG Hospital. Later, when this facility was stopped we erected an operation room in SHAM SHUI PO using instruments that Major ASHTON ~~RHODES~~ had brought with him from the Indian Hospital. ~~ROSE REC~~
- Q. Were these instruments adequate in numbers?
- A. The actual instruments were ~~not~~ sufficient for the purpose because we did not have many major cases, but there was a sad shortage of operating gloves. We had eventually to operate without them, although we had applied to Dr. SAITO for them. When we heard of the surrender of the Japanese then the officer in charge of the officers' camp, Col. FIELD demanded of the Japanese, I think directly to Col. TOKUNAGA, all letters still outstanding and all Red Cross supplies which they held back. We got one case of surgical material which included many gloves.
- Q. From your observation, what was the general attitude of the accused SAITO?
- A. As I said before, he was callously indifferent.
- Q. What was his attitude towards you as a medical officer, or your colleagues in the POW camp?
- A. He was often very arrogant and one instance he slapped the senior medical officer, Major ROBERTSON in full view of all the Other Ranks. He also slapped a Canadian senior medical officer and his staff.
- Q. Beside this, how did he co-operate with you?
- A. There was very little co-operation in my opinion.
- Q. Can you tell the Court from your own experience anything of the conditions of the working parties, their conditions of health and so on?
- A. It was only after 1942 that I had to deal with these working party men. We had to classify them "A" "B" or "C" and "C" were considered unfit for working parties. But quite often the numbers of "Cs" mounted to the instance where some "Cs" were forced to go, against medical advice.
- Q. As a medical officer, have you any knowledge of the conditions under which they worked?
- A. Not excepting hearsay.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref.
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	ins

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' material.

- Q. From whom did you hear this?
 A. From the men who returned from the work.
- Q. How did you hear from them?
 A. When they reported sick.
- Q. What was their report about conditions?
 A. This was chiefly in the case of tunneling. They all complained of fatigue and shortness of breath.
- Q. How did they relate this to the work in the tunnels?
 A. Because it was very close in the tunnels, a lot of dust.
- Q. What do you know about deficiency diseases? Can you give a brief outline of the effect they had or their incidence?
 A. I think practically every member of the camp had some form of deficiency disease, different only in the manifestation and extent.
- Q. Can you give any particular instances of the effect of deficiency diseases?
 A. The effects were various, starting with vision and blindness in some, ~~you had~~ skin lesions, sores on the mouth.
- Q. I am speaking of particular instances.
 A. I remember one case. A man in the Signal Corps, I think his name was TURNER, he was the worst case we had. I think he weighed normally about 140 lb. but he only weighed about 70 when he died.
- Q. Will you tell the Court your impression of the general policy of treatment of the POWs by the Accused?
 A. As a medical man I was very astonished at the attitude of Dr. SAITO. One expects a Doctor to treat patients irrespective of politics or race.
- Q. Aside from that, speaking of the administrative staff, what was your impression of their policy towards the POWs?
 A. I think a lot more could have been done for us.
- Q. From your observation, Doctor, can you give the Court any information on the treatment of Chinese civilians by the camp guards?
 A. That has to go quite far back because I think towards the middle of 1942 Chinese civilians were not allowed to approach the camp. But in 1942 I witnessed one case of a Chinese woman who was brought to the guard house which was situated to the left of the entrance to SHAM SHUI PO. She was made to kneel on the floor and her clothing was removed from her back and it was seen then that she was pregnant. They put the coat back on her back and poured cold water over her. I left immediately after.
- Q. One final question, Doctor. There were Canadian medical officers and British medical officers in camp. What were their relations?
 A. They were always very friendly.
- Q. Do you remember disagreements arising between the Canadians and the British medical officers?
 A. No.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235 /1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	ins

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

Q. Have you anything else to add now to your statement generally on the conditions in the camp? Anything you want to produce or refer to?

A. No.

CROSS-EXAMINATION. by MR FUJITA KC

Q. You said the working party was divided into A, B and C classes. Who divided the party into 3 classes?

A. I think you have got that wrong. It is not that the working party was divided into A, B and C - the men were divided into A, B and C classes and only "Cs" were not allowed to go to work.

Q. Who classified the men?

A. The Doctor in charge of the men.

Q. Was that officer a British officer?

A. Yes.

Q. Some people went to the work from among the "C" class. Who picked up the men from among the "C" class?

A. The NCO in charge of the group was ordered by the camp office to supply so many men for a working party.

Q. Is the NCO you speak of there an NCO of the British Army?

A. Yes, our own NCO.

Q. When diptheria cases took place, when was the first time when the requirements for serum were made to Dr. SAITO?

A. The exact time it was made, as far as the date is concerned I cannot say because I did not look after the diptheria patients. But I know that as soon as the cases occurred serum was asked for.

Q. You said when the POWs asked for serum against diptheria from Dr. SAITO the serum was not available. If you did not look after diptheria I think you did not know of it at all?

A. I knew very well because all the Doctors stayed in one room.

Q. Later diptheria serum was supplied by the Japanese side. Do you know this fact?

A. Yes, I knew that diptheria serum was later supplied when the epidemic was almost over.

Q. You said the serum was bought for the POW side through the hands of the Japanese. Who was the Japanese?

WITNESS: Should I answer that, Sir? If you think it is all right I will give you his name. I will write it down for you if you like.

COURT: I think the best thing to do will be if you will write the name down and let the Counsel for Defence as well as the Prosecutor see it and then hand it up to the Court. The name will not appear in the record.

Witness writes name on a slip of paper which is shown to both Defence and Prosecutor and then handed to the Court.

Q. How long is diptheria serum effective?

A. When it is made the date up to when it is effective is put on the box.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet

- Q. After it is made, how far do you think it is effective?
 A. After it is made I should think at least 4 years, but one is never given an indication when it is made. All it has is the expiry date, such a year. Even after the date of expiry is gone, there is still effectiveness to about 60 percent.
- Q. When you made requests for 7 dysentery cases to be hospitalized you said that they were made to wait 3 days on the ground that there was no truck available or there was no space in the hospital or "tomorrow" they would be hospitalized. You pointed out 3 reasons.
 A. The 3 reasons pointed out were admission in January, not for these 7 cases.
- Q. For these 7 cases what was the reason?
 A. No reason was given. We were just kept waiting for a reply.
- Q. You said 3 days were delayed. During that time did the POW side leave these patients untouched?
 A. No, we treated them as best we could.
- Q. Did the Japanese side give any explanation for that delay of 3 days?
 A. No, this was one of the times when they just said, "tomorrow".
- Q. Dr. SAITO had the last word to decide hospitalization cases? What do you base your knowledge of that on?
 A. From the case I mentioned where he came to see one of my cases late at night. He was satisfied that the operations were required for the patient and he put the patient in his car and drove away without consulting anybody else.
- Q. According to the system in the British Army who is responsible for the accommodation and supply in camp?
 A. A Quarter Master always is in charge of accommodation and supply. Are you referring to accommodation in general or hospital?
- Q. Accommodation in the camp.
- PROSECUTOR: I think we will have to understand what camp he means, an ordinary camp or a POW camp.
- DEFENCE: I mean a POW Camp.
- PROSECUTOR: Does he mean a POW camp in which there are British interned or a British camp in which there are enemy interned.
- DEFENCE: I mean a camp which is run by the British Army inside which are POWs interned, detained by the British.
- PROSECUTOR: In that case I object to this question because witness is not expected to know.
- COURT: You cannot object to that question. Whether witness is competent it is for him to say. ~~It will be a matter~~ for the Court to decide. You are not entitled to ~~Chas~~ ^{Chas} ~~Rec~~ object in cross-examination; he may be wanting to test the knowledge of the witness. ^{Counsel}
 REC

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref:		1		Ins	
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES							
WO 235/1012 PT1							
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives material.							

PROSECUTOR: Before witness is asked that question, he must be qualified as an expert. Until he is I think I have a right to object.

COURT: He is simply entitled to say whether he does or does not know. If he says he knows he can be asked to say how. If he says he does not know it is another matter.

PROSECUTOR: I would like to put an analogy to you, Sir. Supposing he is not a medical officer and is only a layman and a medical question is asked I think we have a right to object to that. I think that is an analogy on the present case.

COURT: I cannot agree with you there because although witness is in part a civilian, he is also to some extent a soldier and a matter of supply in any camp is a subject of which he may conceivably have some knowledge.

PROSECUTOR: The question is "Who is responsible?"

COURT: I do not think Defence Counsel asked him that question as an expert but as an ordinary person.

PROSECUTOR: I do not think any soldier can answer that: he has to have a particular knowledge of the subject that he is requested. You cannot ask a Private soldier what the offices of a Staff Captain are. He is incompetent to answer.

COURT: He would simply answer he did not know.

PROSECUTOR: That is presuming something and if he answers something different he is giving an incompetent answer which the Court should not hear.

COURT: That is a matter for the Court to decide.

DEFENCE: I am not insisting to be answered. If there is any objection I will gladly withdraw it.

COURT: You can withdraw the question. To be quite honest I do not think you would get any information that would be useful to you on that particular point.

DEFENCE: I withdraw my question.

Q. Referring to the working party again, how were the men who were to go to work decided in that morning when they went to work?

A. It is rather long and I will explain as briefly as possible. The night before the working party, numbers are sent to our camp office, to our liaison officer. The camp is divided into groups of men under one leader for various groups. This group leader gets from the camp office the number required for his group. Then he delegates his group for the next morning. If he had 50 men of which 20 were "A" and 5 "B" and the rest "C" and he is required to produce 40 men, he will have to pick on 15 "Cs". That is what he has to.

(No more questions)

COURT: Has Mr. HASEGAWA any questions?

A. No Sir.

Re-Examination Declined.

1		2		Ref.		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
cms						WO 235/1012 PT1	
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet							
1		2		Ins		2	

QUESTIONED BY THE COURT:

- Q. This St. TERESA's Hospital you referred to, by who was it run?
 A. By our men. Originally it was run by the Nuns who handed the hospital over, the French Nun Sisters with one Doctor who was one of the MALINO Fathers, I cannot remember his name. They were moved out towards the middle of the year and the hospital was taken over by our own people with the VAD nurses to run it. They ran it till the end of the year I think and then it was eventually shut down.
- Q. On whose orders was it shut down?
 A. By the Japanese authorities.
- Q. You do not know who?
 A. I could not say who.
- Q. You referred to an NCO who was used as liaison, was he a Japanese NCO?
 A. Yes.
- Q. Do you remember his name?
 A. I think it was DOYAMA.
- Q. You also spoke of the Indian Hospital. What hospital was that?
 A. It was down MATACHUNG where the Indian troops were stationed. They had an adjoining bit which they formed a hospital of.
- Q. You said later on you lost that facility. How did that happen?
 A. It happened a little after the LISBON MARU case. We used to go down every fortnight in ferries. In one of these visits we came back with a paper which held a description of this sinking and that naturally spread round the camp and when the Japanese got knowledge of it they stopped that facility.
- Q. Do you know who gave that order?
 A. No.
- Q. Did the Accused Col. TOKUNAGA or the Accused SAITO ever inspect your dysentery hospital?
 A. To my knowledge, no. There were several inspections of camp by the Red Cross delegate and some high ranking Japanese officials who passed through but they always gave the dysentery hospital a wide berth.
- Q. You have referred to an epidemic of diptheria. Can you give the Court any approximate idea of the number of deaths during that epidemic?
 A. I would not like to give the total number; it is too far off and I was never treating them.
- Q. You have referred to a man called TURNER who died from nutritional deficiency. Can you remember when he died and for how long he had been ill? Approximately.
 A. I am afraid I cannot remember when he died. The case comes back to my mind because he was a dysentery patient and after his attack of dysentery I transferred him to the General Hospital and subsequently went to the hospital on a visit to see some of the old patients and he was then dying. I had asked the people what he weighed. He died about 2 days after that.
- Q. You have no recollection how long it was after he was discharged from your section?
 A. 3 or 4 months from the start of illness, from the time he got to the other side and died. He was with me for some time, probably about a month and a half I should think, and after that he was transferred and he died in all about 2½ months after that.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235 / 1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

- Q. You have told the Court you recognize one of the men as TSUTADA an Interpreter. Do you know anything about him apart from the fact that he was an Interpreter?
- A. I do not remember anything I could say detrimental to him.
- Q. If you can remember anything good about him, let us hear it.
- A. I can. Actually he was quite a help to many of the people in camp, to myself in particular. He was the means of my communicating with my family outside the camp for a period I should think about 6 months and he was instrumental in bringing me ~~peace~~ ^{peace} at a time when that facility was lifted.
- Q. Apart from that, would there be anything you have to say?
- A. ~~Yes.~~ A few other occasions he was of help, and there were occasions generally when he was helpful?
- A. ~~Yes.~~ ^{Yes.}
- (No more questions).

Witness thanked the Court for having on a Saturday afternoon in order to accommodate him.

PROSECUTOR: I would like to get a witness named HALL. It will not be for some days I am afraid. I have given my friend the statement we have so far from him which indicates generally his line of testimony.

At 1600 hrs. the Court adjourn till 1000 hrs. on 3 December 1946.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref.:
WO 235 / 1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	ins

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.

NO 5 WAR CRIMES COURT

FIFTH DAY'S proceedings of the trial of Col TOKUNAGA ISAO, Capt SAITO SHUNKICHI, Lieut. TANAKA HITOSHI, Interpreter TSUTADA and Sgt HARADA JOTARO, of the Imperial Japanese Army.

(Held at Jardine Matheson's East Point Godown on Tuesday, December 3rd 1946).

The Court assembled at 1000 hours.

3RD WITNESS FOR PROSECUTION - Capt. F.V. COLLISON (Cont.)

Capt COLLISON will you remember that you are still bound by the oath which you took on Saturday.

Prosecutor: Will you produce the affidavit of Pte JOSEPH JOHN HANEL.

Witness: The document which I hold in my hand is an affidavit by Pte JOSEPH JOHN HANEL, of the Winnipeg Grenadiers, sworn in the city of Regina on the 8th of December 1945. To the best of my knowledge and belief Pte HANEL is not in HONG KONG.

President: Prosecution produces an affidavit of Pte JOSEPH JOHN HANEL, which is handed in to the Court, initialled by the President, marked "U(2)" and attached to the proceedings.

Prosecutor: Will you now produce an affidavit of Pte HALLQUIST.

Witness: The document which I hold in my hand is the affidavit of Pte ORVILLE NOLLEN HALLQUIST, of the Winnipeg Grenadiers, sworn in the city of Regina on the 12th day of February December 1945. To the best of my knowledge and belief HALLQUIST is not in HONGKONG.

President: The affidavit of Pte ORVILLE NOLLEN HALLQUIST is handed in to the Court, initialled by the President, marked "V(2)" and attached to the proceedings.

Prosecutor: Will you now produce the affidavit of Pte William HARDING.

Witness: The document which I hold in my hand is the affidavit of Pte WILLIAM HARDING, of Winnipeg Grenadiers, sworn in the City of Winnipeg on the 8th day of January 1946. To the best of my knowledge and belief Pte HARDING is not in HONGKONG.

President: The affidavit of Pte WILLIAM HARDING is produced to the Court, initialled by the President, marked "W(2)" and attached to the proceedings.

Prosecutor: Will you now produce the affidavit of Wm. Alfred SHAYLER.

Witness: The document which I hold in my hand is the affidavit of L/Cpl. WILLIAM ALFRED SHAYLER of the Winnipeg Grenadiers, sworn in the City of Vancouver on the 11th day of December 1945. To the best of my belief L/Cpl SHAYLER is not in HONGKONG at present.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet

-73-

President: The affidavit of L/Cpl WILLIAM ALFRED SHAYLER is handed in to the Court, initialled by the President, marked "X(2)" and attached to the proceedings.

Prosec utor: Will you now produce the affidavit of Lieut CAMPBELL.

Witness: The document which I hold in my hand is an affidavit sworn by Lieut. RAILTON ARTHUR HENRY CAMPBELL, sworn in the city of Winnipeg on the 16th day of March 1946. Lieut CAMPBELL, to the best of my belief is not in HONGKONG.

President: The affidavit of Lieut. R.A.M. CAMPBELL is handed in to the Court, initialled by the President, marked "Y(2)", and attached to the proceedings.

Prosecutor: Will you now produce the affidavit of Pte NICK BERZENSKI.

Witness: The document which I now hold in my hand is an affidavit by Pte NICK BERZENSKI of the Winnipeg Grenadiers, sworn in the City of Winnipeg on the 5th day of February 1946. Extracts only are being used from this affidavit. To the best of my belief Pte BERZENSKI is not in HONGKONG.

President: The affidavit of Pte BERZENSKI together with extracts from the affidavit are handed to the Court, initialled by the President, marked "Z(2)", and attached to the proceedings.

Prosecutor: Will you now produce the affidavit of Lt PARK.

Witness: The document which I now hold in my hand is an affidavit by Lieut. JOHN ELPHIN STONE PARK, of the Winnipeg Grenadiers, sworn in the City of Winnipeg on the 12th day of December 1945. To the best of my knowledge Lt PARK is not in HONG KONG.

President. The affidavit by J.E. PARK, is handed in to the Court, initialled by the President, marked "A(3)" and attached to the proceedings.

Prosecutor: Will you now produce an affidavit by SA S/Sgt. H.P. McNAUGHTON.

Witness: The document which I now hold in my hand is an affidavit by S/Sgt H.F. McNAUGHTON of the Winnipeg Grenadiers, sworn in the City of Winnipeg on the 5th day of February 1946. To the best of my knowledge S/Sgt. McNAUGHTON is not in HONGKONG.

President: The affidavit of S/Sgt H.P. McNAUGHTON is handed to the Court, initialled by the President, marked "B(3)" and attached to the proceedings.

Prosecutor: Will you now produce the affidavit of G.S.M. Frank
LOGAN.

Witness: The document which I now hold in my hand is an affidavit by Sgt/Maj C.S.M. FRANK LOGAN of the Winnipeg Grenadiers sworn in the City of Winnipeg on the 14th day of March 1946. Sgt/Maj LOGAN to the best of my belief is not in HONGKONG.

President: The affidavit of G.S.M. FRANK LOGAN is handed to the Court, initialled by the President, marked "C(3)" and attached to the proceedings.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES					
1	2			1	2
cms		Ref.:			
		WO 235 / 1012 PT1			
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed "Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet"					

-74-

Prosecutor: Will you now produce the affidavit of Albert KIROUAC.

Witness: The document which I now hold in my hand is an affidavit sworn by ALBERT KIROUAC, CSM, Royal Rifles of Canada, sworn at Quebec on the 25th of February 1946. To the best of my knowledge and belief S/Maj KIROUAC is not in HONGKONG.

President: The affidavit of CSM ALBERT KIROUAC is handed in to the Court, initialled by the President, marked "D(3)", and attached to the proceedings.

Prosecutor: Will you now produce the affidavit of Royce SWEET.

Witness: The document which I now hold in my hand is the affidavit of Rfn. ROYCE SWEET, Royal Rifles of Canada, sworn at Quebec on the 12th day of Feb. 1946. Extracts only are being used from this affidavit.

President: The affidavit of Rfn. ROYCE SWEET is handed in to the Court, initialled by the President, marked "E(3)" and attached to the proceedings.

Prosecutor: Will you now produce an affidavit by Sgt. W.J. HARLOW.

Witness: The document which I now hold in my hand is the affidavit of Sgt. W.J. HARLOW, Royal Rifles of Canada, sworn at Montreal on the 29th day of January 1946. To the best of my knowledge and belief Sgt HARLOW is not in HONGKONG.

President: The affidavit of Sgt W.J. HARLOW is handed to the Court, initialled by the President, marked "F(3)" and attached to the proceedings.

Prosecutor: Will you now produce the affidavit of Rfn. JAMES WALLACE ARCHIBALD.

Witness: The document which I now hold in my hand is the affidavit of Rfn. JAMES WALLACE ARCHIBALD, Royal Rifles of Canada, sworn at Sussex, Province of New Brunswick on the 6th day of February 1946. To the best of my knowledge and belief Rfn. JAMES ARCHIBALD is not in HONG KONG.

President: The affidavit of Rfn. J.W. ARCHIBALD is handed in to the Court, initialled by the President, marked "G(3)" and attached to the proceedings.

Prosecutor: Will you now produce the affidavit of Cpl. MURRAY.

Witness: The document which I now hold in my hand is the affidavit sworn by Cpl. JAMES THOMAS FREDERICK MURRAY of the Winnipeg Grenadiers, sworn in the City of Winnipeg, on the 24th of January 1946. To the best of my knowledge Cpl MURRAY is not in HONG KONG.

President: The affidavit of Cpl JAMES THOMAS FREDERICK MURRAY is handed in to the Court, initialled by the President, marked "H(3)" and attached to the proceedings.

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref.		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES		Ins	
		WO 235/1012 PT1					

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives Terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives material.

-75-

Prosecutor: Will you now produce the affidavit of Pte DAVID BAXTER.

Witness: The document which I now hold in my hand is the affidavit sworn by Pte DAVID BAXTER of the Winnipeg Grenadiers, sworn in the city of Winnipeg on the 13th of February 1946. To the best of my knowledge Pte BAXTER is not in HONG KONG.

President: The affidavit of Pte DAVID BAXTER is handed in to the Court, initialled by the President, marked "J(3)" and attached to the proceedings.

Prosecutor: Will you now produce the affidavit of Sgt RONALD JOHN ROUTLEDGE.

Witness: The document which I now hold in my hand is the affidavit sworn by Sgt RONALD JOHN ROUTLEDGE, Royal Canadian Corps of Signals, sworn in the City of Regina on the 15th December 1945. Extracts only are being used from this document. To the best of my knowledge Sgt ROUTLEDGE is not in HONG KONG.

President: The affidavit of Sgt RONALD JOHN ROUTLEDGE together with extracts pertaining thereto are handed in to the Court, initialled by the President, and marked "K(3)" and attached to the proceedings.

Prosecutor: Will you now produce the affidavit of Cpl. GEORGE CYRIL MEAGHER.

Witness: The document which I now hold in my hand is the affidavit of Cpl GEORGE CYRIL MEAGHER of the Winnipeg Grenadiers, sworn in the city of Winnipeg on the 24th day of January 1946. Attached to this document is a plan marked Exhibit "A" which is referred to in the said affidavit. To the best of my knowledge Cpl MEAGHER is not in Hong Kong.

President: The affidavit of Cpl GEORGE CYRIL MEAGHER together with the sketch referred to in the affidavit is handed in to the Court, initialled by the President, marked "L(3)" and attached to the proceedings.

Prosecutor: Will you now produce the affidavit of Pte WILLIAM STIRLING ROBERTSON.

Witness: The document which I now hold in my hand is the affidavit of Pte WILLIAM STIRLING ROBERTSON of the Winnipeg Grenadiers, sworn at Winnipeg on the 24th day of January 1946. Attached to this affidavit are two plans marked "A" and "B" to which reference is made in the affidavit. Pte William Stirling Robertson is not in Hong Kong at the moment.

President: The affidavit of Pte William Stirling Robertson, together with the sketch and the plans mentioned in the said affidavit are handed in to the Court, initialled by the President, marked "M(3)" and attached to the proceedings.

Prosecutor: Will you now produce the affidavit of Sgt. EDWIN RODRIGUES.

Witness: The document which I now hold in my hand is the affidavit of Sgt EDWIN RODRIGUES, sworn at Quebec on the 31st of January 1946. To the best of my knowledge Sgt RODRIGUES is not in Hong Kong.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	ins

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives material.

-75-

President: The affidavit of Sgt RODRIGUES is handed to the Court, initialled by the President, marked "N (3)" and attached to the proceedings.

Prosecutor: Will you now produce the affidavit of Pte Alexander Baraskiwich.

Witness: The document which I hold in my hand is the affidavit of Pte ALEXANDER BARASKIWICH of the Winnipeg Grenadiers, sworn in the city of Winnipeg on the 20th of February 1946. To the best of my knowledge and belief Pte BARASKIWICH is not in Hong Kong.

President: The affidavit of Pte Alexander Baraskiwich is handed to the Court, initialled by the President, marked "O(3)" and attached to the proceedings.

Prosecutor: Will you now produce the affidavit of Sgt G.E. PLUMBER.

Witness: The document which I hold in my hand is a record of evidence taken from Sgt G.E. PLUMBER of the Middlesex Regt., taken in London on the 15th day of March 1946. Attached to this record of evidence are three photographs marked "A", "B" and "C" respectively, to which reference is made in the said record. To the best of my knowledge and belief Sgt. PLUMBER is not in HONG KONG.

President: The affidavit of Sgt. G.E. PLUMBER together with the three photographs attached to same are handed to the Court, initialled by the President, marked "P(3)" and attached to the proceedings.

Prosecutor: Will you now produce the affidavit of P.O. Wm. Loch HARRINGTON.

Witness: The document which I hold in my hand is a record of evidence given by P.O. WILLIAM LOCH HARRINGTON, R.N., taken in London on the 21st day of May 1946. Attached to this document are three photographs marked "A", "B" and "C" respectively, which are referred to in the said record. P.O. Harrington, to the best of my belief, is not in Hong Kong.

President: The record of evidence of P.O. William Loch Harrington together with the three photographs referred to therein are handed to the Court, initialled by the President, marked "Q(3)" and attached to the proceedings.

Prosecutor: Will you now produce the affidavit of L/Cpl W.L. HILLS.

Witness: The document which I hold in my hand is a record of evidence given by L/Cpl W.L. HILLS, Middlesex Regiment. This evidence was given in London on the 20th day of May 1946. To the best of my knowledge L/Cpl HILLS is not in HONG KONG.

President: The record of evidence of L/Cpl HILLS is handed to the Court, initialled by the President, marked "R(3)" and attached to the proceedings.

Prosecutor: Will you now produce two statements of the Accused TANAKA HITOSHI; the first dated 5th July 1946 and the second dated 3rd April 1946.

Witness: The document in my hand is a statement made by the Accused, Lt. TANAKA HITOSHI, made before me, Capt. P.V. COLLINSON, on the 5th day of July 1946 at STANLEY GAOL.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

-78-

President: The statement made by the Accused TANAKA HITOSHI on the 5th of July 1946 is handed to the Court, initialled by the President, marked "S(3)" and attached to the Proceedings.

(only one copy has been handed in -- two more will be required).

Witness: The document in my hand is the statement made by Lt. TANAKA HITOSHI on the 3rd day of April 1946.

President: The statement by the Accused, Lt. TANAKA HITOSHI, dated 3rd April 1946, is handed to the Court, initialled by the President, marked "T(3)" and attached to the proceedings.

(Again two copies of this have been handed in -- one more is required).

Prosecutor: In the list "ORDER OF PRESENTATION - WITNESSES AND AFFIDAVITS", which was handed in on Saturday (30 November 1946), page 7, under Sixth and Seventh Charges, against TANAKA, Statements 74 and 75 -- this should also read 76 and 77.

Will you now produce the summary of examination of the Accused, Lt. TANAKA HITOSHI, dated 3rd March 1946.

Witness: The document which I now hold in my hand is the statement made by the Accused Lt. TANAKA HITOSHI on the 3rd of March 1946.

President: The statement made by the Accused, Lt. TANAKA HITOSHI, dated 3rd March 1946, is handed to the Court, initialled by the President, marked "U(3)" and attached to the proceedings.

(Original and one copy has been handed in).

Prosecutor: Will you now produce the statement of the Accused, Lt. TANAKA HITOSHI, of the 15th of August 1946.

Witness: The document which I hold in my hand is a statement by the Accused, Lt. TANAKA HITOSHI, made on the 15th of August 1946.

President: This statement by the Accused, TANAKA HITOSHI, under what circumstances was it taken? Was it translated or did the Accused give it in English?

Witness: So far as I remember that one was made by the Accused in English at STANLEY GAOL.

President: Did the prisoner write it himself or did you write it?

Witness: I took it down from his statement.

President: Did you take it down as he said it or did you listen to his statement first and then write it down?

Witness: I wrote it down as he said it -- passage by passage.

President: The statement made by the Accused, Lt. TANAKA HITOSHI, dated the 15th of August 1946, is handed to the Court, initialled by the President, marked "V(3)" and attached to the proceedings.

Prosecutor: Will you now produce the statement of the Accused Col. TOKUNAGA ISAO, dated the 27th April 1946.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives leaflet

-78-

Witness: The document which I now hold in my hand is the statement made by the Accused, Col. TOKUNAGA ISAO, on the 27th day of April 1946, before me, Capt. F.V. COLLINSON.

President: The statement of Col. TOKUNAGA ISAO himself, one of the Accused, dated 27th April 1946, is handed to the Court, initialled by the President, marked "W(3)" and attached to the proceedings.

Prosecutor: Will you now produce the statement of the Accused, Col. TOKUNAGA ISAO, dated 5th July 1946.

Witness: The document which I now hold in my hand is the statement made by the Accused, Col. TOKUNAGA ISAO himself on the 5th day of July 1946, before me, Capt. F.V. COLLINSON.

President: The statement made by Col. TOKUNAGA ISAO himself, one of the Accused, dated 5th July 1946, is handed to the Court, initialled by the President, marked "X(3)" and attached to the proceedings.

(Only original and one copy has been handed in -- (two more will be required)).

Prosecutor: Will you now produce the statement of the Accused, Dr. SAITO SHUNKICHI dated 5th July 1946.

Witness: The document which I now hold in my hand is the statement made by the Accused, Dr. SAITO SHUNKICHI, on the 5th day of July 1946, before me, Capt. F.V. COLLINSON.

President: The statement by the Accused, Dr. SAITO SHUNKICHI, dated the 5th of July 1946, is handed up to the Court, initialled by the President, marked "Y(3)" and attached to the proceedings.

(Two more copies of "Y(3)" will be necessary).

Prosecutor: Will you now produce the affidavit of SADAYOSHI NAKONISHI dated 18th September 1946 together with the report referred to in the statement.

Witness: The document which I now hold in my hand is a statement made by SADAYOSHI NAKONISHI, head of the POW Information Bureau, Tokyo, Japan, dated 18th day of September 1946, made in TOKYO. Attached to this document is a document written in the Japanese language and a translation thereof.

President: Is the Japanese translation referred to in the statement.

Witness: The document in Japanese is referred to in the statement of SADAYOSHI NAKONISHI.

President: The statement of SADAYOSHI NAKONISHI together with the document in Japanese, the plan and the translation of the attached document into English is handed to the Court, initialled by the President, marked "Z(3)" and attached to the proceedings.

Prosecutor: Will you now produce a statement by the Accused, Col. TOKUNAGA ISAO, dated 27th April 1946.

Witness: The document in my hand is a statement made by the Accused, Col. TOKUNAGA ISAO, on the 27th April 1946.

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref:		1		ins	
		WO 235/1012 PT1					

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

-79-

President: The statement of the Accused Col. TOKUNAGA ISAO, dated 27th April 1946, is handed to the Court, initialled by the President, marked "A(4)" and attached to the proceedings.

(Only two copies of this have been handed in -- one more will be needed).

Prosecutor: Will you now produce the statement of the Accused, Col TOKUNAGA ISAO dated 9th August 1946.

Witness: The statement in my hand was made by the Accused, Col TOKUNAGA ISAO on the 9th day of August 1946.

President: Can you explain why the statement made on the 9th of August is certified and signed by the interpreter on the 14th of June 1946.

Witness: This is the original document sir and the only way I can explain this is that it was read on the same day to the Accused -- it may have been signed by the interpreter after it was translated.

President: Still, this does not explain why the date of it being certified does not coincide with the date of the statement, *and in fact is earlier than the date on which the statement was signed* REC

Witness: I know definitely it was read over the Accused on the 9th of August, the same day as it was made. There must be some typographical error.

President: Who was the interpreter?

Witness: NOGAMI.

President: Is NOGAMI here?

Witness: Yes.

President: *ask REC* NOGAMI to come *in REC* this afternoon and explain this -- the statement will be returned until this point is cleared up.

Statement marked "B(4)" is handed back.

is REC
The Court will adjourn for five minutes *at 11.30 to REC*
The Court re-assembles at 11.35 to REC

Prosecutor: Will you now produce the letter of the International Red Cross Syndicate dated 28 November 1945.

Witness: The document in my hand is a letter written by the International Red Cross Delegation for Hong Kong. Delegate: Mr. Rudolph Zindel, dated 28 November 1945. Attached to it is a report from Mr. Rudolph Zindel dated 30th November 1945. To the best of my knowledge and belief Mr. Zindel is not in Hongkong.

Prosecutor: I might here point out that there is some rule to the effect that this witness cannot be compelled to give evidence whether he is in the colony or not.

President: The letter from Mr. Rudolph Zindel together with the report attached thereto, the report being dated 30th November 1945 and the letter 28th November 1945, are handed to the Court, initialled by the President, marked "C(4)" and attached to the proceedings.

1		2	
cme		Ref:	
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES			
WO 235 / 1012 PT1			
1		2	
ins		ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

-39-

Prosecutor: Will you now produce the affidavit of L/Cpl. STANLEY TYLER.

Witness: The document in my hand is the affidavit sworn by L/Cpl STANLEY TYLER, Royal Rifles of Canada, sworn at St John's, New Brunswick, on the 31st day of January 1946. To the best of my knowledge L/Cpl STANLEY TYLER is not in Hong Kong.

President: The affidavit of L/Cpl STANLEY TYLER together with the photograph referred to in the affidavit are handed to the Court, initialled by the President, marked "D(4)" and attached to the proceedings.

Prosecutor: Will you now produce the affidavit of W.A. Bert Royal.

Witness: The document in my hand is an affidavit sworn by Capt W.A. BERT ROYAL, Royal Rifles of Canada, sworn at Quebec on the 14th Day of December 1945. To the best of my knowledge and belief Capt ROYAL is not in Hong Kong.

President: The affidavit of Capt W.A. BERT ROYAL is handed in to the Court, initialled by the President, marked "E(4)" and attached to the proceedings.

Prosecutor: Will you now produce the affidavit of Pte WOODHEAD.

Witness: The document in my hand is an affidavit sworn by Pte CHARLES OSBORNE WOODHEAD sworn in the City of Vancouver on the 28th day of January 1946. To the best of my knowledge and belief Pte WOODHEAD is not in Hong Kong.

President: The affidavit of Pte WOODHEAD is handed in to the Court, initialled by the President, marked "F(4)" and attached to the proceedings.

Prosecutor: Will you now produce the unsworn statement of Miss LOO AH DIN.

Witness: The document in my hand is copy of an unsworn statement made by Miss LOO AH DIN, taken by Capt D. Hunt on the 9th of October 1945. Miss Loo Ah Din is not in Hong Kong at present. The original of this document is not here; I will hand it in later.

President: The copy of an unsworn statement made by Miss LOO AH DIN is handed to the Court, initialled by the President, marked "G(4)" and attached to the proceedings. The original will be produced later.

(I think it will be better if witness files the original of this statement now -- Capt COLLIERSON you may stand down, and while the affidavits are read perhaps you can go and get the original of "G(4)".

Prosecutor: I will now read the two affidavits by J.A.G. REID, One made by Capt REID and the other Major REID.

Affidavits "W" and "X" are read by Prosecutor.

President: As Capt COLLIERSON has returned he can produce the original of Miss LOO AH DIN'S statement.

Captain COLLIERSON

Witness: re-called.

The document in my hand is the original of an unsworn statement by Miss LOO AH DIN made before

1		2	
cms		Ref.	
WO 235/1012 PT1		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' material.		1	
		Ins	
		2	

-64-

Capt D. HUNT on the 9th October 1945. Miss LOO AH DIN is not in HONG KONG.

President: Can you state how this document came into your possession?

Witness: The document was taken by Capt HUNT who at that time was working in the War Crimes Office taking rough statements from witnesses. It was left there in our files when War Crimes Team was formed. We tried to contact this witness in order that we could take a sworn statement from her but she had already left the Colony.

President: Are you familiar with the signature of Capt HUNT?

Witness: I am, sir.

President: Will you look and see if you can indicate the signature of Capt HUNT on this document.

Witness: (Indicating signature) -- this is the signature of Capt HUNT.

President: How do you know that is the signature of Capt HUNT.

Witness: I have handed many documents signed by him and know him personally.

President: The original handwritten, but unsworn statement, made by Miss LOO AH DIN, witnessed by Capt DOUGLAS HUNT, is produced by Capt COLLINSON, handed to the Court, initialled by the President, marked "G(4)" and attached to the proceedings.

The Court is adjourned until 1400 hours.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref.
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

81

At 1400 hrs. on 3 December, the Court re-assemble pursuant to adjournment; present the same Members as at adjournment.

PROSECUTOR: I have no further questions to ask Capt. COLLISON. If my friend has no questions I intend to produce a witness to explain what happened in the case of that particular affidavit.

DEFENCE: I have no questions to ask Capt. COLLISON.

COURT: Is Capt. COLLISON going to produce more affidavits?

Witness: No Sir. All the affidavits are produced, except the one which was in question this morning, about the case of the Interpreter.

PROSECUTOR: That has been produced, Sir, subject to cross-examination.

COURT: If Mr. FUJITA has no questions to ask witness Capt. COLLISON can stand down.

Mr. FUJITA, do you have any objection to this witness being called to explain the discrepancy of the 2 days?

DEFENCE: I have no objection.

5th WITNESS FOR THE PROSECUTION - Sgt. Major F. NOGAMI *has been sworn*

Witness is sworn. EXAMINATION IN CHIEF.

Q. What is your name?
A. Fred NOGAMI.

Q. Your rank?
A. Sgt. Major.

Q. Your corps?
A. Canadian Intelligence Corps.

Q. What is your present employment?
A. I am a linguist attached to SEATIC Detachment.

Q. Will you take cognizance of the signature on this affidavit under the certificate of the Interpreter and tell me if it is your signature?
A. Yes, this is my signature.

Q. Will you tell the Court on what day you signed that certificate?
A. To the best of my knowledge it was signed the same time as Capt. COLLISON, i.e. the 9th day of August.

Q. Are you able to explain to the Court how the date 14 June 1946 occurs just above your signature?
A. Before these statements are taken down, usually there is a form made out. The reason for this mistake I am sure is that this form was made out way before August.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	ins

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

- Q. You mean by that, Sgt. Major, that the pro-forma itself was made out a long time before August?
- A. To the best of my knowledge, yes.

PROSECUTOR: This refers to the Exhibit "B4" Sir. I should have mentioned that before.

(No more questions)

Cross-Examination declined and No Questions by the Court.

Statement made by the Accused TOKUNAGA Isao dated the 9th day of August is initialled by the President, marked "B4" and attached to the proceedings.

PROSECUTOR: I want to produce ^{an exhibit} ~~an affidavit~~ myself, again with my friend's consent. This is to produce photographs which I want the Court to have before them in order to help visually with the various explanations that will be given of different things. As the next witness after this, who will probably be here tomorrow morning, will refer to these photographs, I think this is the time to produce them.

REC

6 WITNESS FOR THE PROSECUTION - Major G.B. PUDDICOMBE (Prosecutor)

On being sworn states as follows :-

I am George Beverley PUDDICOMBE, Major, Victoria Rifles of Canada, Canadian Army, officer in charge Canadian War Crimes Liaison Detachment, Japanese Area, HONG KONG Section.

If it please the Court I will now produce 8 photographs taken by myself and numbered from right to left 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7 and 8.

No. 1 is a composite picture of KING's Park football field, KOWLOON.

No. 2 is the same KING's Park football field showing the road by which it is entered and the country and hill behind it.

No. 3 is the northwest bank of the football field that is leading up approximately from the upper left in corner of No.1 picture.

Nos. 4 and 5 are complementary photographs. These are pictures of an upper room in FORFAR Street HQ of the POW administration during the Japanese occupation.

No. 4 has been taken with the camera in front of the window shown in No. 5 and No. 5 with the camera in the doorway where the figure is shown in that photograph.

No. 6 is the rear elevation of the FORFAR Street HQ POW camp.

1		2		Ref:		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
cms						WO 235 / 1012 PT1	
						1	
						ins	
						2	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

No.7 is the front of the FORFAR Street HQ.

No.8 is the KOWLOON Magistracy, formerly Kempeitai HQ in KOWLOON.

Album of 8 photographs taken by Major PUDDICOMBE is handed to the Court, initialled by the President, marked "H4" and attached to the proceedings.

COURT: When were these photographs taken by you?

A. I cannot tell you at the moment the exact date. I think it was 2 months ago, some time in October they were taken.

COURT: This is to be filed as an Exhibit?

A. Yes, and it will be referred to.

Cross-Examination declined.

COURT: The Defence I presume have copies of these photographs?

PROSECUTOR: Yes Sir. I have just given Mr. FUJITA a set.

PROSECUTOR: I will proceed now to read the affidavit of Major James Douglas Allen GREY. This is Exhibit "Y".

(Affidavit of Major J.D.A.GREY read by Prosecutor).

PROSECUTOR: The next two affidavits are those of Major-General MALBY and are Exhibits "Z" and "A1".

(Affidavits of Maj-Gen.MALBY read by Prosecutor)

COURT: Paragraphs 6 and 7 of this affidavit appear to refer to matters which are not in any way connected with the Accused and do not form part of the charges against them.

PROSECUTOR: These are extracts, Sir. The next paragraph I have is paragraph 8.

PROSECUTOR: The next affidavit is "B1" that of John Herbert PRICE.

(Affidavit of J.H. PRICE read by Prosecutor)

At 1600 hrs. the Court adjourn till 1000 hrs. on Wednesday 4 Dec. 46.

1		2		Ref:		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
cms						WO 235/1012 PT1	
						1	
						ins	
						2	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.

NO 5 WAR CRIMES COURT

SIXTH

FIFTH DAY'S proceedings of the trial of Col TOKUNAGA ISAO, Capt. SAITO SHUNKICHI, Lieut. TANAKA HITOSHI, Interpreter TSUTADA and Sgt HARADA JOTARO, of the Imperial Japanese Army.

(Held at Jardine Matheson's East Point Godown on Wednesday, December 4th 1946).

The Court re-assembled at 2.15

1000 hours.

PROSECUTOR: I will now continue to read the affidavits.

Document C(1) - Major F.T. ATKINSON, Royal Rifles of Canada.

(The affidavit of Major F.T. ATKINSON is read by Prosecutor).

Document D(1) - affidavit of Lt James Dormer MCCARTHY is read by Prosecutor.

(I will delete paragraph 8 of this statement as it is not relevant to the case.)

Document E(1) - affidavit of Cpl. JACK PORTER is read by Prosecutor.

Documents F(1) and G(1) - affidavits of Pte ALEXANDER HENKEL are read by Prosecutor.

(Paragraph 9 - F(1) - is deleted for the same reason as in the above mentioned statement).

Documents H(1) and I(1) - Major S.R. KERR.

First J(1) -- first two paragraphs do not appear to have any connection with the POW Camp or any of the Accused and will therefore be deleted. From paragraph 3 onwards is read by Prosecutor.

COURT: This part of the affidavit does not apply to the case (~~para 15 onwards~~) (second part of para 15) R.C.L.

PROSECUTOR: I would like to mention that it makes mention of a Sgt whose testimony will be given later on and perhaps it would be as well to read it now.

COURT: As it is not necessary at present to read the second half of paragraph 15 I think it will be better to leave it and if it is required later, we shall refer to it later.

PROSECUTOR: Sir, I would point out that this has reference to Charge 3 which is in regard to the illtreatment of POWs in the Upper Argyle Street Officers Camp. The charge is against the Accused Dr. SAITO and Lt. TANAKA. Paragraph 15 supports that charge and I submit this for your consideration. It is evidence in regard to illtreatment generally.

COURT: If it should appear later on either in any affidavit or in the evidence of any of your witnesses, then by all means what is referred to in the second half of paragraph 15 can be read. For the moment the Court has ruled out this part of the affidavit as being irrelevant and therefore I think it is not necessary to have it read.

~~SIXTH~~ Paragraph 22 is irrelevant and can be omitted.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	2

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

86

86

The Court will now adjourn for five minutes. *rec*
~~The Court will now adjourn for five minutes.~~

PROSECUTOR: The next affidavit is that of Mr. SVIATOSLAV NICHOLAS POTOULOFF - K(1). Before I starting reading this I would mention that this statement was made in HONG KONG by Mr. Potouloff before he left the Colony on 6 month's leave.

(K(1) is read by the Prosecutor).

PROSECUTOR: If the Court will permit, I will not read the last affidavit now L(1), as it is rather long, and I would like to call in a witness who is here at the moment.

COURT: You may call ~~in~~ ^{as} Witness.

PROSECUTOR: What is your name? *Witness is sworn in. TSE DICKUAN being sworn by me.*

WITNESS: TSE DICKUAN.

Q. What is your occupation?
 A. I am now working in the War Crimes Investigation Unit as Clerk.

Q. Where do you live?
 A. No. 11 Nga Tsin Long Row, Kowloon.

Q. What is your nationality?
 A. Chinese.

Q. Are you a British subject?
 A. I was born in Hong Kong.

Q. What is your age?
 A. 46.

Q. Will you tell the Court, Mr. Tse, what your job was during the Japanese occupation? First, in regard to the Japanese?

A. I was working as a typist in the H.Q. of the POW Camp.

Q. How long did you have that job?
 A. I started working in August 1942 up to October 1944.

Q. During that time did you have any connection with the British Army?

A. At that time I was B Group Leader of the B.A.A.G. (British Army Aid Group), which dealt specially with POW intelligence work.

Q. And as an Agent of the British Army Aid Group what was your particular job?

A. I myself and one agent dealt specially with POW intelligence.

Q. Have you, in your possession, a document respecting deaths in the POW Camps?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Who prepared that document?

A. This original list of deaths was typed by me and kept in the Interpreter's room. The Japanese characters inside were filled in by the Japanese.

Q. Has this document been translated?

A. The attached translation was made by me.

1	2	1	2
cms		Re:	
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES			
WO 235/1012 PT1			
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.			

Q. Will you now produce that document. The original as well as the translated document.

COURT: What are your qualifications for speaking Japanese?

WITNESS: I cannot speak Japanese.

COURT: What is this translation to which you refer, what is it translated from?

WITNESS: From the Japanese characters.

COURT: You can read Japanese characters?

A. I know the medical names.

Q. You know medical names?

A. Yes.

Q. How did you learn those?

A. Because during the time that I was typist, Dr. SAITO sent the death certificates down and always the Interpreter asked me to fill in the names for the characters, and sometimes I was asked to look into the dictionary, and sometimes the Japanese interpreter told me the translation of those Japanese characters.

PROSECUTOR: Will you hand the document to the Court.

COURT: Mr. Tse, with regard to this document here, the type-writing of the list in English was done by you, is that right? Where did you get the information from?

WITNESS: Dr. SAITO always sent the information down from his office to the 2nd floor.

COURT: The characters under "Cause of Death", who wrote those in?

WITNESS: The Japanese interpreters.

COURT: And although you cannot speak Japanese you can read these characters?

WITNESS: Yes, sir.

COURT: You mean that you learnt them by observation and memory?

WITNESS: Not only by observation and from memory but because some of the Japanese characters and technical names are the same as the Chinese characters.

COURT: This first list written in pencil Major PUDDICOMBE (Prosecutor), who prepared this?

WITNESS: That was prepared by me.

COURT: And again from where did you get this information?

WITNESS: These two registers (Witness hands in two registers) were kept by Dr. SAITO.

COURT: How did these come into your possession?

WITNESS: This was handed to the War Crimes Investigation Unit after the Japanese surrender but I do not know which officer handed it to the War Crimes Unit.

Court hands back a document to Witness.

COURT: Mr. Tse, that document you are holding in your hand, is that a compilation made from information derived from this document (Court indicates document to witness) you have produced and not from the Register of deaths.

WITNESS: From the long list.

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref:		ins			
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES							
WO 235/1012 PT1							
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives leaflet.							

COURT: Not from here (Court indicating Register)
WITNESS: Not from there.

COURT: So, therefore, these notes in pencil do not appear in the register?

WITNESS: It is the same thing -- I always make out a draft first before I translate.

COURT: But I understood you to say that these names in the pencil draft were taken from the two books, is that correct?

WITNESS: From the long list.

COURT: So in compiling the document you have in your hand you did not use these books at all.

WITNESS: No.

COURT: Major PUDDICOMBE (Prosecutor), are you going to put these two books in as an Exhibit.

PROSECUTOR: I don't even know what they are.

COURT: Hand them back. Also the typewritten list in English headed 'list of POW deaths in 1942 from dysentery, enteritis, etc.' from where is that taken?

Prosecutor examines the books handed back.

PROSECUTOR: That is from the document he has in his hand.

COURT: There is also a document in pencil 'summary of examinations', but there are many alterations and scratching-outs and it is unsigned.

PROSECUTOR: That is not to be submitted.

COURT: If they are not needed please do not tender preliminary rough notes and drafts as they tend to confuse; the original document and the translation is all that is required.

COURT: Do you state, to the best of your knowledge and ability, that the translation you have made is a correct translation?

WITNESS: Yes, sir.

PRESIDENT: The document produced by the Witness, TSE DICKUAN, together with the translation into English, are handed to the Court, initialled by the President, marked, respectively, J(4) and K(4) and attached to the proceedings.

PROSECUTOR: What is this document that you have translated, Mr. TSE?

WITNESS: List of deaths, sir.

- Q. List of deaths of what?
A. Of POWs interned in Hong Kong and Kowloon.
- Q. During what period?
A. During 1942 up to the surrender in 1945.
- Q. Have you made a compilation from this list; if so, will you explain to the Court what it is?
A. The list shows there were 546 deaths. The causes of these deaths are as follows:

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

89

1) Diphtheria.....	78
Diphtheria, complicated by one or more diseases, including one case of tonsillitis	23
Total	101
2) Dysentery	44
Dysentery, complicated by one or more diseases	12
Total	56
3) Malnutrition, beri-beri, avitaminosis and pellagra	43
Complicated malnutrition, beri-beri, avitaminosis and pellagra, including two cases of tonsillitis	54
Total	97
4) Miscellaneous.....	292
Deaths under columns 1,2 and 3	254
Grand Total	546.

PROSECUTOR hands Exhibit H(4) to Witness.

PROSECUTOR: Tell me what this Exhibit is; identify the photographs; refer to them/number.

Witness indicates photograph Nos.4, 5, 6 and 7.

PROSECUTOR: What are Nos 4 and 5.

WITNESS: Nos 4 and 5 are the hall which is outside Col TOKUNAGA'S room.

PROSECUTOR: In what building is this room?

WITNESS: 2nd floor of the building in FORBES Street used by the Japanese as POW H.Q. during the occupation.

PROSECUTOR: What is No.6

WITNESS: No.6 is a playground at the back of H.Q.

PROSECUTOR: What is No.7

WITNESS: No.7 is the front entrance to H.Q.

PROSECUTOR: What do you know about Red Cross parcels which came into Hong Kong during the Japanese occupation?

WITNESS: The Japanese often handed me invoices to type. I know that Red Cross parcels arrived per s.s. GRIPSHOLM, and I know a man, a Japanese by the name of ABE who was working under Capt Carter. Capt Carter was the Q.M. of the POW Camp H.Q., and ABE was supposed to look after these Red Cross parcels, and from time to time I saw ABE distributing some of the sundries inside the Red Cross parcels to his office mates in office. About the end of 1943 I personally saw ABE open up some parcels sent by the British Red Cross. A few Japanese NCO's came in together and tried on some yellow boots; but when they found that the boots were too big they put them away and only took some sundries like sweets, towels and some handkerchiefs. In April 1944, one week before our pay, for which we signed at the H.Q., Interpreter NIMORI asked me to go

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref.
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	ins

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives leaflet

87-90

99

to meet ABE at No.2 Katorie Terrace.

I went as arranged and met ABE. ABE told me that he had opened an Import and Export firm in French Building Bank Building. ABE told me that this firm was on a very sound financial basis. He introduced me to a Chinese and told me that this Chinese would deal with all the business.

PROSECUTOR: What had this firm to do with Red Cross parcels?
WITNESS: I know that this Chinese was selling goods for ABE.

PROSECUTOR: What goods were they selling?
WITNESS: Tinned goods, milk and some other articles.

PROSECUTOR: Where did they come from?
WITNESS: Most probably they were stolen from the Red Cross parcels. I would like to mention that ABE, when he first joined the POW Camp in 1942 was very shabbily dressed. I know his salary was 75 to 100 Yen. At the time when he resigned, and when I visited his home, the house was so nicely furnished and his dress was beautiful.

PROSECUTOR: Have you anything else to add about Red Cross parcels?
WITNESS: No sir.

PROSECUTOR: Will you look at this picture and tell me if you can indicate where these red cross supplies were kept? Indicate the picture by number.

WITNESS: No.6

PROSECUTOR: Where were the Red Cross parcels kept?
WITNESS: No 6 - room on the 1st floor.

WITNESS: May the Court allow me to speak about these two books?

COURT: Will you describe to the Court the location of the window of the room in relation to photograph No.6

WITNESS: The last two rooms on the 1st floor on the left hand side.

PRESIDENT: Witness said he wanted to say something about these two black books.

COURT: What are the black books?

WITNESS: Although I did not translate the list from these books, the list, when I was in the POW camp was based on information from these books and not from this list.

COURT: Then you did use those books in making your list?

WITNESS: Not now, but when the Japanese wanted.

COURT: I think in that case as the Witness states he saw these documents being used in compiling the list which he has produced, the Court should have them.

Will you describe what they are?

WITNESS: The first one is the English Death Certificate Register - 1942. Compiled by H.Q. POW Camp. Inside there are some of the true copies of death certificates signed by the Medical Officers.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
Ref: WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' Terms and Conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.	

COURT: What is the second book?

WITNESS: The second one is the same thing for the same year and is a continuation of the first book.

COURT: Who is the second book signed by?

WITNESS: Dr. SAITO, the Doctor.

PROSECUTOR: Is the one signed by the British Officer there, sir?

COURT: Yes, here is one signed by DR. RODRIGUES which bears a Japanese marking.

To witness all
Do you know what that mark is? *Showing a mark on the document referred to. REC*

WITNESS: That represents a copy.

COURT: You have stated that these books were signed by Dr SAITO, can you show the Court where his signature appears?

Witness indicates Dr SAITO'S signature in Japanese characters. REC

COURT: The first book handed in appears to be a list containing the death certificates of the POWs signed by British Medical Officers, is initialled by the President, marked L(4) and attached to the proceedings.

The second book handed by the Witness to the Court appears to be copies of death certificates of POWs in Hong Kong, signed by British Medical Officers, and bears the mark of the Accused, Dr. SAITO, in Japanese characters.

COURT: How do you know these are Japanese characters?

WITNESS: They read the same as Chinese.

COURT: This is initialled by the President, marked M(4) and attached to the proceedings.

COURT: Mr. Fujita, do you wish to cross-examine this witness now -- if your cross-examination is likely to take a long time I suggest it would be better to start the cross-examination in the afternoon.

DEFENCE: My cross-examination will not take a long time but I would like to borrow the exhibits that were just handed in to the Court during the lunch recess, and then in the afternoon there might be some more questions I would like to ask this witness.

COURT: Which books do you require -- just J(4)?

DEFENCE: I would like to see all the books, J(4), L(4) and M(4).

The books are handed to the Defence Counsel REC

The Court is adjourned until 1415 hours *this afternoon REC*

1		2	
cms		Ref:	
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES		WO 235/1012 PT1	
1		2	
ins		ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.

00131

92

92

4 December, P.M.

At 1400 hrs. on 4 December the Court re-assembles pursuant to adjournment; present the same Members as at adjournment.

WITNESS FOR THE PROSECUTION: - Mr. TSE JICKUAN

Cross-Examination by Mr. FUSITA

Q. You said that a Chinese sold some goods for ABE. Is that correct?

A. Yes.

Q. What do you base that statement on?

A. Hearsay.

Q. Have you ever been to that Chinese shop?

A. Which Chinese shop? I never spoke of a shop; I know only one firm, the same firm ABE.

Q. Have you ever been to that shop?

A. No.

PROSECUTOR: I would like to know what shop is in question. No shop has been mentioned in Examination in Chief.

COURT: I think it would refer to the office or place of residence.

Q. Where was this canned food and milk sold, that you speak of?

A. Where they sold I do not know but they had such goods in the market.

Re Examination by Mr. NASEGANA

Re Examination declined.

Questioned by the Court:

Q. To clarify this point completely: you told the Court in Examination-in-Chief that you were told by ABE that he had set up an import and export business. Did you ever go to that office where that business was carried on?

A. No, because at the first moment he gave me terms which I did not accept.

Q. Just answer the question only. You never went there?

A. No.

Q. Did you ever see yourself the goods which he was supposed to be selling?

A. I did not see them but I saw ABE open up parcels often in POW HQ.

Q. So you do not know yourself where the goods were being sold by this business firm organised by ABE?

A. No.

Question put through the Court:

DEFENCE: You said that Red Cross parcels were being opened, where were these parcels opened?

A. In the first floor of No.2 FORFAR Road HQ, POW Camp office.

(No more questions by the Defence or Prosecution)

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref.
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	ins

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.

WITNESS FOR THE PROSECUTION - Lt.-Col. E.J.R. MITCHELL, ^{Rec} ~~Chang~~ ^{Chang} ~~Comman~~ ^{Comman}
^{status Rec} Witness is sworn. EXAMINATION IN CHIEF.

- Q. Will you tell the Court your full name, rank and corps?
 A. Erik John Ryan MITCHELL, Lieut.-Colonel, HONG KONG Volunteer Defence Corps.
- Q. What is your present employment?
 A. I am still commanding the HONG KONG Volunteer Defence Corps.
- Q. Have you any other occupation as well?
 A. I have.
- Q. For the purpose of record will you tell us ^{what Rec} ~~where~~ it is?
 A. Manager, Manufacturers' Life Insurance Company.
- Q. Will you tell the Court where you live?
 A. 9 ADMORE Court, MAY Road.
- Q. I understand you were in command of the HKVDC at the time of the Japanese invasion in December 1941?
 A. That is correct.
- Q. Will you tell the Court where you were interned?
 A. I was interned as a POW in SHAM SHUI PO camp from 30 December, 1941, until 18 April 1942. I was then transferred to ARGYLE Street until 22 May, 1944, when I was re-transferred to SHAM SHUI PO Camp, North.
- Q. Will you tell the Court what the conditions were in SHAM SHUI PO Camp on around 24 January, 1942. (These charges date from 24 January 1942 onwards so please confine your remarks from that period on.)
 A. The conditions in SHAM SHUI PO were very crowded, houses containing at least 50 were made for only 32 Other Ranks. The food was deplorably inadequate. There were no arrangements given to us for cleansing or sanitary arrangements of any sort; we had to make all our own arrangements. The whole of SHAM SHUI PO barracks had been very badly looted before we went in there and we had to make even our own windows. I was responsible for getting two of my officers out to buy some shovels and picks, but that was very early on, at the beginning of January, 1942, and if it had not been for the fact that we were able to get this, we would have had nothing at all with which to clean the camp. No other facilities were given at all after that time.
- Q. Who was in charge of the camp to your knowledge, in HONG KONG. I mean the POW Camps.
 A. As far as I know, Col. TOKUNAGA took over about that time. I cannot remember the exact date but I was at a conference at which he addressed our General and all the senior officers of which I was one, about that date, somewhere about 24 January.
- Q. Where is Col. TOKUNAGA now?
 A. He is here in Court.
- Q. Can you identify him?
 A. I think he is the man in front, but he has gone very thin since I saw him last.
- Q. Can you tell us what happened at that conference which you spoke of a moment ago?
 A. Briefly, Col. TOKUNAGA told us that it was all our fault that we were POWs for daring to fight against Japan and we had to take the consequences. We were now under his command and should consider ourselves under Japanese military law.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
line	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.

7*

9*

- Q. What was the provision for clothing in the camps in which you were?
- A. Provision was practically nil.
- Q. Can you be specific, what do you mean, Colonel, by "practically nil"?
- A. It was only after we had got to ARGYLL Street before we got any kind of issue of any sort, and then, as far as I can remember (it was 4 years ago) we received only little short towels with which we used to wipe the sweat off ourselves and fandoshes which I personally refused to wear as I did not wish to be made to appear a native, and some cloths but no decent European clothes.
- Q. COURT: Would you explain what you mean by a "fandoshe"? Is it a Japanese word?
- A. A fandoshe is a small triangle, like a bathing slip, just enough to cover the private parts, a "G string". It is a local word.
- Q. What was the situation regarding blankets in SHAM SHUI PO?
- A. There was a very great shortage. I had to go round with my company commanders to my units and take away blankets from those who happened to have 3, to even it out to two each in my own unit. But those were all brought in by ourselves.
- Q. What about the food? Can you describe the food, other than saying it was inadequate?
- A. The food consisted of rice I should say not more than 2 tin mugs of rice per day per man and one tin mug of green stuff. The vegetables were of very poor quality. We occasionally got a little bit of fish and sometimes a little bit of whale meat and actually had rations of meat up to July 1942. But from July 1942 until about the surrender of Germany, we never got any meat at all. We had a bakery and ~~xxxx~~ after some time (I cannot remember when it started) we had bread until about February 1943. Then we never saw any bread until the surrender of Japan.
- Q. What was the quality of the rice?
- A. It varied but it was very often sweepings from godowns and nearly always in the last 2 years short of weight we were promised. We were continually having conferences with the Japanese authorities pointing out the shortage of food and it was never made up.
- Q. What were the conditions in ARGYLL Street Camp?
- A. In ARGYLL Street Camp officers were made to sleep between 40 and 50 in a hut on stone floors. There were only Asiatic latrines; there was one European latrine which was reserved for the General and his staff and senior officers down to my rank. I have got something to say about the huts. Being wooden huts some of the roofs were very leaky. We made representations time and again to have these leaks repaired and nothing was brought in until the day I left ARGYLL Street. I was in the last party and both the lorries that took the two remaining batches of officers ~~from~~ SHAM SHUI PO from ARGYLL Street on 22 May brought in timber for the huts, and they had not got it before that.
- Q. What about clothing in ARGYLL Street?
- A. There was one issue of wind-breakers in the winter of 1942, a kind of sleeveless sweater, just about the same time as we saw our first Red Cross parcels. These were from South African Red Cross parcels. There was barely enough to go round, one to each man.

1		2		1		2	
cme		Ref:		1		2	
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES		WO 235/1012 PT1		1		2	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet'

- 45
- Q. Blankets in ARGYLL Street?
- A. We were given an issue of thin cotton blankets for those who had not got 2 apiece. There were not very many.
- Q. Relatively speaking, how were you equipped in this regard in the winter time?
- A. On the average most people only had two blankets but later on when the Canadian Red Cross parcels arrived, after I returned back to SHAM SHUI PO, there was a very limited supply of very fine United States Army blankets; I think about enough to go round, less than one-third the camp.
- Q. Were there any representations made to the Japanese in respect to clothing and blankets or other furnishings you have spoken of?
- A. There were several representations made by Gen. MALTBY and afterwards by his successors.
- Q. Who were these made to?
- A. They were explained to the Interpreter usually after the evening parade.
- Q. What were your instructions to the Interpreter in respect to these representations?
- A. The Interpreter was usually given a letter to Col. TOKUNAGA signed by Gen. MALTBY or his successor later on, with a list of most urgent requirements. But after a time we found it was quite useless to ask for anything and we tried asking for one thing at a time because we thought they would comprehend it more easily. But that had no effect also.
- Q. What was the situation respecting food in ARGYLL Street?
- A. I covered that in my first answer to you, what I gave with regard to the food, about 2 mugs of rice and one mug of green s was pretty much the average all along, except for what was supplemented from time to time. I can enlarge slightly on that. I can tell you when the fish ration was sent in there was not enough to divide round the whole camp so we had a roster of huts and there was never enough sufficient to go round two or three huts, roughly 100 to 150 prisoners at a time, and we never knew when the next lot was coming in.
- Q. To your knowledge, what was the effect of this food condition that you have described, on the POWs?
- A. There was quite a lot of beri-beri as a result of it and people were complaining of "electric feet" which was one of the symptoms of beri-beri.
- Q. When did these signs of deficiency, beri-beri and "electric feet", when did they first appear?
- A. They first started before we were moved from SHAM SHUI PO Camp to ARGYLL Street. I had to visit numerous patients from my own corps in the SHAM SHUI PO Hospital before we even moved to ARGYLL, in April 1942.
- Q. What did you do about the conditions of beri-beri?
- A. I am speaking about the representations you made.
- Q. The medical comforts and requisite drugs were always on the first of our list of representations of our requirements, they were always on the first of Gen. MALTBY's list.
- Q. What was the result of these requests that you made?
- A. Practically nil.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref.
WO 235 / 1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	ins

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

76

76

- Q. What was the hospital facility at ARGYLE Camp?
- A. There was no hospital opened in ARGYLE Street Camp until we had been there for 6 months, but there was St. TERESA's hospital just outside the perimeter of the camp which was already full of SHAM SHUI PO cases.
- Q. What access did you have to St. TERESA's hospital?
- A. We could only get patients in there after several representations to the Japanese authorities.
- Q. Who would these representations be made to?
- A. To Col. TOKUNAGA, through the Interpreter and also to Capt. SAITO by our medical orderly.
- Q. Where is Capt. SAITO now?
- A. Sitting in Court in front of me.
- Q. Will you indicate which one he is?
- A. One of the one with the glasses is Capt. SAITO and the other is Capt. TANAKA but I am not sure which is which; the two on the right.
- Q. Will you tell the Court what effect a request had to the Japanese, either SAITO or TOKUNAGA, in the case of somebody who needed to be hospitalized?
- A. In July 1942 one of my officers, Lt. GUTERRES was suffering from enteritis. The medical officer of the Royal Scots, Capt. WARRICK informed me of this and said representations should be made to get him into hospital as quickly as possible.
- Q. I take it you are giving an illustration?
- A. Yes.
- Q. (Ctd.) I reported this to Gen. MALBY and made the request suggested. For 3 or 4 days we had no response at all but eventually Lt. GUTERRES was taken out and I think on 25 or 26 July 1942 he died, within 3 hours of leaving the camp, in St. TERESA's hospital.
- Q. Who was Lt. BOWKER?
- A. Lt. BOWKER was one of my anti-aircraft artillery officers who was taken ill at the end of September, 1942.
- Q. Where was he at this time?
- A. No. 3 hut in ARGYLE Street Camp.
- Q. Are you able to state from what he was suffering?
- A. I understand there was some kind of internal trouble.
- Q. What happened to Lt. BOWKER?
- A. The same requests were made, both to Col. TOKUNAGA and Capt. SAITO to get him to hospital as quickly as possible. In this case we were told that he was going to be taken to hospital but although promises were made, nothing was done for several days. Eventually an open lorry arrived in ARGYLE Street Camp on the evening of the day that he went into hospital where he died on the operating table. A Dr. ANDERSON, who is now in HONG KONG, was then Major in the RAMC was to perform the operation but he told me after the liberation of HONG KONG that Lt. BOWKER's case was left too late.
- Q. Can you tell the Court what Dr. SAITO's actions were subsequent to your request for removal to hospital of Mr. BOWKER?

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
Ref: WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

17

96

- A. In both cases he appeared to do nothing about it, but we got promises through the Interpreter that something was being done. Capt. SAITO took no interest in the medical welfare of our camp. The medical welfare was left entirely in the hands of our medical officers and Capt. SAITO only came, under very heavy pressure, and for some occasions of weighing which started in the last year.
- Q. You have told us that representations were made to Dr. SAITO when Mr. BOWKER was ill. Can you tell the Court what he did in that case?
- A. I got only messages from Gen. MALTBY, not direct from the Japanese authorities, and all I got was that Gen. MALTBY was seeing the Japanese authorities after the morning and afternoon counts and each time they said they were sending a lorry to take him to BOWEN Road. Several lorries came in each day for rations and if they had wanted to take him out earlier they could have taken him out in the empty ration lorry, because that was all the type of lorry they eventually sent.
- Q. I do not think I have made myself plain. I want to know what SAITO himself did in the case of BOWKER.
- A. To my knowledge he did nothing until it was too late.
- Q. Will you tell the Court what you know about Col. ARMSTRONG?
- A. Col. ARMSTRONG was in the same hut as myself in SHAM SHUI PO. He was apparently suffering from cancer, from what I am told. At the time when he was ill we had opened our own hospital inside the ARGYLL Street Camp and he spent a long time there before he was eventually removed to BOWEN Road.
- Q. To your knowledge were there any particular illnesses which affected the POWs during the Japanese occupation, in this camp?
- A. There was a diphtheria epidemic in SHAM SHUI PO Camp which we knew all about.
- Q. Can you make any comment on conditions under which the medical people worked in respect to this diphtheria epidemic which you speak of?
- A. We were allowed to send money to SHAM SHUI PO Camp from ARGYLL Street as officers received pay and Other Ranks only working pay and the money was used by our hospital to buy drugs from outside unknown to the Japanese authorities, I believe.
- Q. Why was it necessary to send money to buy drugs?
- A. Because we could not get them from the Japanese.
- Q. Where did these drugs come from that you were able to buy unknown to the Japanese?
- A. I believe the credit must be given to Dr. Selwyn CLARKE for a magnificent job of work in that connexion.
- Q. Can you enlarge on that?
- A. I only heard what was going on after one of my officers was transferred from SHAM SHUI PO Camp to ARGYLL Street because he would not ~~for~~ the line of Major BOON, and that is Capt. VALENTINE. Perhaps I should say he did not obey the orders of Major BOON.

COURT: I do not think, Major PUDDICOMBE, that anything which has to do with disputes between individual officers in this camp is either edifying or relative to the case we have to try.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref.
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	ins

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives material.

- Q. These medical supplies that you were able to purchase, how were they brought into your camp?
- A. They were not brought into my camp but into SHAM SHUI PO Camp. As far as I know chiefly through the ration lorry drivers and some Formosan sentries.
- Q. What happened to these lorry drivers?
- A. The Japanese authorities got to hear that we were communicating with the other camp and the outside world through certain lorry drivers and they sent in one with a bogus number who was spying for the Japanese authorities and I hear that all those lorry drivers had their heads chopped off. I certainly never saw them again.

COURT: These lorry drivers, what were they? POWs?

A. They were Chinese.

- Q. What was the attitude of Japanese guards and so on, physically, towards the POWs?
- A. They varied depending very much on the guard commander. May I give an illustration? Sometimes we had a guard commander who was fairly lenient and the guards took no notice of us, kept out of our way. On another occasion you would get a guard commander who seemed to want to "take it out" of us for no reason at all and if people did not bow to the guards when they passed they were beaten up. We made several protests in this connexion.
- Q. Can you give any instances of this sort of treatment to your brother officers or officers under your command?
- A. There were several instances of beating-up but I think I could count on the fingers of my two hands the number of my officers (we had about 80 of them) who were not beaten up. There was a Lieut. SILVA who is at present in the Colony, who was beaten up by a sentry whom we nick-named "Cat and Dog". I do not know what the reason was but I believe the Japanese Camp Commandant WADA accused him of belittling Japan's arms, but I cannot believe he would be foolish enough to say a thing like that while he was in prison.
- Q. When did Gen. MALTBY leave the camp?
- A. Early in August 1943.
- Q. Who took his place?
- A. Col. FIELD.
- Q. What was the attitude of the Japanese towards Col. FIELD?
- A. He was a senior officer. They treated him not with the respect that he should have had as a commanding officer. He had his face slapped several times by the Interpreter NUMORI. NUMORI ALL
- Q. Who was Lt.-Col. WHITE?
- A. Lt.-Col. WHITE took over from Col. FIELD, appointed by the Japanese when we moved back to SHAM SHUI PO in May 1944. He was with the Royal Scots.
- Q. What was the Japanese attitude to him?
- A. He also had his face slapped several times and took punishment on behalf of other officers.

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref:		ins			
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES				WO 235/1012 PT1			
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives leaflet							

- Q. Do you know Lt.-Col. FENFOLD?
 A. He was made to stand at attention in ARGYLL Street for some trivial thing which he put in a letter, as far as I can remember, and he was standing there for nearly an hour, much to the indignation of the whole camp.
- Q. Who was Sub-Lieut. GLOVER?
 A. He was an officer in the HK RNVR who got badly beaten up in ARGYLL Street Camp.
- Q. Who was Lt. MACLEOD?
 A. He was another officer in the HK RNVR who was chased round the parade ground by NUMORI who tried to kick him in the crutch and did not succeed, fortunately, on 8 December 1942. I think it was 1942, maybe 1943, when a lot of our batmen left ARGYLL Street for Japan.
- Q. Who was Capt. EGALL?
 A. He was a Free French officer attached to my unit. He had the courage to answer NUMORI back and had a bad time.
- Q. To your knowledge, what other Japanese were concerned in these treatments of POWs?
 A. Lieut. . . .
 not
 Q. I am speaking of other cases; I want to hear what Japanese were concerned in these treatments. Otherwise
 A. There was a Warrant Officer, Sgt. HARA, ~~xxxxxxx~~ known as "Jungle JIM"; he used to come round the camp at night and chase people off the parade ground if they were wandering between the huts. He had an unhappy habit of throwing great big stones at prisoners too. There was another, who is in front of me now, who was known as "NAPOLEON", Sgt. HARADA. He was responsible for the beating-up of BARNETT when BARNETT had the nerve to speak to the Red Cross Inspector, Mr. ZIND~~el~~. I was in the hut and all I can say in favour of Sgt. HARADA is that he received his orders from NUMORI. ~~acc~~
- COURT: Were there 2 Sergeants by the name of HARADA?
 A. "Jungle JIM" was HARA and this one is Sgt. HARADA, otherwise "NAPOLEON". Sgt. HARA I believe is dead.
- PROSECUTOR: This will be fully explained by other witnesses; I will not put the Colonel to any further trouble about this but just to mention the names of the Accused.
- Q. You have told us of a number of beatings and indicated that they were fairly general. What do you have to say about the Japanese attitude towards the POWs?
 A. They treated us more as criminals than as POWs. They seemed to do their best to humiliate us in every conceivable way.
- Q. You have spoken of a system of weighing which was instituted I think you said in 1944?
 A. The system of weighing started some time around 1944; although we did have one or two weighings in ARGYLL Street most of them I recollect were in SHAM SHUI PO. It was supposed to be about once a month but it was not too regular.
- Q. What was the purpose, to your knowledge, of this weighing?
 A. When they first started we thought that it was to check up our weights and possibly, we hoped, to make up for some food deficiencies. But it did not seem to make any difference to our rations although our weights were going down.

1		2	
cms		Ref:	
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES		WO 235/1012 PT1	
1		1	
ins		2	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

77 100

77
100

- Q. What had SAITO to do with this weighing?
- A. He used to come in with the weighing party. It was about the only time we ever saw him.
- Q. What did you have to do with it yourself, Colonel, the weighing?
- A. I was a hut commander and had to report to the weighing authorities when all my hut had completed their weighing.
- Q. What relation was there between you and SAITO on these occasions?
- A. I reported to him "No. 12 hut finished" through the Interpreter. I once asked him if I could see my weight of the previous month and he completely ignored me. It was typical of the attitude of humiliating us in the camp.
- Q. Have you anything to tell the Court in respect to the Red Cross parcels?
- A. I mentioned earlier on that the first lot of Red Cross parcels we got was in December 1942 in ARGYLL Street. We got a small supplement to that in February 1943 when the bread ration came in. From February 1943 to August 1944, no Red Cross parcels were received in my camp. In August 1944, a fortnight after the BARNETT incident, we received 4 Canadian parcels each. I can give an example of how these benefitted the camp through my own weight which went up from 134 lbs. to 145 lbs. within 2 months of receipt of those parcels. The next lot of parcels we got was in March 1945 and we got the same as we had received in December 1942.
- Q. Can you explain what you mean by the same?
- A. The same English parcels we had, the same type of parcels that we had in December 1942 in ARGYLL Street Camp were delivered in March 1944, allegedly having arrived from Japan from the ~~AWA~~ MARU.
- Q. Would you explain to the Court the significance of what you have been telling us in regard to the receipt of parcels from the ~~AWA~~ MARU? I think you said you received parcels in 1944 which were similar to those received in 1942 and you have also mentioned the ~~AWA~~ MARU. Perhaps it is not clear to the Court just what you signify by that.
- A. The parcels I am referring to are those received in March 1945 and in 1944. They were supposed to have come from the ~~AWA~~ MARU. Actually they came from a godown in HONG KONG; (we got this message from our working parties who were in South camp whom we were not allowed to communicate with, but did). We were told that they had arrived from Japan in the ~~AWA~~ MARU.
- Q. What, actually did happen to the parcels that, to your knowledge, came in the ~~AWA~~ MARU?
- A. They were stolen by the Japanese authorities. They kept what they wanted themselves; they sold a lot of them in the town and some of them were actually brought to the gate by parcel senders to prisoners and were struck off the list.
- Q. Again, to your knowledge, what was ~~the~~ comprised in the parcels that came in the ~~AWA~~ MARU?
- A. We know for a fact that there were some "Old Gold" cigarettes because it was being sold to us by the sentries just after we got the parcels that were supposed to come from the ~~AWA~~ MARU.

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

1
2
cms

Ref:

WO 235/1012 PT1

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES

1
2
lms

AWA

Q. How did you know of the advent of the ~~AVA~~ ^{AWA} MARU in HONG KONG?
A. It was published in the HONG KONG news. Also we were told on 9 January 1945 after the evening parade when the Interpreter KATAYAMA and the Sgt. Major of the camp, whose name I cannot remember, arrived at parade rolling drunk. They were so drunk that the parade became a farce when it got down to No.12 hut which I commanded and which was the last hut. Immediately after that they sent out for "saki" to try and give to our fellows and they told them they would soon be handing their swords to us and that there were some wonderful American parcels coming, which we never saw.

PROSECUTOR: May I ask the Court for a short adjournment for myself.

COURT: The Court will go into temporary recess until the prosecuting Officer is ready.

The Court re-assembles. 24

Q. Will you tell the Court what was your observation of Col. TOKUNAGA's position in respect to the conduct of affairs in the POW camps generally?

A. I understand he was the Colonel Commandant of all POW camps in HONG KONG.

Q. As such ~~what~~ was his responsibility?

A. His responsibility I presume was the welfare of prisoners.

Q. What was the position of the Accused SAITO?

A. His responsibility I presume was the welfare of prisoners, medically. To my knowledge he was the medical officer and responsible for the medical welfare of all prisoners in HONG KONG.

Q. Is there anything now you wish to add to your statement on the conditions in camp in any way pertaining to the Accused?

A. No. I think I have given the conditions generally - that we felt we were being treated as criminals and not being given the treatment of honourable POWs.

(No more questions)

222

At 1600 hrs. the Court adjourns until 1000 hrs.
on Thursday 5 December, 1946.

[illegible]

N O. 5 WAR CRIMES COURT

SEVENTH DAY'S proceedings of the ~~trial~~ trial of Col TOKUNAGA ISAO, Capt. SAITO SHUNKICHI, Lieut. TANAKA HITOSHI, Interpreter TSUTADA and Sgt HARADA JOTARO, of the Imperial Japanese Army.

(Held at Jardine Matheson's East Point Godown on Thursday, December 5th 1946).

The Court assembled at 1000 hours

CROSS-EXAMINATION by Mr. Justice A. R. C. Lieut. Col. E.J.R. MITCHELL.

COURT: Col MITCHELL I want you to remember you are still bound by the oath which you took yesterday.

- Q. Yesterday you testified that Col TOKUNAGA became the Commandant of the POW Camps in Hong Kong on the 24th January 1942; is there any special reason why you remember this date?
- A. Yes because on the 25th January we moved from our first quarters into new quarters, and at that time the Navy were moved with the Canadians that were in the Camp to North Point Camp.
- Q. What connection has this date with Col TOKUNAGA becoming the Commandant?
- A. Well, as I mentioned yesterday, at that time there was a conference called of all the senior officers. Col TOKUNAGA called a conference and General MALTBY told us that all senior officers had to be present at this conference.
- Q. Yesterday you testified that the rice issued was invariably sweepings from godowns, on what do you base this statement?
- A. On the fact that I had to eat it.
- Q. What was the method in which rice was distributed to the POWs? Did you ever see the distribution yourself?
- A. No, I did not see the distribution myself - the rice was brought in usually by monthly instalments and was distributed equally to messing officers and issued according to the strength of each hut.
- Q. Again yesterday you testified that there was only one European type latrine at ARGYLL Street Camp used by Senior Officers, what were the ranks of these senior officers?
- A. Yesterday I mentioned the ranks of these officers; they were down to my rank -- Lieut Col -- from Major downwards the men had to use Asiatic latrines.
- Q. How many senior officers were there?
- A. At least 30.
- Q. Who decided that this European type latrine should be used by the senior officers?
- A. General MALTBY.
- Q. Do you know what sort of drugs the POW Medical officers received from the Japanese.
- A. No, I was not a Medical Officer. All I know is that there were continued complaints that there were practically no drugs received at all.
- Q. Yesterday you testified that all medical matters were taken care of by POWs or POW doctors themselves, does that mean that the POW doctors treated POW patients and gave them medical examinations?
- A. Yes.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
Ref:	WO 235/1012 PT1
1	2
1	2

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.

- Q. Again yesterday you testified that Lt Col WHITE received punishments in place of somebody else; do you know when and what was the reason?
- A. There were so many occasions that I cannot detail them all but I do know that whenever anybody was beaten up by the sentries, if an individual interfered, he was beaten up as well. There is one instance I can remember when Lt SILVA was beaten and Lt Col WHITE intervened, he was taken to the guardroom and got beaten up by the guards for trying to interfere; that was only one, there were several other occasions.
- Q. Again yesterday you testified that Red Cross parcels at ARGYLL Street Camp were stolen by the Japanese; the Red Cross parcels that came in on the AMI MARU; did you witness such thefts; or can you give some facts about such thefts?
- A. I can -- immediately after the liberation, certain people who used to bring parcels to the camp mentioned the fact that the stuff which they kept bringing in was being sold in the shops. I might mention that parcels were not allowed into the Camp. It was obvious the Japanese authorities were selling these to the shops; some of the articles, I am told, even reached MACAO, articles such as "Old Gold" cigarettes. Also, we had news of this from KATAYAMA'S remarks that lots of parcels were coming in, but we never saw any of them. The type of parcels we received were the old English parcels to which I referred yesterday. Further, I would add, when I was in ARGYLL Camp, after the first parcels came in, someone reported to me, and to the Camp generally, that lots of empty tins, similar to those received in our parcels were lying in Col. TOKUNAGA'S backyard.
- Q. While you were in the Camp did you ever hear of a rumour that some of the POWs who received the Red Cross parcels sold or exchanged the parcels with the Guards or some outsiders?
- A. Not as regards food but I know that certain blankets that came in were sold by the sentries to get more food into the Camp.
- Q. Again yesterday you testified that POWs were treated more like criminals; do you mean that they were treated in the manner in which a Japanese treats a criminal or in which a British treats a criminal?
- A. We were all prisoners and we expected to be treated with the honours of war because we had fought against the Japanese and surrendered honourably, but we were treated as though we were in the hands of an uncivilized power. I would like to add, one of the privileges of prisoners is that we should be allowed to visit the Red Cross; this was disallowed because we knew that our captors were treating us badly and they did not want us to have contact with the outside world for fear the information would get out.
- Q. Finally I wish to ask Witness something about the good character of Lt TANAKA. What attitude did Lt TANAKA display towards POWs?
- A. Lt TANAKA came to us sometime when I was at ARGYLL Street Camp, I cannot remember when exactly; then I believe he went to the Indian camp where we heard rumours of very bad treatment by him of Indian POWs. He then came back to our Camp, which was then under the command of Col WHITE and Col WHITE told me, as one of the senior officers, that Lt TANAKA promised better treatment to the prisoners but I cannot say that it was ever noticeable. I would like to add that the only

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref:		1		In	
		WO 235 / 1012 PT1					
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.							

Commandant who appeared to listen to any of our demands at all was Lieut WADA. He occasionally came in to apologise after beating up instances of officers, and he was the only one, in our opinion, in the Officer's Camp who showed any disposition to behave well towards us.

Q. Some of the POWs that were working in the Medical room under Lt. TANAKA received extra labour rations, do you know anything about this?

A. No.

Q. Do you know anything about conferences under Lt TANAKA, with the senior POW officers, with regard to the better treatment of POWs?

A. Yes, I attended at least two of these conferences of senior officers at which Lt TANAKA, a Sgt Major, whose name I have forgotten, and the interpreter TAKIYAMA were present. In those conferences we put forth all our requests to Lt TANAKA, but the result again was practically Nil.

CROSS-EXAMINATION by Mr. HASEGAWA.

Q. Yesterday you testified that application for sending to hospital of Lt BOWKER was made and permission was granted, but for several days this Lt BOWKER was not sent to the hospital, do you know the reason why so many days passed?

A. The reason was because we could not get hold of Capt SAITO.

Q. By 'you could not get hold of Capt SAITO' does that mean that you yourself could not get in touch with Capt SAITO or the POW representative?

A. The POW Representative, General MALBY. Every day and after every parade; the morning and evening counts -- asked for Capt SAITO to come and see Lt BOWKER, and have him removed to hospital, with no result at all. Eventually a lorry came and took BOWKER away when it was too late.

Q. Then, when you made the request that you wanted to see Capt SAITO, did you also make the request that Lt BOWKER should be entered into the hospital immediately?

A. Yes, we did. General MALBY told the interpreter NIIMORI that it was an urgent case. Capt SAITO for some reason or the other ignored it.

Q. What sort of answer did you receive from the interpreter NIIMORI?

A. NIIMORI told General MALBY, "alright".

Q. You said that permission was already given by Capt SAITO to have the patient entered into hospital, was it that you were only waiting for transportation or did you have to receive permission again from Capt SAITO?

A. We never received the permission, we did not know that he was permitted to leave the Camp to go to hospital until the lorry arrived. I would like to add in connection with Capt SAITO that several of my officers died as a result of his negligence and immediately after Lt BOWKER'S death -- October 1942; the Japanese authorities decided to let us have our own hospital in the Camp. We thought perhaps maybe they were getting a bit scared.

Q. Yesterday as I heard your testimony you said that an application for the sending to hospital of a Lt BOWKER was made and permission was granted; by whom was this permission granted?

A. Permission was not granted until the lorry arrived; all we knew was a casual "Alright" from NIIMORI after each parade. NIIMORI said "alright" for several days before the lorry

1		2		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
cms		Ref.:		WO 235 / 1012 PT1	
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives Terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives leaflet		1		2	

arrived. There were lorries bringing rations in each day and if Capt SAITO wanted to meet our request and have BOWKER removed to hospital urgently, he could have easily sent him out in an empty ration lorry.

- Q. When Lt GUTERRES was sent to the hospital was permission immediately granted?
 A. No.
- Q. Until permission was granted were representations made daily?
 A. Every day and at every parade.
- Q. Were you informed of the reason why the immediate removal of a patient into hospital could not be made?
 A. No.
- Q. After the parades to whom were these representations made?
 A. The representations were made to the interpreter together with the Camp Commandant, whoever he was at the time, and a request was made to pass the message on to Capt SAITO. We never saw Capt SAITO. He never came near the Camp.
- Q. Again yesterday you testified that at a Weighing parade, after the parade was finished, you asked Capt SAITO to show you your last month's weight, and he took an indifferent attitude towards you and was in this way humiliating you. To whom did you make this request?
 A. Capt SAITO himself; the interpreter was sitting beside him.
- Q. Was the interpreter doing any interpreting?
 A. The interpreter could hear everything I had said and he heard that I had said that my hut had finished weighing and he could have told Capt SAITO if he wanted to, that I wanted to see the last month's weights. I was the last hut to be weighed and as soon as I made my request, Capt SAITO turned his back on me and slammed the weighing book shut.
- Q. At that time did the interpreter interpret your request to Capt SAITO?
 A. I do not remember.
- Q. Was the reason why you made the request to Capt SAITO on your last month's weight because you did not remember the figures?
 A. Yes.
- Q. Also, yesterday you testified that in August 1944 about two weeks before the BARNETT incident you received four parcels each of Red Cross goods from Canada, and because of the food in these parcels your weight, which was 134 lbs. at that time increased, within two weeks, to 145 lbs. Is that correct?
 A. Yes, that is true, and I have since found out from a Red Cross representative that parcels were sent in because he heard BARNETT shouting in English, French and German that we were being starved. On this occasion NIIMORI pushed BARNETT out of the hut to one side and to be handed over to Sgt HARADA to be beaten up.
- Q. I am not asking you about the BARNETT incident, I am asking you whether the statement you made yesterday is correct, i.e. two weeks after the BARNETT incident you received four parcels each of Red Cross goods, and your weight at that time was 134 lbs. and within two weeks' time it increased to 145 lbs. Is this statement correct?
 A. Perfectly correct.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	
Ref: WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

- Q. In this statement you remembered exactly your weight, i.e. 134 lbs. of two weeks before you received your parcels, then why was it that you did not remember your weight a month before when, for this reason you made a request to Capt SAITO.
- A. Because on the occasion that I made the request the machine was registering 20 lbs. more than the previous month and as I was the last hut and heard the commanders of the former huts talk about this, they asked me to check up on this. The machine was wrong and was weighing everybody 20 lbs. more than the previous month. My own weight was 20 lbs. more and I just could not believe it, so I wanted to check up on this.

RE-EXAMINATION BY PROSECUTION

- Q. From your observations, what was Capt SAITO'S knowledge of English?
- A. I really could not tell you.

Questions *rec*

EXAMINATION BY COURT

- Q. Were you present yourself at any of these requests made by General MALTBY to NIIMORI to have this information passed on to Lt SAITO?
- A. I was at the latter ones -- to see that the message was passed on -- but at the beginning General MALTBY made requests himself to Capt SAITO. May I explain this further, at the time of requests being made the Commanding Officers concerned were asked to stand near by so that the Camp Adjutant could call them up if they were required to answer questions by the Japanese.
- Q. In subsequent interviews between General MALTBY and NIIMORI did NIIMORI ever say anything which would give you to understand that he had passed on that message to Capt SAITO?
- A. No, in every case it was the usual non-committal "alright" with a wave of his hand.
- Q. Do you know of any case in which a sick POW was removed to the hospital without the sanction of Lt SAITO?
- A. No.
- Q. Just to clarify what you stated in your evidence about Lt Col WHITE, would it be correct in saying that Lt Col WHITE was struck on several occasions because he interfered or tried to protest against someone else being struck?
- A. That is correct.

COURT: Arising out of the questions that the Court has asked, do you wish to ask any further questions.

DEFENCE: No further questions.

Prosecution *No further questions* *rec*
 Court: The witness can stand down.
rec

rec
 WITNESS FOR PROSECUTION - Mr. PROPHET *having been duly sworn states* *rec*

Witness is sworn in.

- Q. Will you tell the Court your full name?
- A. My full name is DAVID IAN B PROPHET.
- Q. What is your occupation?
- A. Chartered Accountant.
- Q. Where do you live?
- A. 26, Conduit Road.

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref:		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES		Ins	
		WO 235 / 1012 PT1					

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

- Q. What is your nationality?
A. British.
- Q. I understand you were in the "ong Kong Volunteer Defence Corps and were taken prisoner by the Japanese at the capitulation of Hong Kong in 1941, is that correct?
A. That is so.
- Q. What was your rank in the Volunteer Corps?
A. Lieutenant.
- Q. What camp were you interned in?
A. I was first interned at NORTH POINT CAMP un til 23 January 1942, I was then moved to SHAMSHUIPO CAMP, and I remained there un til August 1945.
- Q. Can you identify the Accused?
A. I can -- in front -- Col TOKUNAGA,
in the row behind --
all from L to R TSUTADA, HARADA, TANAKA and SAITO.
- Q. Will you tell the Court how the Accused TSUTADA was referred to by the troops. What did they call him?
A. He was called "STODDA", spelt S-T-O-D-D-A, but in fact it was actually spelt TSUTADA.
- Q. Will you tell the Court what the conditions were in SHAMSHUIPO when you arrived there in January 1942?
A. As far as food was concerned we were on a diet mainly of rice; we had very few issues even of the poorest quality of Chinese vegetables. We had occasional issues of meat, pork meat and dried dates, but the actual issues of meat ceased in July 1942.
- Q. How were you employed when you were in the SHAMSHUIPO Camp?
A. When the officers left SHAMSHUIPO Camp in April 1942 for ARGYLL ROAD, I was kept behind at SHAMSHUIPO with two other officers in the Volunteers to look after that unit. In September 1942 Capt BATHER of the Middlesex Regt., who had been Staff Captain, had been drafted to Japan, I took over his duties.
- Q. Will you describe just briefly what those duties consisted of?
A. Mainly the duties were in preparing the morning parade statements for the Japanese and organizing the working parties.
- Q. What had you to do with the issue of food?
A. I had nothing to do with the actual issue of food.
- Q. What do you know about diseases in SHAMSHUIPO Camp?
A. In April 1942 it became apparent that the men were suffering very badly from malnutritional diseases. Cases of beri-beri were prevalent and another form of disease which we called "electric feet". We had many men in hospital who were suffering from this particular complaint and they went through real agonies because of it. All night long you would find these men walking up and down in their bare feet. Some of them nursed their feet by standing in cold water and stayed like that night and day so as to ease the suffering.
- Q. How long were the effects of this disease evident?
A. The effects of the disease were evident right throughout the Camp; it was alleviated to a certain degree through the Red Cross from whom we got suitable medicines, but I know of some men, in my own unit, who have returned to the Colony from repatriation leave, who are still suffering from this complaint.
- Q. Will you tell the Court what you know of other, if any, diseases.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235 / 1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.

- A. In August or September 1942 a very serious diphtheria epidemic broke out. We had many deaths in a very short period from this disease. I remember in one instance when I was officer-in-charge of a burial party, we had buried six men who had died from diphtheria the previous night.
- Q. What did the Japanese do about this epidemic of diphtheria?
- A. The Japanese did very little about it; they sent in small quantities of serum but not nearly sufficient to look after the large number of cases we had. As far as I remember, before the first lot of serum was brought in a great number of deaths had taken place before they could administer any of the drugs.
- Q. How and when was the serum sent in?
- A. At one time we received -- after the camp had been inspected by the senior Japanese Medical officer, we received a certain amount of serum. We had previously been told that there was no serum available in the colony but the Japanese were endeavouring to have it flown to the colony from Tokyo. On the particular day that this medical inspection took place the senior Japanese medical officer ordered that the serum should be brought in and we were told it was forthcoming immediately.
- Q. Who was this senior Japanese Medical Officer?
- A. I do not know his name -- to my knowledge he inspected the camp once -- I think he was a Major.
- Q. What have you to say about the conditions of the Camp hospital?
- A. The conditions of the hospital were deplorable; the men were accommodated in looted huts and many had not even beds to lie on. They had to be accommodated on concrete floors.
- Q. What inspections were made at this hospital?
- A. We had occasional inspections by the Red Cross people in Hong Kong. Late in 1942 the hospital was inspected by Mr. ZINDEL and a Red Cross representative who I believe had come from Japan. The Red Cross representative from Japan was aghast at the conditions in the general hospital. I was present on the inspection and he informed Col TOKUNAGA of this in my presence. He was told that occasionally men would come out and walk about outside and he told Col TOKUNAGA that these men would be very lucky if they would ever walk out at all.
- Q. What did the Camp Medical Officers do about these conditions-- I am speaking of the POW Medical Officers?
- A. They made repeated applications for drugs but very little was forthcoming.
- The Court will adjourn for five minutes at 11:30 a.m.
The Court re-assembles at 11:35 a.m.
- Q. You were saying what efforts were made by the medical authorities -- will you continue what you were telling us about?
- A. The medical officers were able to obtain considerable supplies of drugs through underground means.
- Q. What about the more legitimate means -- how would they obtain drugs from the Japanese?
- A. They could get practically nothing from the Japanese.
- Q. Do you know to whom requests were made for medical assistance?
- A. Requests were made to Dr SAITO.
- Q. And what was the response to these requests by Dr SAITO?
- A. Very little was received in reply to these requests.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235 / 1012 PT 1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' material

- Q. You mentioned in your statement about the Camp hospital. To your knowledge what other hospitals were there in Hong Kong?
- A. The BOWEN ROAD hospital.
- Q. What was the relationship between your hospital and the BOWEN ROAD hospital?
- Q. When the men were very sick in the Camp they ought to have been transferred to BOWEN ROAD hospital. When it was a case of urgency, application had to be made to Dr. SAITO for a man to be transferred but even in urgent cases the men had to wait in SHAMSHUIPO camp until a draft was made up and several men were sent over to BOWEN ROAD at once.
- Q. What was the effect of this method of transferring from one hospital to another on the POWs themselves?
- A. The effect was; in cases of urgency men who were very ill and could not be immediately transferred to BOWEN ROAD, had to wait sometimes for weeks until they could be shifted to BOWEN ROAD where they could get more adequate attention.
- Q. Yes, but can you say what the effect was of this delay on their condition?
- A. The delay naturally, due to the limited facilities which we had available for treating these cases, increased the suffering and was greatly detrimental to their health.
- Q. Are you able to tell the Court anything of the make-up and conditions of the working parties that were at the SHAMSHUIPO Camp?
- A. The Camp was called upon to provide certain numbers of men on working parties. We were seldom able to find sufficient fit men to detail for the work. If we had in sufficient fit men to complete the number for a working party, we had to detail un-fit men to make up the number.
- Q. Where were these men employed?
- A. In the early stages they were mainly employed working on the KIATAK AIRPORT.
~~KIATAK AIRPORT.~~
- Q. And can you indicate the length of the working day?
- A. The working day at Reveillé, during 1942, started about 4.30 in the morning. The men had their morning meal in the dark and it was still dark when they were mustered into the working parade. They were transported to KIATAK and brought back in the evening normally at about 8 o'clock at night. The result was they arrived back in Camp in the dark and had their evening meal again in the dark. This gave them no opportunity to attend to their personal needs such as washing and keeping themselves clean, and with the limited number of men that were available they had to go out working many days on end. In October 1942 we appealed to the Japanese to reduce the number on the working parties. At the time we had approximately 450 fit men available -- it was ultimately agreed the number on working parties should be reduced to the region of 300/350 to enable a man to get a day's rest; one day in four, to attend to his needs, but the decline in health was so rapid, at that stage, that by early December the number of fit men were reduced from 450 to less than 100. We were still compelled to provide a working party of 300 or over.
- Q. What was the result if you had only 100 men fit and were still required to send 300 or over?
- A. We were compelled to detail unfit men.
- Q. Will you tell the court what and how you know of anything respecting Red Cross parcels?
- A. When Red Cross

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref.
WO 235 / 1012 PT 1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

- A. When Red Cross parcels arrived in Camp I was responsible for detailing a party to unload the stores and put them in the godowns in the Camp.
- Q. What happened to these Red Cross parcels?
- A. When they were finally stored in the godowns in the Camp they were inspected by the Japanese and on occasions certain parcels were removed and taken to the Japanese Camp office.
- Q. And to whom were they delivered?
- A. They were delivered to Col TOKUNAGA,
- Q. Who was responsible for the removal of these Red Cross parcels that went to H.Q.
- A. At that time the parcels were still under the control of the Japanese and we had no authority to issue any to ourselves; they could only be taken away on the authority of Col TOKUNAGA.
- Q. What other facilities were there in SHAMSHUIPO CAMP for providing the fare that you were issued with by the Japanese?
- A. In the camp we had a canteen where you could buy things if you had the money. We also had a pig farm and a poultry farm. The stock for this pig and poultry farm was purchased from funds which were donated by people in the Camp.
- Q. What happened to the produce of this pig and poultry farm?
- A. As far as the eggs were concerned, according to orders from the Japanese, 150 had to be issued to the Camp hospital; the balance could be sold to the men in Camp at 30 cents each. The hospital seldom got their allocation of 150 eggs and the men got few, if any.
- Q. Who did get the produce then?
- A. The price of eggs in the Camp was 30 cents each -- the price of eggs in the colony was in the region of 1 yen each, so the Japanese purchased their eggs from the Camp at 30 cents each.
- Q. When you say the 'Japanese' who did this comprise?
- A. They were mainly taken delivery of by an interpreter called NIIMORI for delivery, I believe, to Col TOKUNAGA.
- Q. What became of the produce of the pig farm?
- A. A certain amount of the produce of the pig farm was provided to the Camp but a considerable number of pigs were taken by the Japanese.
- Q. When was this produce of the pig farm supplied to the Japanese?
- A. It had to be supplied when they asked for it.
- Q. What about personal parcels, what do you know about them?
- A. Mainly, personal parcels which arrived from abroad were for Canadian officers and men.
- Q. Do you know what happened to those parcels sent to the Canadians?
- A. They were delivered to the officers and men under the direct supervision of Col TOKUNAGA and his staff. I understand particularly in the case of the men, four parcels were delivered and certain of the contents was taken out.
- Q. Why were certain ~~xxxix~~ articles removed?
- A. For the benefit of Col TOKUNAGA and his staff.

1		2		1		2	
cms						ins	
Ref:				WO 235/1012 PT1			
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.							

- Q. You identified TSUTADA at the beginning of your evidence what have you got to say about him?
- A. TSUTADA (STODDA) was an interpreter at SHAMSHUIPO, during the greater part of the time that I was there. He was always regarded as rather a dangerous individual because of his perfect knowledge of English.
- Q. In what way was he dangerous?
- A. In talking amongst ourselves he understood perfectly what was said -- he has much above the average intelligence of the Japanese and therefore one had to be very careful.
- Q. In your opinion, what was his attitude toward individual POWs?
- A. The only thing I know against STODDA in that connection is an episode one day when he slapped Capt OTTWAY of the Royal Engineers.
- Q. What did he slap him for?
- A. One day when Capt OTTWAY'S unit was mustered he reported to STODDA the number was correct but on counting it was found that one man was missing.
- Q. Do you remember Lt CLAGUE of the R.A.?
- A. Lt CLAGUE of the Royal Artillery was one of the party who escaped from C camp in 1942.
- Q. Who were the others?
- A. Lt PEARCE and Sgt BOSUNGAY.
- Q. What became of them?
- A. They escaped into Free China.
- Q. Who was Lt T.A. PEARCE?
- A. Lt T.A. PEARCE is brother of the Lt PEARCE who escaped.
- Q. What do you know about his relationship to this escape?
- A. After the escape, LT PEARCE was taken out of the Camp by some others to SHAMSHUIPO Police station, which was in the vicinity of the Camp. I believe that when he was cross-examined at that Police Station, STODDA acted as interpreter.
- Q. What do you know about Gunner COTTON?
- A. Gunner COTTON was a man in my unit. COTTON came to me one day and told me STODDA offered him some work to do. He found out the nature of the work was to spy on his fellow prisoners and report any of their activities to him. I suggested to COTTON the best thing he could do was to go straight back to STODDA and tell him he was not prepared to do this and to take the consequences. He told me after he had done this he was beaten as a result.
- Q. Who did he say beat him?
- A. I believe it was STODDA.
- Q. I understand you have a diary in your own handwriting which you kept while you were in SHAMSHUIPO, have you got it with you?
- A. I have.
- Q. Will you refer to your entry on the 7th February 1942 and tell the Court what it comprises?
- A. Shall I read it?

COURT: Are you putting this document in as an Exhibit?

PROSECUTOR: Being his personal diary which was maintained at Camp I don't think Witness intends submitting it to the Court unless it is necessary to do so.

1		2		1		2	
cma		Ref:		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES		1	
		WO 235/1012 PT1				ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.

COURT: If Witness is not putting in the document as an Exhibit he cannot be allowed to read its contents, *he may only refresh his memory by referring to it.*

PROSECUTOR: In that case I will re-word my question:

Q. Will you tell the Court what occurred on the 7th of February 1942?

A. During that day the sentries were shooting indiscriminately at any Chinese or sampan women who were approaching anywhere near the Camp.

Q. What was the result of this shooting?

A. In that particular instance, I cannot say if any of these people were killed. There is one instance I can recall, however. A young Chinese girl was quietly picking shell fish on the beach quite close to the camp.

Q. Can you say approximately when this incident which you are going to relate occurred?

A. It would be about the same time.

Q. Was the incident you are going to relate before the 24th of January 1942 -- if it was before the 24th of January it would be irrelevant?

A. It certainly could not have been before because I did not arrive in SHAMSHUIPO until late on the 23rd and it was certainly sometime after that date.

Q. Will you proceed then.

A. The girl was shot at by the sentry and after more than one shot she was killed.

Q. What happened on the 19th of March 1942?

A. On that date a number of Chinese civilians were brought into the camp by the Japanese. They were taken to a pier in the camp which was commonly known as Bamboo Pier. There they were bayoneted or shot.

Q. What occurred on the 27th of March 1942?

A. The same thing occurred.

Q. Will you clarify this 'same thing'?

A. Chinese civilians were again brought into the camp by the Japanese, taken to bamboo pier and bayoneted or shot.

on all
EXAMINATION-IN-CHIEF ended.

QUESTIONS BY COURT:

Q. Did you see by whom these Chinese were brought in -- you say they were brought in by Japanese but who were these Japanese?

A. Japanese troops, I could not say who they were.

Q. You could not say whether they were guards or sentries and whether they belonged to your camp?

A. No sir.

Q. With regard to the episode of the girl being shot on the beach -- did you see who did that?

A. She was shot by a sentry in the Camp.

Q. By a sentry in your camp?

A. Yes.

COURT: Mr. Fujita, if you wish to examine the document to which witness has referred you are entitled to do so.

The Court is adjourned until 1400 hours.

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref:		1		In	
		WO 235/1012 PT1					

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' material.

/13

At 1400 hrs. on 5 December the Court re-assemble pursuant to adjournment; present the same Members as at adjournment.

WITNESS FOR THE PROSECUTION - Mr. PROPNET

Cross Examination *by Mr. FOSTER RCL*

Q. Were you ever in charge of the raising of pigs and poultry at SHAMSHUIPO Camp?

A. No.

Q. Where was the food that was given to the pigs and poultry received from?

A. The food received by the pig and poultry farm was any food unused by the prisoners in camp.

Q. Could you give the approximate figure of the number of pigs and poultry in the farm?

A. I believe at one time there were up to 80 pigs with young.

COURT: Do you mean there were 80 pigs including their young?

A. Including their young, already born.

Q. Could you give the approximate number of fowls?

A. I would say approximately 150.

Q. This morning you testified that some of the contents of the personal parcels that were sent to the POWs were taken away by the Japanese. Did you witness this yourself?

A. I witnessed seeing a party who had carried them to the Japanese camp office.

Q. Do you know where the contents of these parcels were taken out?

A. From the Japanese camp office I do not know where they went.

Q. You just said you saw some of the Japanese take out some of the contents of these parcels; where did you witness this?

A. Is he not referring, Sir, to the Canadian parcels?

COURT: I think he is referring to the second lot of parcels.

Q. *Was any RCL* Personal parcels from Canada?

A. Yes. As I said in evidence this morning I did not witness that but we were ~~was~~ told by the officers and men who had received these parcels that some of the contents had been taken.

Q. Do you know of the list compiled by the Japanese concerning certain items that were not allowed to the POWs in these parcels?

A. I have no knowledge of that.

Q. You also testified that Lt. ^{TR RCL} ~~ORDWAY~~ received a beating; did you know when this happened?

A. I believe I have a note in my diary.

COURT: You may refer to your diary if you like.

A. (Consulting diary) On August 1942.

Q. Besides TSUTADA were there any others from the Japanese side? On parade that day ~~at the evening?~~ *RCL*

1		2		1		2	
cms		Rel:		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES		Ins	
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' material.		WO 235/1012 PT1					

113

- Q. ~~At the beating?~~ ^Q
- A. No one else, apart from a sentry, no Japanese officer.
- Q. At that time was a Japanese officer present at the parade?
- A. As far as I remember, no.
- Q. That means that only TSUTADA was at that parade?
- A. With sentries, that often happened.
- Q. You testified that PEARCE and some other POWs were interrogated at the police station. Were you present?
- A. No.
- Q. Then how do you know that TSUTADA was the Interpreter at that time?
- A. I was told so by Lt. PEARCE.
- Q. About the incident that you referred to in your diary which happened on 7 February 1942. Do you know the approximate time that this incident happened?
- A. I cannot tell you the approximate time.
- Q. Did it happen in the morning or afternoon?
- A. Some of the shooting happened at night and some in the morning.
- Q. The soldiers that fired the shots, do you know what unit they belonged to?
- A. To the guards of camp.
- Q. Then, about the soldiers that fired during the night, do you know what unit they belonged to?
- A. Shots were fired from the camp.
- Q. At that time what hut were you accommodated in, in relation to the camp?
- A. In JUBILEE Building.
- Q. On what floor?
- A. I think the third floor, the flat was No. 25.
- Q. Do you know whether a Japanese unit which had no relation to the POWs was situated near the camp?
- A. Not to my knowledge. In front of JUBILEE Building there could be no other unit situated except the camp guards because JUBILEE Building on that side is right on the waterfront.
- Q. With relation to the camp as a whole, were there any other units in the vicinity?
- A. I do not know.
- Q. Was there not an MP company of the Kempeitai in the vicinity?
- A. I do not know.

Cross Examination (by Mr. HASEGAWA)

- Q. You testified that after a high-ranking senior Japanese medical officer with the rank of a Major inspected the camp you received some Red Cross parcels. Could you give the approximate date?
- A. I think there is some mistake there.

COURT: Witness said ^{any} he received supplies of serum in Red Cross parcels ^{after the visit of this high ranking Japanese officer} ^Q

DEFENCE: I mean the diphtheria serum.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cm	Ref:
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.

/18

WITNESS: Sir, I think I might have the date if I referred to my diary, or I might not.

COURT: ^{Will you} Would you refer to it?

A. No, I do not have the exact date; it would be August ~~20~~ September, 1942.

Q. What was the quantity of the serum you received at that time?
A. I do not know the exact quantity.

Q. Do you know the position which this high-ranking Japanese medical officer held? What sort of work do you think he did?
A. That day he was merely inspecting the hospital.

Q. What do you think was the relation of this medical officer with the Accused SAITO?
A. I presume he was his senior officer.

Q. You testified that as a result of an order from this high-ranking medical officer diptheria serum was supplied to the POWs. Do you think that at the time the Accused SAITO could have done more?
A. I do not follow the question.

Q. You said that as a result of this high-ranking medical officer's orders an insufficient supply of serum was given to the POWs. At that time as the Accused SAITO was lower in rank to this medical officer, do you think he could have done anything more than this high-ranking officer?
A. Our medical officers I understand had been told by Dr. SAITO that there was no serum available in the colony for the POWs but the day that this high-ranking officer came to the camp and inspected the hospital, within a short time serum was made available.

Q. Then, before this time was not any serum supplied?
A. In very small quantities.

Q. This morning you also testified that the POWs were able to buy in an underground way a large quantity of medical drugs from outside. Were the POWs able to buy diptheria serum in this way?
A. I cannot tell if they definitely could buy diptheria serum.

Q. You mean that you do not know whether such serum was bought or not?
A. By the medical officers in the camp, I do not know if that particular item was bought by them.

Q. Also this morning you testified that no medical drugs were received from the Japanese; during what period was this?
A. I did not testify that none was received.

COURT: Witness only said very few drugs were received.

(No more questions)

Re-Examination Declined.

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref:		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES		line	
		WO 235/1012 PT1					

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.

QUESTIONED BY THE COURT:

- Q. There are ^{two or three} two points the Court would like to be clear about. First of all, this high-ranking Japanese officer that came, had he ever been to the camp before in this connexion?
- A. Not to my knowledge.
- Q. Did he ever come again?
- A. Not to my knowledge, again.
- Q. Did you get any indication as to where he came from or what his appointment was?
- A. No.
- Q. How soon after his visit to the camp did this further supply of serum arrive?
- A. As far as I remember, the same day. At the latest the following day.
- Q. Did you see the containers of the serum when it came?
- A. No.
- Q. With regard to ~~these~~ shooting episodes about which you testified, you testify to 3 episodes. First of all when the girl was shot on the beach and then on 2 separate occasions, when parties of Chinese were brought in from outside and taken to the bamboo ~~patch~~ ^{area} and shot. Did you actually see them being brought in yourself?
- A. In one case I saw them being brought in; in the other case of the civilians ~~too~~ I saw them shot. As for the girl on the beach I saw the body lying there immediately after and it lay there for several days.
- Q. You have told the Court in answer to a question from the Court that the people who brought the Chinese civilians in were Japanese troops, but that they were not guards from your camp.
- A. Not necessarily guards. They may have been but I could not say. They were Japanese troops.
- Q. Does that refer to both occasions on which civilians were brought in?
- A. On one occasion I saw them, on the other I did not.
- Q. So you are not prepared to swear that the Japanese troops who shot the two lots of civilians were guards from your camp?
- A. I am not prepared to swear to that.
- Q. Are you prepared to swear that the events in your diary to which you have referred, that you recollect they were accurately entered at the time?
- A. Yes.
- Q. You have stated that when there were not sufficient ~~numbers~~ of fit men to make up the quota called for in your working parties you were forced to send out men who were not fit. How were you forced? Who issued such an order forcing you to do this?
- A. The Japanese issued the order that we had to provide so many men for a working party. This was issued to us through the senior officer of the camp, that we had to provide so many men. If we could not provide the men we said so and were told we had to produce that number of men.
- Q. Who gave you that order?
- A. The Japanese.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	
Ref: WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives leaflet.

117

- Q. What Japanese? Can you say who it was? Was it the Interpreter, the Camp Commandant or who?
- A. The Camp Commandant.
- Q. Were protests made against this?
- A. Yes.
- Q. To who were these protests made?
- A. Protests were made by the various unit officers to the senior British officer in our camp who relayed the protest to the Japanese.
- Q. What effect did these protests have?
- A. None.
- Q. Could you tell the Court what effect this going out to working parties had on men who were unfit?
- A. We found generally speaking that if a man went out more than 5 days running without a rest he would invariably break down. For a fit man we reckoned 5 days at a stretch was the absolute maximum.
- Q. What would be the effect on a man who was rated as unfit but still had to go out to fill up the quota?
- A. His health declined very definitely.

(No more questions by the Defence or Prosecution etc)

10th X
ref WITNESS FOR THE PROSECUTION - Sgt. Major LEWIS.

On being sworn is examined by the Prosecutor.

- Q. Will you tell the Court your full name?
- A. Frederick William John LEWIS.
- Q. What is your rank?
- A. Warrant Officer, Class II.
- Q. Your corps?
- A. Royal Artillery.
- Q. Your age?
- A. 34.
- Q. What nationality are you?
- A. English.
- Q. Where are you presently employed?
- A. HQ Land Forces.
- Q. I understand that you were taken prisoner by the Japanese in December 1941. Will you tell the Court where you were interned and for how long?
- A. I was captured on 25 December 1941; I was interned at North Point POW Camp for 3 weeks and from then on till 15 August 1945 in SHAM SHUI PO Camp.
- Q. Will you confine your remarks to experiences in SHAM SHUI PO leaving out reference to North Point Camp. Will you tell the Court what the conditions were in SHAM SHUI PO Camp when you arrived?

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	
Ref:	
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

118

- A. Generally speaking conditions in SHAM SHUI PO were appalling. When I arrived there the place was absolutely bare of anything that could have been removed. There were no water fittings, no beds, no windows or doors. No attempt was made by the Japanese to provide better food to which the Japanese brought in - it was not food at all. In one period in the first 6 months there were 34 consecutive days when there was nothing but rice. The sanitary conditions were unbelievable. There were 3 sets of latrines with 12 seats each to serve 7,000 men. The majority of people who went into camp had absolutely no personal possessions, clothes or blankets and no attempt was made, as far as I remember, for the first nine months for any to be provided.
- Q. How many British troops were there you say?
A. I should say at a very near guess about 7,000. They included volunteers, civil policemen, dockyard policemen and anybody who might be called troops.
- Q. What was the normal capacity of SHAM SHUI PO Camp?
A. The normal peace-time capacity was about 2,000.
- Q. How did you estimate that, on what authority?
A. I was here before the war and I had occasion to go to SHAM SHUI PO quite a lot.
- Q. You were saying that the sanitary conditions were inadequate and so on. Will you continue?
A. The hospital, if I might call it such, hospital arrangements were absolutely shocking. There were epidemics of dysentery and all wards of the hospital were in one small building with absolutely no sanitary conveniences at all except two open buckets.
- Q. How do you know that?
A. I was in there.
- Q. In what capacity were you there?
A. As a Patient. In connexion with that I might say when I went in to SHAM SHUI PO I weighed 210 lbs. After 9 months I weighed 102.
- Q. Will you tell the Court what you know of the rations that were issued by the Japanese?
A. In the very beginning of the camp the ration was rice and a very small quantity of green vegetables. That continued up till about May 1942.
- Q. How much rice did you get?
A. It started off if I remember correctly at 24 ozs per day but it was not a very good quality. Gradually it decreased until about May or June to 18 ozs. From then right up to the middle of 1945 it dwindled down to 9 ozs. After May 1942 we had some meat; (it worked out to 2 ozs 3 times a week) and that lasted for 3 months. From then up till June 1945 we had no meat of any description except Red Cross stuff. After May 1942 we had about one ounce of fresh fish a week and that lasted for about 9 months or a year. Sugar and salt the quantities were not worth talking about. Animal fats we had none at all. Peanut oil I think worked out at an average of an ounce a week per man. Fresh vegetables, very poor quality, averaged about 3 to 4 ozs a head per day, when we got them. Dry tea I think we were issued with one lot only and that was in the middle of 1942. Thereafter we depended on Red Cross supplies.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

119

- Q. Will you tell the Court what you know about diseases in the camp?
- A. The first really bad outbreak of disease was in the summer of 1942. That outbreak of dysentery was caused mostly by the appalling sanitary conditions, both inside and outside the camp. The hospital facilities were almost non-existent. Drugs, as far as I remember the only thing supplied for the treatment of dysentery was a German brand of filter powder used for cleaning water. The hospital itself was a small building which had been a Sergeants' Mess and this place was absolutely filthy from top to bottom. People were cramped inside this building and Dr. SAITO, as far as I know, never came near the place. The place leaked, there were no windows or doors, no sanitary arrangements, no medicine and no drugs. In point of fact for all it was worth the people may have been lying on the main square and left there they would have been equally well treated. After about March 1943 the hospital was enlarged in the area on the other side of the road and I believe it was through the efforts of the International Red Cross Committee that doors and windows were provided.
- Q. Let us get back to the diseases. What disease did you say occurred in July 1942?
- A. Dysentery was the first one. The next one after that, some time in September or October there was a very bad epidemic of diptheria.
- Q. Were you in the hospital at that time?
- A. No I was not at the hospital at the time but we could not help notice of it. The hospital had not been improved; dysentery patients were mixed up with diptheria patients. It was only after very strong pressure that diptheria patients were moved out to JUBILEE Building.
- Q. To your knowledge, what were the steps taken by the Japanese to combat this diptheria epidemic?
- A. To the best of my knowledge, very little. They provided, I believe, enough serum for 10 patients and our doctors were ~~forced~~ faced with the problem of saving some while others died.
- Q. How many patients were there, to your knowledge?
- A. To the best of my knowledge there were about 150 to 200 diptheria patients.
- Q. You are talking of diptheria and dysentery. What other diseases, if any, were evident in the camp?
- A. Beri-beri, pellagra, mal-nutrition, septic sores. A lot I believe were suffering from bad eye trouble, heart trouble, in fact nearly everything I can think of.
- Q. What was the evidence of the beri-beri you speak of in people?
- A. The evidence of what we used to call "wet" beri-beri. First of all the ankles were swollen and assumed massive proportions from the ankles upwards, just like a big bladder blown up. What we used to call "dry" beri-beri was a severe aching in the feet as though someone was trying to put 6,000 volts through one's feet.
- Q. What did you call that commonly?
- A. Electric feet.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235 / 1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.

120

- Q. What was your observation of the effect of electric feet on ~~sufferers~~ ^{sufferers from it}?
- A. The effect on grown men was heart-breaking. I have seen grown men sit down and cry through sheer agony and it had the effect over a fairly long period of taking all control and feeling out of the legs. Watching one suffering from electric feet was just like watching a drunken man trying to walk in a straight line.
- Q. What was the attitude of the Japanese towards sickness generally?
- A. It was almost non-existent. I think the only interest they took was to send a wreath for some poor unfortunate chap's funeral.
- Q. Who was in charge of the medical affairs among the Japanese?
- A. Capt. SAITO.
- Q. Where is Capt. SAITO?
- A. Right in front of me. Capt. SAITO is sitting in front of me now. I recognize him as the officer who was supposed to have been in charge of the camp, medically speaking.
- PROSECUTOR: Do you require any more identification than that?
- COURT: Will you indicate where he is sitting in the dock?
- A. The man on the right facing me, the first man.
- Q. Will you tell me what clothing you had during your stay in the camp?
- A. The clothing I went into camp with was summer drill. As far as my memory serves me I had two pairs of trousers, a pair of shorts, two shirts and a pull-over. I had one blanket and no overcoat. I finished up on 18 August 1945 having one pair of shorts which was nothing but patches, the shirt was the same. I had no shoes, no footwear, two blankets and that was all.
- Q. What did you receive from the Japanese?
- A. I think altogether I received from the Japanese two blankets two pairs of shorts and a shirt.
- Q. How did this compare with your requirements?
- A. There was no comparison at all with any one's requirements; we were forced to work in the wet weather with no covering, greatcoats or mackintoshes, forced to work in the hot sun with no head-gear.
- Q. What stocks of clothing were available?
- A. As far as I know here immediately prior to December 1941 there was enough clothing and kit to clothe a complete garrison of HONG KONG for at least a year. That was at full peacetime scale.
- Q. Have you any knowledge of the International Red Cross?
- A. As far as I remember the first shipment of Red Cross supplies, both food and clothes, arrived here in either August or September 1942. Among the clothing there were various articles, the ones at the moment I can remember most were what we used to call "wind-breakers", a sort of sweater.
- Q. Leaving for a moment the question of Red Cross supplies, what do you know about the Red Cross organisation in the colony?
- A. As far as I am aware, judging by the number of times Red Cross delegates visited the camp, it must have been completely under the Japan eye.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref.
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

129

- Q. How many visits were there from these Red Cross people?
 A. To the best of my memory, five.
- Q. 5 in how long?
 A. 3 years and 8 months.
- Q. When they visited the camp what did they do?
 A. They were escorted around the camp to carefully selected places by Col. TOKUNAGA. They were allowed to speak to no one. The camp kitchen, as far as I remember was one of the places and another was the hospital.
- Q. What communications did they have?
 A. None whatsoever.
- Q. How would you account for the fact that you had no communications?
 A. The Red Cross representative if he wanted to talk of anything would speak to a Japanese Interpreter but no communication was ever allowed by him to the prisoners or from the prisoners to him. In point of fact the only people who did manage to speak to him were rather severely beaten up afterwards.
- Q. What, if any, Japanese would accompany the Red Cross officials on these tours of inspection?
 A. Lt. TANAKA who I believe was Col. TOKUNAGA's Adjutant, Dr. SAITO, the Camp Commandant and the Guard Commander and usually two Interpreters.
- Q. Where is Lt. TANAKA now?
 A. The second man from the right in the dock.
- Q. Where is Col. TOKUNAGA?
 A. He is the man sitting by himself in the front row.
- Q. You were speaking a moment ago about Red Cross supplies. What have you got to say about that generally, to your own knowledge?
 A. The Japanese had first pick of anything that came into the colony from the Red Cross.
- Q. Do you know what quantity of Red Cross supplies there were?
 A. I know from my own personal experience that 2 items the Japanese had, one was cigarettes and the other milk.
- Q. You misunderstood my question. I want to know how much of it there was. To your own knowledge have you any idea of the quantity of these supplies?
 A. The first lot that came into the colony I understand was a thousand tons altogether. That was in the autumn of 1942.
- Q. Where were they stored? ^{RCL}
 A. This lot was stored in what was ^{called GUN CLUB RCL} GUNKA Hill Barracks, KOWLOON.
- Q. How do you know about that?
 A. Because I have seen it stored there myself.
- Q. On what occasions have you seen it stored there?
 A. I went on a working party one day to bring ^{some RCL} several from there back to camp.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref.
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	ins

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' material.

122

- Q. What did you observe when you were there with regard to these stores?
- A. For one thing, the Japanese were going through the cases with bayonets looking for things they liked. If they stuck a bayonet into a tin they did not like they just threw it away. That is how they kept on. I have seen tins and tins of stuff thrown away and no one dared pick them up.
- Q. Can you tell the Court who these Japanese were that you saw sticking bayonets into tins?
- A. None of the people here today was there.
- Q. That is a negative answer. Who were they?
- A. The guards and I presume ~~they~~ ^{there are} were store men of sorts.
- Q. What do you mean by "guards"?
- A. Japanese guards who were guarding the place themselves for one thing, and our own guards for another and some of these civilian soldiers of the Japanese Army.
- Q. Have you any other information to give the Court about Red Cross supplies in relation to the Japanese?
- A. One day late in 1943 I was on a working party, about 6 of us, and we went into Col. TOKUNAGA's house and in the absence of any Japanese, the amah produced us a cup of cocoa each and a tin of milk which was plainly marked "B.R.C.S." She produced something else which no one in the camp had seen for a long time - English cigarettes. As far as I remember in April 1944 we had a very small supply of Red Cross stuff sent to us. The first parcels to come out of the camp store went into Col. TOKUNAGA's car. I believe he owned at that time a yellow car and sported a blue flag. ^{which are}
- Q. Before proceeding with that, get back to this house you spoke of. Do you know where that was?
- A. Yes it was in FORFAR Road I believe the name was.
- Q. (Showing witness album of photographs). I will show you Exhibit H(4). Will you tell the Court if you recognize any of these pictures?
- A. It is No. 7; that is the place where I was.
- Q. Do you recognize any other place?
- A. Yes I recognize No. 8 as well.
- Q. You said you recognize the picture No. 7 and meant by that the house you went to. What did you see there on that occasion?
- A. Immediately after the surrender we paid a visit to this place and the back area was nothing but a litter of tins which held Red Cross supplies.
- Q. What else did you find there after the surrender?
- A. The next instance I can remember, immediately on the surrender on 17 or 18 August two crates of Red Cross medicine supplies were taken out of the Camp Commandant's house which was situated in the corner of the camp and brought into the camp for use.
- Q. Will you tell the Court what you know about the working parties and the conditions they worked under?
- A. The first really big working party which the Japanese organized was the working party which took part in the enlargement of KAI TAK aerodrome and this consisted of an average daily strength of 300 to 400 which were found from the camp.

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.

1

2

Ref:

WO 235/1012 PT1

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES

1

ins

2

123

- Q. Are you able to state who was responsible for the organization of the party?
- A. The orders emanated from Col. TOKUNAGA's HQ and they came to the camp via the Japanese Camp Commandant and their own liaison staff officer.
- Q. You say from 300 to 400 men a day? How long did these men work?
- A. The left camp usually between half past five and half past six in the morning and arrived back between 8 and 9 o'clock in the evening.
- Q. How do you know this?
- A. It was impossible not to know it.
- Q. I want you to tell the Court how you know it - we must have it expressly stated.
- A. I want on this working party myself for a fortnight and then gave up, or they gave me up.
- Q. How was the party made up? You had 300 to 400 men, who were these men?
- A. It was composed of the fit men, the not-so-fit and those who were sick. Some people could hardly see, some had hardly strength to walk and some were carried on stretchers.
- Q. What were the conditions on the site of the work itself?
- A. Bad, very bad. We had one of our own medical orderlies go with us and we had no medicines; consequently it was useless. There was one small hut provided for people who were blinded by the sun and that was about all. With regard to the work itself, the party was split up in gangs and each gang was given a certain job of work to do and they had to do it.
- Q. What about food, what food did you get on these parties?
- A. Just the usual camp ration with perhaps one or two ozs of rice extra and a small piece of bread.
- Q. How did that compare with your requirements as a working man?
- A. Personally I could eat about 5 or 6 times as much as that and still feel hungry.
- Q. What type of work did you do on these working parties?
- A. I have dug tunnels, I have man-handled 500 kilo aerial bombs and I have shifted millions of 50-gallon drums of petrol, cases and cases of small arms. I have dug HAPPY VALLEY. In fact I have done just about everything I should not have done.
- Q. What do you mean when you say that?
- A. It was part of my business to know the Manual of Military Law and in that manual is contained the HAGUE Convention and I think I have sufficient intelligence to know what I should have done.
- Q. Why do you say you have done something you should not have done?
- A. The Convention states that POWs will not be worked on anything which directly or indirectly contributes to any of the enemy's war effort.

At 1600 hrs. the Court adjourn till 1000 hrs.
on Friday 6 December, 1946.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref.
WO 235 / 1012 PT 1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' material.

No. 5 WAR CRIMES COURT

EIGHTH DAY'S proceedings of the trial of Col TOKUNAGA ISAO, Capt SAITO SHUNKICHI, Lieut. TANAKA HITOSHI, Interpreter TSUTADA and Sgt HARADA JOTARO, of the Imperial Japanese Army.

(Held at Jardine Matheson's East Point Godown on ~~Thursday~~ Friday, December 6th 1946).

The Court assembled at 1000 hours

all ¹⁰⁻⁴ *With* ~~ess~~ for PROSECUTION - Sgt Maj LEWIS

EXAMINATION IN CHIEF (Cont.)

all ^{Cont} Will you remember Sgt Maj LEWIS that you are still bound by the oath which you took yesterday.

Q. When we adjourned yesterday you were telling the Court about conditions in the working party -- will you tell us, from your memory, what number was required on these working parties in 1944 and 1945?

A. The average number varied between 300 and 350.

Q. I am speaking of 1944 and 1945 now specifically; can you say how many POWs were in the camp at that time?

A. In 1944 I estimate there were about 1500 other ranks and by August 1945 the number had gone down to 950.

Q. How many of these were sick?

A. I should say about 20% were permanently sick and a further 45% were invalids more or less.

Q. When you say 20% were permanently ill is that 20% of the working party or of the whole camp?

A. 20% of the total number of the camp.

Q. 20% plus 45% were either permanently ill or somewhat invalidated as you say -- of the 300 to 350 who made up the working party, how many of these would be among that 65%?

A. Approximately 280.

Q. That's about 90%.

A. Yes, easily.

Q. What type of work had these men to do during 1944/1945?

A. The work of the POWs may be classified under three main groups. They were: 1) digging tunnels; 2) transporting and manhandling drums of petrol; 3) shifting and storing ammunition.

Q. What did this ammunition consist of?

A. Bombs, fuses and small arms mostly.

Q. What was the approximate weight of these petrol drums?

A. Approximately 500 lbs each.

Q. What about the bombs, what did they weigh?

A. The bombs varied from 50 to 500 kilos.

Q. Of these working parties, in the latter ^{stages} ~~years~~ of the work, how were they shod?

A. Very badly; I don't think there was one good pair of boots or shoes in the whole of the camp; men had old shoes tied with pieces of string; rubber slippers, and in some cases, what we used to call Chinese clogs.

Q. What was the state of their clothing -- shirts and trousers and so on?

A. The general condition of clothing was also bad; some

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref.		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES		Ins	
		WO 235/1012 PT1					

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

people had no shirts; some shirts which were nothing but patches; some had shirts full of holes without patches -- shorts full of holes -- there was no decent headgear for protection against the sun and no protection against the rain or the cold.

Q. What about the feeding arrangements of these working parties in 1944/1945?

A. The working parties were given mixed rice and vegetables.

Q. What was the quality of the mixed rice and vegetables which you received?

A. The quality was rather bad -- the food provided had very little sustaining power and merely served to fill up the hole.

Q. What about the quantity?

A. The quantity averaged about 8 ozs to 10 ozs?

Q. 8 or 10 ozs for how long?

A. We usually started work about 8 in the morning.

Q. Did you get 10 ozs per meal or per day -- for what period would the 10 ozs sustain you?

A. Three meals -- 7 in the morning, which was a very meagre meal -- breakfast and it had to last us until 6 or 7 at night.

Q. How adequate was it to meet your needs?

A. Totally inadequate.

Q. Who was in charge of detailing work on the working parties?

A. The people actually in charge of the work were members of the units who were detailed off to do a job.

Q. POWS?

A. Yes -- the actual system, so far as I can make out, was that orders used to come in from Japanese A.Q. saying that a certain number of men would be required for a working party; this would pass through the Japanese Camp Commandant then to our office and the work would be detailed there. Actually, the Japanese supervised and we did the work.

Q. What was the attitude of these Japanese supervisors towards the POWs who were working.

A. In a great majority of cases they were nothing but slave drivers.

Q. You spoke of tunnelling activities, ^{suppose all} ~~was~~ ^{what} means of precaution ^{was} taken in this tunnelling?

A. I am not exactly a mining expert, but the safety arrangements which were provided were almost useless. It consisted of two ~~one~~ wooden props with a wooden slab across the top in the set of tunnels in Kowloon. There were three collapses in one afternoon -- there was no roof or side wallings.

Q. Do you know what was done about these conditions?

A. A member of one of the working parties -- a Dutchman went up to the Camp office and complained 1) about the work, and 2) about safety precautions. He was badly beaten up by the Japanese.

Q. Who was the Commander-in-Chief of the POW Camp in Hong Kong?

A. Col TOKUNAGA.

Q. Where is he now?

A. The man sitting by himself in the front row.

Q. From your observation what was his policy toward the POWs?

A. From my own personal experience I should imagine the whole Japanese Camp Staff's attitude was one of disregard; all they worried about was if one man died there would be one less to feed.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235 / 1012 PT 1	
1	2
ins	ins

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives material.

That's all there was to it. Col TOKUNAGA must have known what was going on. He made inspections once every two to three months so he could not help noticing what was going on.

Q. What did he do about the conditions which he saw?
A. The only thing he did was to make promises which he never kept.

Q. As Commander-in-chief of men under his command, how did he administer to the camp; that is from the POW point of view?

A. From the point of view of POWs, there was no administration at all; we were just kept under a subjection of threats and mass punishments.

Q. How did he make known what he considered should be the conduct of the POWs?

A. Orders were passed by him to the Japanese Camp Commandant, then to the Camp Liaison Officer and so on to us. In cases of breach it was a matter of punishing the whole camp.

Q. How did he promulgate these orders?

A. Apart from one set of orders, which apparently emanated from Col TOKUNAGA, orders were promulgated through Japanese Camp Commandants, and through Liaison Officers.

Q. How did they make them known to you -- did they paste these orders on doorways?

A. The one promulgated in the summer of 1942 was by Col TOKUNAGA himself with regard to escapes and attempts to escape. We were forced to sign a parole saying that we would not, under any circumstances, escape or try to. On this particular occasion he had the whole camp paraded and he and his interpreter, told us, through the interpreter, what we had to do, what we could not do, and what would happen if we did do it. On that occasion the Camp was paraded at about 9 o'clock in the morning and it was about 5 in the evening before the last people got off it. No one was allowed to eat or drink. Everyone was forced to sign the parole and it was in this connection that Major BOXER and about 8 or 9 other ranks were taken out because they refused to sign it.

Q. That is a particular case but what I am getting at is this; how did you know what we call the standing orders of the Camp, how were they made known to you?

A. The standing orders of the camp were promulgated to us by our own liaison staff officer who in turn received them from the Camp Commandant.

Q. How did he give them to you, in writing or on parade?

A. For the purposes of internal administration the Camp was divided up into groups of 50 men each and each had a Group leader and a day duty NCO. It was the NCO's to go out and receive any orders from the Japanese and the orders were read out to each Group by the Group Leader.

Q. Can you indicate to the Court the number of orders received; were there many or few?

A. There were literally hundreds of them and it was impossible to keep check -- one day it was something; the next something else and it was virtually impossible for anyone to know what you were supposed to do and what you were not supposed to do.

Q. Will you indicate to the Court what these regulations concerned?

A. They concerned about every topic under the sun -- when we had to eat, when we had to work, when we had to sleep, when we could leave the hut, what would be done if we failed to salute and so on.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

Q. What happened when you transgressed one of these various regulations?

A. The individual was beaten up on the spot by whoever you failed to salute or failed to bow to.

Q. What means did you have of supplementing your diet?

we A. For a very great majority of the POWs, none at all; for instance, when we went out with the working parties/were paid, on an average of 10 cents for another rank and 15 cents for a sergeant and above. A common garden rock salt cost 30 to 50 yen a catty.

Q. From where would you purchase the rock salt?

A. A Canteen was started in the camp but the prices were fantastic.

Q. Who controlled the canteen?

A. The canteen was managed by one of our own officers -- the controlling agent was Col TOKUNAGA.

Q. How were these prices which you testify as fantastic fixed --

A. They must have been fixed by Col TOKUNAGA himself, or his H.Q. and the Contractor, who supplied them.

Q. What do you conclude from this?

A. Since the prices were fixed by the Controller, Col TOKUNAGA, he or the contractor or both of them must have made a fairly large profit out of it. I know for a fact that the prices charged in this canteen were sometimes nearly twice as high as the prices charged outside.

Q. How did you know that?

A. Because sometimes we persuaded the Formosan Guards to buy stuff for us.

Q. What do you understand by the term "Hut Guards"?

A. "Hut Guards" were first started normally as fire pickets, and eventually they devolved themselves into guards (I suppose would be the best thing to call them). These hut guards were sometimes formed from POWs themselves -- they were responsible to the Japanese for every POW that was accommodated in his hut. They were on duty during the night from about 9.30 until 6.30 in the morning.

Q. Who instituted this system of 'hut guards'?

A. The Commander-in-Chief, Col TOKUNAGA, promulgated an order to camps instituting Hut Guards.

COURT: ^{all} ~~may~~ Explain to the Court how this order came from Col TOKUNAGA and not from the Japanese Camp Commandant, whoever he may have been at the time?

WITNESS: Because such orders always started off with "The Commandant directs" --

COURT: In the case of the 'Hut Guards' was the order like that?

WITNESS: Yes.

WITNESS: Orders which involved disciplinary aspects were started off by "The Camp Commandant directs" --

COURT: Who was the Camp Commandant?

WITNESS: There were many of them; the first was Lt SAKAINO, the second, Lt WADAI and for a while a W/O became Camp Commandant, a man by the name of HONDA, and then Lt WADA took over again from W/O HONDA.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	2

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.

refractions of all

- Q. If there were any refractions from the duties laid down in these orders for the hut guards, what happened?
- A. For instance, if a hut accommodated 50 men, and a Japanese guard, during the night, inspected the hut and found only 49, and the hut guard could give no explanation as to where the missing man was, the hut guard was beaten up first by the Japanese guard for not knowing where the man was; then a report would be made to our own liaison office; the camp would be turned out and a thorough check made.
- Q. How many men were in each hut that the Hut Guard had to look after?
- A. Between 45 to 50 men.
- Q. How many would the hut normally accommodate?
- A. In peace time huts in SHAMSHUIPO accommodated 24.
- Q. How then would you say -- how difficult or how easy was the duty of the Hut Guard to keep track of 50 men?
- A. This was almost impossible because I can remember that for about 18 months at least there were no electric lights of any description and to wander through a hut with anywhere between 50 to 60 men in pitch darkness and try to count them was impossible. In addition there were three doors to each hut -- anyone could slip out and no one would be a bit the wiser, let alone the Hut Guard.
- Q. Will you tell the Court what were the precautions to protect POWs against air raids?
- A. Absolutely none.
- Q. What, to your knowledge, were the precautions taken for the safety of the Japanese guards?
- A. In SHAMSHUIPO Camp itself an underground air raid shelter was dug by the POWs for the Japanese camp staff immediately outside the Japanese Camp Office. So far as the POWs themselves were concerned, all POWs were made to get into their huts and were forbidden to leave until they were told to do so. The windows were closed and it was worse to be confined; there were very thin wooden roofs to the huts or none at all; being outside our huts would have provided a safer means of shelter.
- Q. What do you know about the storing of Japanese military supplies in the warehouses?
- A. In Jubilee Building, which was part of the camp, the bottom stories were used for the storage of tins which looked very much like tins of oil -- 4 gallon tins. On Jubilee Parade Ground itself open pits were dug and petrol drums stored in. Inside the actual camp, 4 huts were allocated on orders from the Japanese, and huge crates were stored in these. And ever so often the Japanese would come and take one or two of these crates out; they were certainly of no good to the camp and so the Japanese would come and take them out.
- Q. What do you know about the treatment by the Japanese Camp guards of Chinese civilians?
- A. Apart from one or two cases which I actually saw I do not think they paid much attention to the average Chinese civilians at all. The first incident which I saw, and I think practically the whole camp saw it too, was, early in 1942, February or March, a Chinese male was brought into the Jubilee end of the Camp; he was badly knocked about -- his hands were tied behind his back and his nose was bleeding. The Japanese guards took him to what we call Bamboo Pier, and four or five of them used him for bayonet practice. They then drove him into the water and while he was in the water and still alive, they used him for target practice.

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref:		ins			
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES				WO 235 / 1012 PT1			
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.							

129

The second incident took place a couple of months later when a Chinese woman, with a baby strapped on her back, was collecting shell fish and odd bits of wood from the other end of the camp. The Guard shouted at her but she was too far away; without any further shouting he shot at ~~at~~ them both.

- Q. Who was the Guard you speak of?
A. One of the Japanese Camp Guards.

The then Camp Commandant must have known because he came and inspected the bodies from inside the camp but nothing was said to the Guard and nothing done to the two bodies; two or three days later some Chinese came and collected them.

At one time Chinese civilians were allowed to bring parcels up to the camp -- this was stopped. However, on one particular occasion two Chinese girls brought up parcels for someone and because they failed to bow to the guard, they were made to stand outside the guard house carrying heavy stones in their hands with their arms outstretched; every time their arms sagged, they would receive a terrific clout from the guard. They were made to stand in this position from 10 in the morning until 6 in the evening. This was immediately in front of the guard hut ~~at the main entrance to SHANSHUIPO~~ Camp. The guard hut at that time was just outside the main gate which in peacetime was a Canteen.

- Q. How far was that point where the girls were tied up from the Camp Commandant's Office?
A. Approximately 250 yards.
- Q. Are you able to say the time that took place?
A. In the summer time.

The Court is adjourned for five minutes *at 1130 hrs RA*
The Court re-assembles at 1135 hrs RA

- Q. I would like you to relate to the Court from your experience what the relationship of the Camp Guards, Hut Guards, Interpreters, etc. were toward the POWs?
A. The relationship, so far as I can say, was that the Japanese in general treated us as slaves. We were there purely to be worked and not fed and in cases of ~~refractions~~ ^{infractions} from rules and orders, we were punished individually or collectively. Generally speaking the Japanese Camp staff, from top to bottom, were a bad lot but there were one or two relatively decent individuals. Even the Formosan Camp Guards, as a whole, hated the Japanese as much as we did.
- Q. Did you know a man called CRABBE?
A. Yes, he was a Sgt in the Royal Artillery -- I knew him before the war. This Sgt CRABBE, when we were taken prisoners slept in the same room as I did -- he was not at all fit when he was taken prisoner either. One night when Sgt CRABBE was on fire picket duty and the Camp Commandant came around, because Sgt CRABBE was not on the spot where he should have been, this Camp Commandant gave him a terrific beating, so badly was he beaten that Sgt CRABBE could not walk properly for a week after.
- Q. Who did you say beat Sgt CRABBE?
A. The first Camp Commandant, Lt SAKAING.
- Q. What do you know of a man called WILSON?
A. WILSON was a Sgt Major in the Royal Artillery. One morning on parade, when the Sgt Major was standing next to me, he looked sideways at the Camp Commandant. To the Japanese Camp Commandant he appeared to be rather insolent in doing this and the Lieut came over and kicked the Sgt Major on the shin and while he was recovering from the shock, he punched him on the head and eventually knocked him down, kicked him in the stomach and further knocked him about while he was on the ground.
- Q. Do you recall a man called KERR?

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.

A. Yes, in camp there were two KERRS, father and son; Major KERR who was A.P.M.P.O. Immediately before the outbreak of war his son was a member first of the Hong Kong Volunteers and subsequent to that he was given a commission of Second Lieutenant by G.O.C. Second Lt KERR had been brought up in MACAO, he spoke Japanese very well and acted as our interpreter right through the Camp. One morning, during the height of the diphtheria epidemic, this Lt KERR went over to the Camp Commandant's house to enquire whether any immediate relief could be obtained; when he came back it looked as though he had been very severely beaten up.

Q. 'Looked as though he had been very severely beaten up' -- will you please enlarge on that -- why was he beaten up?

A. His nose was bleeding, he had great marks across his face and he walked with difficulty.

The second occasion was when he attempted to intervene between the Camp Commandant and a Sgt Major of the Royal Scots. He was rather slow in obeying an order which was given by the Camp Commandant and the Camp Commandant was very annoyed. Lt KERR, thinking it was because through language difficulty, attempted to explain to the Camp Commandant-- the Camp Commandant said something to the Camp guard and the Camp guard set about Lt KERR.

Q. Will you tell the Court if you know anything about two men called MOORE and PLUMBER?

A. MOORE and PLUMBER were two sgts in the Middlesex Regt and were involved with a third member of the Middlesex in an incident on evening parade. These three people were late on parade and the Camp Commandant ordered them to be beaten up. Capt WEBBER, who was acting O/C for the Middlesex saw what had happened and attempted to take the blame and to explain why these men were late, and Capt WEBBER received the worst beating that I have ever seen anyone get. He was knocked on the floor and while he attempted to stand up, he was knocked down again; he was kicked in the stomach and shin. In fact I don't think that Capt WEBBER ever recovered fully from that.

Q. Where is Capt WEBBER now?

A. Capt WEBBER is in England.

Q. Do you know a man called BOXER?

A. Major BOXER was here before the war on the General Staff and Major BOXER was one of the officers who refused to sign the parole that Col TOKUNAGA brought into the Camp and told everyone they had to sign it. Major BOXER was taken off a parade in the summer of 1942 when he refused to sign this parole. He was taken to the Camp Commandant's house where Col. TOKUNAGA was present. He was absent for some hours -- when brought back to the Camp, his nose was bleeding, his hands had been tied together at the back and he had been knocked about quite a bit. Afterwards he was taken out again by the Japanese, along with 8 other ranks, who also refused to sign the parole, and until 6 o'clock that same evening, they were parked outside the camp with machine guns around them. They were told if anybody else refused to sign this paper they would be shot. To the best of my knowledge, these people were out of the camp for about 15 days and when they came back it was obvious to everybody that they had had a very bad time.

Q. Were there any other instances of this sort of treatment?

A. Will you tell the Court briefly of any other incidents of this sort which you may have to relate?

A. One I can remember fairly well is with regard to the Camp interpreter, generally referred to as STODDA. He was walking down the parade one morning and for no apparent reason, unhooked his sword scabbard and started to hit someone on the head and shoulders and finished by kicking him on the shins with his heavy boots.

Q. Where is this man STODDA?

A. The man sitting at the end - on the left, - in the rear row.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref.
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

Q. What do you know of STODDA?

A. STODDA is one of the most villainest pieces of work I have ever met of any nationality at all. He was cold, supercilious, and had no regard for anyone at all in camp so far as the POWs were concerned and what was worst of all is the fact that he spoke English. ^{and} he was a sneak and it was fatal so say anything in English when STODDA was anywhere within earshot.

Q. In making certain statements with regard to this man STODDA, can you give reasons for the grounds on which these statements are formed?

A. Until we knew how well this man spoke English we were rather careless in what we said because we assumed, for the best part at least, we would not understand what we were saying. However, one morning on parade some of the POWs, in talking about the Japanese in general, used the expression "NIPS" once or twice. We thought that no Japanese would ever understand what was talked about, but one of these chaps was pulled out from the front row, given a lecture and eventually a beating up by STODDA. This beating was due entirely to the fact that the word "NIPS" was used.

Q. What did STODDA use in this beating?

A. He used his sword scabbard complete with sword. He always used that or his boots. He also had a nice habit of slapping people across the face with his hand.

Q. What did he do that for?

A. Sometimes it appeared as though he did it just to please himself and for no apparent reason whatsoever.

Q. Did you yourself have any personal experiences of this kind?

A. I was kicked once by interpreter NIDOKI, and kicked once by INOUE, Camp Interpreter. I was on hut guard duty one night. I had a bad knee and was rather slow in jumping up and saluting this interpreter when he came around in the early hours of the morning. For this, he kicked me on my bad knee.

Another habit of the Camp Staff was to punish the camp collectively for an individual's behaviour. One night in late 1942, during a typhoon, two Sappers from the Royal Engineers escaped. At about 10.30 or 11 that night we were all pulled out on the main playground in SHAMSHUIPO and were made to stay there until 4 the next morning. It rained hard and it blew and it was very cold at that time of the night. People were in no fit state to stand out under those conditions on an ordinary night leave alone in a typhoon. There was no protection against the rain and no protection against the cold. The men stood in mud and water in the cold and were not allowed to leave the grounds; they were not strong enough to cope with these conditions. During the hours of 11 till 4 the next morning the men were counted at least 14 times by different Japanese; There was a search light at one end and two machine guns at the other and we were told if anybody attempted to leave the parade they would be shot. Stretchers cases and everybody was brought in on that parade and no exemptions were made.

Q. What, from your observations, was the result of this parade on the general condition of the POWs?

A. A hundred percent ~~decrease~~ ^{increase} in the sickness rate in the camp.

Q. What do you know about Capt SAITO?

A. Dr. SAITO was the Medical Officer in charge of POW Camps in HONGKONG. Judging by the results of his work he either has no knowledge of doctoring at all, or he was not interested.

Q. What would you say his responsibility was?

A. Personally, as Medical Officer in charge of the camp he was responsible for all the deaths which occurred, which was about 100%.

Q. On what facts would you premise that statement?

A. I am not a doctor, but I do know that when a person is ill he needs medicines and afterwards good food, and so far as I am aware, Dr. SAITO made no effort to provide either.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.

- Q. What would be your opportunity to observe whether or not he was able to provide such things?
- A. I have heard it said, when Dr. SAITO was approached for drugs and medicine, he told the Medical Officer there were no such things in the Colony. Against this I do know for a fact that on the surrender the value of the Army stock of drugs and medicines was £30,000 -- that included enough drugs, medicines and equipment to last the colony for at least a year.
- Q. By that do you mean the garrison and the colony or the Army requirements?
- A. The army alone.
- Q. At the time of the Japanese capitulation or the British capitulation?
- A. When we capitulated to the Japanese. I do know that for a long long time in camp the only two medicines generally supplied was Filter Powder and diluted EUSOL. No provision was made for bandages or anything of a similar nature and it was not until we had some Red Cross parcels that we had any bandages at all.
- Q. What about the provision of hospital accommodation?
- A. For the first nine months, the only hospital accommodation was one building in SHAMSHUIPO Camp and all types of patients were treated in there; dysentery, diphtheria, and everything else.
- Q. How large was that building?
- A. I should imagine the total space would be threequarters of the size of this building.
- Q. To your knowledge what other ~~space~~ space was available for hospital accommodation?
- A. I am sorry, sir -- I should correct that statement -- perhaps I should have said this room and not this building.
- Q. Do you mean the whole hospital space comprised the area of this room.
- A. Yes, and that was including an annexe, a kitchen of sorts, and a small room which was used for an office.
- Q. Let me repeat, therefore -- what, to your knowledge, was available for hospital accommodation.
- A. An area about the size of this room.
- Q. Was there any other accommodation that was made available?
- A. Shortly after, round about Christmas 1942, a fairly large area on the opposite side of the road was made into hospital accommodation and this new area was available right from the inception of the camp.
- Q. What amount of medical kit was there in the Camp?
- A. Up to about Christmas 1942, very little of anything -- no provision was made for operations for one thing -- there was very little medical kit, drugs or dental equipment.
- Q. What care did Dr. SAITO take of this small amount of medical kit of which you speak?
- A. Judging from what came into the Camp, Dr. SAITO took great care to see that he had the biggest part. The Camp guards were in the habit of coming into the hospital and demanding treatment from our own medical officers.
- Q. Was any representation made by our own Medical Officers?
- A. So far as I can remember, the first complaint was made by Major ROBERTSON, who was our own Snr. Medical Officer, and Major ASHTON-ROSE, who was also a senior Medical Officer during the latter part of the Camp. Several protests were made about this sort of thing but nothing was done and until the camp finished up Japanese camp guards and other people were demanding hospital treatment and attention which they apparently could not obtain from their own sources.
- Q. What about Dr. SAITO and Red Cross Medical Supplies, what do you know about that?
- A. At various times both inside the camp and on working parties I have seen the camp guards and also other people of the units where we were

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235 / 1012 PT 1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.

working produce English medical stores or English medical supplies as late as Christmas 1944 and I know the only English medical supplies came into HONG KONG in August 1942.

- Q. What type of supplies are you referring to, what did you see?
 A. In one instance, while out on a working party, one of the Japanese cut himself rather badly and he was provided with medicine patented by Burrows & Welcome (who are English manufacturers), cotton wool, and so on.

A little after the Japanese surrender two fairly large cases of medical supplies were brought out of the Camp Commandant's House, and these medical supplies were all of English manufacture.

- Q. How did you know that?
 A. Because the name of the manufacturer and the place of the packing was stencilled on the outside cover.
- Q. What was Dr SAITO'S attitude towards patients?
 A. His attitude was careless in the extreme; besides this, if a patient was in bed and was very ill and made no attempt to sit to attention the chances were, more often than not, that he would get a couple of slaps, and I saw a man one day, when this Dr SAITO was passing the hospital wards, who failed to spring to attention, ~~smartly~~ ^{smartly} enough. Dr. SAITO gave him two ~~hard~~ hits across the head with his sword scabbard.
- Q. What did he do to alleviate the conditions as you have described in the Camp?
 A. Personally, I do not think he ever did anything. The only concession he made, possibly, was in SHAMSHUIPO Camp when men were really very ill he sent them over to BOWEN ROAD; in several cases, far too late; one patient even died on the way over; another died while waiting to be sent. The conditions at SHAMSHUIPO hospital were in a very bad state and it was only as a result of Red Cross pressure that something was done to improve this slightly.

The Court is adjourned until 1415 hours.

1		2		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
cme		Ref:		WO 235/1012 PT1	
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.		1		Ins 2	

At 1400 hrs. on 6 December the Court re-assembled pursuant to adjournment; present the same Members as at adjournment.

WITNESS FOR THE PROSECUTION - Sgt. Major LEWIS

EXAMINATION IN CHIEF (Contd.)

- Q. You were talking of SAITO when we adjourned. I would like to hear what you know, not about his social so-called treatment of POWs, but his professional medical treatment of the POWs.
- A. From what I could see he was prescribing medicine and drugs for individuals for their own sort of case and as far as I know, none of the drugs or medicines ever turned up. In one particular instance - I am not a Doctor and I do not profess to know anything about it - but he prescribed a solution of arsenic for septic pellagra.
- Q. Who was affected by this septic pellagra?
- A. I was. Whether this was meant to be applied externally or internally I do not know but our own M.O. refused to have anything to do with it.
- Q. Leaving Dr. SAITO, will you tell the Court what you know of a man nick-named the "Spanker"?
- A. The Spanker was a Formosan sentry.
- Q. What was the guard?
- A. A Formosan camp guard and he was at SHAM SHUI PO Camp for quite a considerable time. He was there until the Japanese surrender and without a doubt he was one of the worst people I have ever run across. This Formosan had a nasty habit of waiting for the working parties to fall in in the morning and anyone who was late, who was sick, fit or otherwise, was beaten up by this individual. On one occasion this Spanker parked himself outside the kitchen one tiffin-time and everyone who came out of the kitchen had to either bow or salute this Formosan and those who failed were slapped across the face.
- Q. What personal contact did you have with him?
- A. If you mean by "personal contact", I think two slaps on the face and a punch in the jaw was what I got.
- Q. What do you ~~mean~~ know of a man called BAXTER?
- A. He was in the HONG KONG Volunteer Defence Corps and one morning he was on a working party and between the time of the morning muster we dismissed. BAXTER went back to his hut and the working party was fallen in by this Spanker and BAXTER was not there. BAXTER was not by any means a fit man and when he did come eventually this Formosan called the man out of the ranks in front of the working party and by the time he had finished, BAXTER could hardly walk. He was kicked, punched in the chest, hit with the butt end of a rifle and then pushed back into the ranks.
- Q. Before I finish, have you anything to add in relation to the charges against the Accused before you?
- A. No, I think I have covered everything.

CROSS EXAMINATION (By Mr. Fujita)

- Q. While you were in the British Army, what position did you have?
- A. Sergeant, I was a HQ clerk.
- Q. I know you are not a Doctor but I wish to know if you have any medical knowledge.
- A. Only the average knowledge that almost everyone has.

1		2		Ref.:		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
cms						WO 235 / 1012 PT 1	
						1	
						ins	
						2	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

- Q. Yesterday you testified that you went on a working party to Col. TOKUNAGA's house and you said that Col. TOKUNAGA's house was the one shown in photograph No. 7? Is that correct?
- A. Yes.
- Q. Do you know the distance from SHAM SHUI PO camp to KAI TAK airfield?
- A. By which route, by road or sea?
- Q. The ordinary route which you took to go to the airfield on working parties.
- A. We did not go by road; we went by sea. From SHAM SHUI PO Camp we disembarked near what was then KOWLOON Police Station.
- Q. What was the distance from the KOWLOON Police Station to the airfield?
- A. I suppose between $\frac{3}{4}$ of a mile and a mile.
- Q. You testified yesterday that some people that hardly could walk and also some sort of stretcher cases were included in the working parties; how were these people able to walk to the police station and airfield?
- A. They were made to walk.
- Q. Is it true that stretcher cases can walk?
- A. Apart from those, those who could be on their feet were made to walk. If any fell out of the parade they were just kicked by the guards.
- Q. Could these sorts of stretcher cases, members of the working party, do work?
- A. They were just taken out there and left in the medical hut all day.
- Q. If the condition of some of the working party was such, did not the Japanese unit that was at the working place make protests to the POW camp?
- A. As far as I know they did not. It was not up to the POW camp it was up to the Japanese, Col. TOKUNAGA; we could not do anything. We were just told to find 400 and found them.
- Q. You testified also yesterday something about HAPPY VALLEY. Did you ever go on a working party to HAPPY VALLEY?
- A. I did.
- Q. Is that not an exaggeration?
- A. No.
- Q. Also you stated that a canteen was established inside the camp; what was the purpose of such a canteen usually?
- A. The usual purpose of a canteen in the POW camp is to supply extras to prisoners out of their working pay.
- Q. At the camp was it not one of the duties of the POWs to be having a supervisor in the canteen?
- A. Yes. I said this morning that it was managed by one of our own officers.
- Q. From the back boundary of SHAM SHUI PO camp to the seashore what is the distance?
- A. The seashore forms two boundaries at SHAM SHUI PO camp. Which one do you mean?
- Q. Where the Chinese woman was picking up shells at full-tide would the water cover the place where she was picking shells?
- A. Yes.

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref:		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES		Ins	
		WO 235 / 1012 PT1					

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

- Q. Also you testified that when Major BOXER was brought to the Camp Commandant's house you thought that Col.TOKUNAGA was also there. What do you base your statement on?
- A. I base my statement on the fact that Col.TOKUNAGA was in camp first thing in the morning about 9 o'clock. He was still talking at 10 o'clock and Col.TOKUNAGA's car was still parked ~~and~~ inside the camp at 3 o'clock in the afternoon.
- Q. When you said that you thought Col.TOKUNAGA was at the Camp Commandant's house, is this your personal opinion? Did you see him there yourself?
- A. I cannot imagine Col.TOKUNAGA walking anywhere, not then at any rate.
- Q. Also you testified that Interpreter TSUTADA had at a parade beat a POW without reason. When did this incident happen?
- A. Somewhere about March or April 1942.
- Q. When did the "Nip" incident happen?
- A. As far as I remember about the same time. Shortly afterwards.

CROSS EXAMINATION (By Mr.Hasogawa)

- Q. Yesterday you testified that a working party was organised because of an order from Col.TOKUNAGA. An order was given from Col.TOKUNAGA to the Camp Commandant and then to the POW liaison officer. From there on how was the working party organised by the POWs?
- A. It was organised by our camp staff officer. He was told the Japanese wanted 400 men, he was to find them. It was not a question of organising within the camp, just a matter of finding the right number of men.
- Q. This morning your testimony was that about 20 percent of the POWs were permanently sick and about 45 percent were invalid or unfit. That leaves about 35 percent fit. Is that correct?
- A. If you call them "fit" by camp standards, yes. But if you call them "fit" by normal outside standards, no.
- Q. Can you enlarge on that a little more; I do not quite understand.
- A. I would say that there was no one in the camp who was fit as compared with normal peacetime standards.
- Q. That means that what you stated this morning was incorrect?
- A. No, because anyone within his senses at all would realize after 2 years in a Japanese POW camp no man was fit.
- Q. In 1944 you said that there were about 1,500 POWs. Then if 35 percent of the 1,500 were fit that means that about 525 were fit men. Also in 1945 you said there were 950 POWs. If 35 percent of this 950 were fit that means 332 fit men. Yesterday you stated that out of the working party, 300 to 350 men, over 280 were unfit.
- A. I suppose you fail to realize there are certain jobs in camp that can only be done by fit men. Furthermore, if you work a fit man under such conditions he will become unfit. The same applied to everybody. It worked out that every man had about one day in 6 or 7 off.

1		2	
cms		Ref.:	
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES		WO 235 / 1012 PT1	
1		Ins	
2			

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

- Q. You testified that the quantity of rice that was issued to the working party was from 8 to 10 ozs. How does this compare with those that did not go out on working parties?
- A. That I could not tell you. The only thing I can tell you is that those who went out on working parties received very little, if any, extra to those who stayed in because the policy of the camp was that each shared alike.
- Q. This morning you also testified that there was about £30,000 Sterling worth of medical supplies at the time of the capitulation and this was enough to meet the needs of the garrison troops in HONG KONG for about one year. What do you base that statement on?
- A. On a War Office report.
- Q. Can you enlarge on that?
- A. I can, because a claim has been submitted by our War Office against the Japanese for drugs and medical supplies and equipment, not buildings, lost at the time of the capitulation to the extent of £30,000 Sterling.
- Q. After the Japanese occupied HONG KONG do you know how these medical supplies were used by the Japanese?
- A. They were certainly used by the Japanese; they were not used for us.
- Q. Do you know whether these medical drugs were left in HONG KONG after the capitulation or sent somewhere else?
- A. I do not know. All I know is they were here at the time of the capitulation.
- Q. Then do you think that Dr. SAITO could dispose of these drugs as he pleased?
- A. I did not infer that Capt. SAITO disposed of them; I merely said he did not attempt to give us any.
- Q. You just testified that Dr. SAITO did not give you any drugs; do you think it was in his authority to give you drugs?
- A. As medical officer in charge of the camp it was his duty to supply them.
- Q. You also testified that the last supply of English medical drugs to arrive in HONG KONG was in August 1942.
- A. The first and the last.
- Q. Later, when a working party was working, one of the POWs received a serious wound and he was treated by the Japanese. Inside the Japanese medicine box there were many English medical drugs. When did this incident happen?
- A. Late 1944.
- Q. Were these drugs Red Cross supplies or ordinary medical supplies?
- A. Ordinary commercial supplies.
- Q. At what place were these drugs seen?
- A. If you know KOWLOON; if you know where KOWLOON motor bus company or its motor garages are, there was a Japanese Army service unit which repaired trucks, lorries and other things. That was PTO

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235 / 1012 PT 1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.

A(Ctd.) the place. It was at CASTLE PEAK Road KOWLOON and directly behind SHAM SHUI PO Camp.

Q. Also you testified that at one time Dr. SAITO was walking down the ward of the hospital and because one of the patients did not salute him, Dr. SAITO beat him with his sword. Is that correct?

A. Yes. It happened to the best of my knowledge in the middle of 1943.

Q. At that time were you a patient at the hospital?

A. Yes.

Q. Also you testified that one of the patients that was being transferred to the EDWEN Road Hospital died there on the way because permission for him to be sent to the hospital came too late. When did this incident happen and where did the patients actually die.

A. The patient died in the north corner of SHAM SHUI PO Camp while waiting to be placed on the ferry-boat to be taken to HONG KONG. As far as I remember it was just before Christmas 1942.

Q. Do you know the patient's name?

A. I am afraid not.

Q. After the camp hospital was established, did the POWs medical officers carry out medical, physical, examinations?

A. Do you mean as a normal routine matter or what?

Q. I am asking you whether it was a fact that POW doctors gave treatment to the POWs.

A. Yes, to the best of their ability and with very limited stocks of medicine that were available.

Q. When you became sick with septic pellagra, did Dr. SAITO give you the arsenic solution after he carried out a physical examination?

A. No, he carried out his inspection, spoke of this arsenic solution and that was the last that was ever heard or seen of it from Dr. SAITO. As far as I know it was never supplied.

Re-Examination declined.

QUESTIONED BY THE COURT:

Q. You spoke about 3 incidents connected with Chinese civilians in regard to the camp. Did you actually see these yourself?

A. I actually saw them myself.

Q. Do you remember the name of the man who you said was struck by TSUTADA on roll call at parade? You mentioned TSUTADA striking him with his sword in its sheath.

A. I cannot remember his name but I would know the man if I ever saw him again.

(No more questions *By the Defense or Prosecution*)

1		2	
cms		Ref:	
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES		WO 235 / 1012 PT 1	
1		1	
ins		ins	
2		2	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' material.

139

PROSECUTOR: With the Court's permission I am not calling another witness this afternoon. I will read the affidavit of Capt. A. STRAHAN. This is Exhibit No. L(1).

(Affidavit of Capt. STRAHAN read by Prosecutor.)

PROSECUTOR: I can continue with another affidavit on the next sub-section of the charge if you wish.

COURT: You have other witnesses to call on this section of the charge?

PROSECUTOR: Yes, there are about 3 other witnesses to call. I regret I have not got Mr. PEARCE this afternoon. I anticipated the Cross-Examination would take longer and not wishing to dis-organize his own work too great an extent I advised him to wait till tomorrow.

It would not be at all relative, I do not think, to read the affidavit of ASHTON RHODES. As I said before they are pretty mixed up.

COURT: I do not think anything would be gained by reading an affidavit out of its place. The Court would not be able to present each section of the charge in its proper continuity. It would be simpler to adjourn today and call your next witness tomorrow morning.

At 1600 hrs. the Court adjourn till 1000 hrs.
on Saturday 7 December, 1946.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1 cms	2
<i>Ref.: WO 235 /1012 PT1</i>	
1	ins 2

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' material.

NO. 5 WAR CRIMES COURT.

NINTH DAY's proceedings of the trial of Col. TOKUNAGA Isao, Capt. SAITO Shunkichi, Lt. TANAKA Hitoshi, Interpreter TSUTADA and Sgt. HARADA Jotaro.

(Held at Jardine Matherson's East Point Godown on Saturday December 7th, 1946.)

re-arranged at 200
The Court ~~commenced~~ 1030 Hours.

COURT: If there are any witnesses in Court except the witness going to be called now, will they please leave ~~the room.~~ *Rec*

PROSECUTOR: Before proceeding, Sir, I wish to get hold of LEG. LOUIS, a driver who will give evidence. I will proceed with another witness. I hope he will take the place of 2 others.

Rec *Main Rec*
18 WITNESS FOR THE PROSECUTION - Mr. T.A. PEARCE,
On being sworn is examined by the Prosecutor.

Q. Will you tell the Court your full name?
A. Lieut. Thomas Alexander PEARCE.

Q. What was your corps?
A. Royal Artillery.

Q. What is your present employment?
A. JOHN D. HUTCHINSON & COMPANY, KING's Building, HONG KONG.

Q. Is that what you ordinarily give as your residence?
A. My present residence is the GLOUCESTER Hotel.

Q. Where were you born?
A. HONG KONG.

Q. I understand you were taken POW in HONG KONG in December 1941. Will you tell the Court briefly where you were interned during the period you were a POW in HONG KONG?
A. I was first of all interned at North Point Camp from about the end of December till the third week in January. After that I was taken over to SHAM SHUI PO and I was there till 18 April. After that I was taken to ARGYLL Street, to the officers camp and returned to SHAM SHUI PO in September 1942. I was at SHAM SHUI PO for the remainder of the time of internment till August 1945.

Q. Do you know the Accused? If so please identify any you know to the Court.

A. I recognize Col. TOKUNAGA sitting in front and on the right Dr. SAITO. On the left is TSUTADA. I do not know the names of the other two. I think the one next to SAITO is TANAKA if I am right and Sgt. HARADA.

Q. What was Col. TOKUNAGA's appointment in HONG KONG, as far as you know?

A. He was commandant of all the POW camps in HONG KONG.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosures 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

141

- Q. Who was TSUTADA?
 A. He was an Interpreter. RCC
- Q. Who was SAITO?
 A. SAITO was the medical officer in charge of the various military camps. P.O.W.
- Q. Can you tell the Court who the other two were, what their employment was?
 A. TANAKA I think was Adjutant to Col. TOKUNAGA and HARADA was a RCC
 Sgt. in the camp administration.

COURT: In which camps were TSUTADA and HARADA?

- A. TSUTADA was in SHAM SHUI PO to begin with, or rather until he left. HARADA I think was also in SHAM SHUI PO or in both the camps when the officers came back from ARGYLL Street.

- Q. Now I am going to ask you some questions concerning the conditions in the POW camps that you were in and ask you to confine your remarks to occurrences after 24 January 1942. Will you tell the Court briefly what conditions you found when you returned to SHAM SHUI PO in January 1942?
- A. When I returned to SHAM SHUI PO in September I was appalled at the general state of health prevailing in the camp at that time. Men worked in very very poor condition indeed, utter walking skeletons to the time I had seen them previously.
- Q. How do you account for this poor condition that you found?
- A. I should say it was obviously due to the extremely poor diet provided by the Japanese and also the effect that the reprisals had had, by stopping of parcels, stopping of the canteen and also when I got there the diet was rice and vegetables and what little meat or fish ration that existed before.
- Q. You mentioned the word "reprisals". What occurrences do you speak of when you say "reprisals"?
- A. Reprisals had been taken from the time that escapes were made.
- Q. From your own experience, can you outline to the Court what the result of this diet which you described was in SHAM SHUI PO at the time you arrived back?
- A. It left men in the camp in generally very weak condition and resulted in various forms of malnutrition such as pellagra eyes, pellagra chests, pellagra stomachs and men were suffering also from aching feet and Beri-beri.
- Q. Will you tell the Court what you know, if anything, about the working parties?
- A. The first working parties started in the middle of September 1942 and went out to KAI TAK. RCC
- Q. What was your own connexion with these working parties?
- A. I was one of the officers who were sent out in charge of various working parties which went out. RCC

COURT: What type of work did you do at KAI TAK? RCC

- Q. Will you tell the Court where you went to on these working parties?
- A. The first working parties went to KAI TAK and I went to KAI TEK, to begin with. RCC

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref:		ins			
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES							
WO 235/1012 PT1							
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives material.							

- Q. Will you tell the Court what work you did there?
- A. The first job was to clear a large area, the opposite side of the road to the old aerodrome or previous part of the aerodrome and that meant generally excavation, digging and picking and clearing away and levelling the ground, also carrying very heavy stones.
- Q. What implements did you have to help with the excavations?
- A. For carrying stones, to begin with when I say "heavy" stones, it required more than one man to carry these, at least 2 men. Sometimes one man had to carry one if he possibly could himself. They had ropes and poles to carry these stones with and later on we were given picks and shovels for levelling the ground.
- Q. What would be the size, weight and shape of these stones that were removed?
- A. The weight I could not say. They may be about 18 inches long and about 9 inches high and 9 inches wide. They were granite.
- Q. Will you tell the Court what condition the men were in? You have already described the circumstances. What condition were they in to cope with the shifting of rocks and stones such as you describe?
- A. The majority of them I should say were not in a fit condition to carry out this work as was shown by the fact that when the parties started the numbers were approximately 200 and the number of men having to report sick increased daily. But, in spite of that, the numbers required by the Japanese for these parties was increased to approximately 400.
- Q. With regard to the other work that they were doing besides clearing, the digging and picking and so on, what implements did they have for that?
- A. The implements used were picks to loosen the earth or rocks or stones and they had shovels to remove the earth, to place them in baskets and later on ~~two~~ trucks. They got rail lines going down as the earth was moved away from the hill they started to clear.
- Q. Did they have anything else, other than the shovels and picks you have spoken of and the baskets?
- A. As far as I remember, except the trucks which they eventually had to get to remove the stuff, nothing.
- Q. What was the substance of the soil that they were excavating?
- A. That varied a good deal. Parts of the hillside were fairly soft earth, parts of it were pretty hard, almost like concrete.
- Q. Where was the excavation being done? What was the type of terrain that they were excavating in?
- A. Parts of it were marshy land and at the back one of the main objects to begin with was to clear up more or less a whole hill, and the rest of it was ordinary earth land.
- Q. Can you tell the Court where that hill was in relation to some physical aspect of the country? If you wanted to direct somebody there how would you tell them to get to where the hill was?
- A. I have not been there for some time. I gather the airport has changed a great deal. There was a road running down to the RAF officers' mess at that particular time we were there and this hill going towards the RAF officers mess was on the left hand side of the road from KOWLOON, from the ARGYLE Street direction. There was a Chinese village nearby but I cannot recollect its name.

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref:		1		Ins	
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES				WO 235/1012 PT1			
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' Terms and Conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives leaflet							

- Q. Do you know PRINCE EDWARD Road in KOWLOON?
- A. Yes.
- Q. Could you describe the position of this hill in relation to PRINCE EDWARD Road?
- A. Going down PRINCE EDWARD Road right to the extreme end of PRINCE EDWARD Road I should say it was on the left-hand side.
- Q. Will you tell the Court what representations, if any, you made to the Japanese respecting the difficulties you were encountering on this working party?
- A. Representations were made by unit commanders and medical officers to the Japanese pointing out that it was almost impossible to produce fit enough men for this working party but the Japanese camp administration insisted that the numbers they specified should be filled.
- Q. When you speak of the Japanese, to whom do you refer?
- A. I think I made that point; I referred to them as the camp administration.
- Q. You say the men were unfit; can you instance any unfitness you know, to your knowledge?
- A. On one of the days I went out as an officer in charge of the working parties I actually saw or gave orders for a man who was not able by his physical condition to walk to the place of the working party. When we got off the ferry at KAI TAK we had a march of about $3/4$ of a mile to a mile and after this man had been going for about a minute or so he collapsed on the road and we carried him on a stretcher to the place where the work took place.
- Q. Will you state very briefly the length of the day that a man who was on these parties had to go?
- A. These working parties' reville sounded at 4.30 in the morning and the men usually got back to camp at approximately 8 o'clock after which they had to draw their food, have a wash if possible, and by the time they got to bed it was somewhere near 10 o'clock.
- Q. What type of diet was issued to the men on working parties?
- A. They got the same diet as anyone in the camp did.
- Q. Was it the same both in quality and quantity?
- A. As far as I can recollect, at that time it was.
- Q. How adequate was it for a man working under the conditions at the work you describe?
- A. I should say it was completely inadequate as was shown by the increase of men who reported sick and their general condition.
- Q. Will you tell the Court what, to your knowledge, was the use put to KAI TAK airport?
- A. I should say that it was used to harbour the Japanese Air Force at the time we started work there and the object of the work was to enlarge the aerodrome for the Japanese Air Force planes.
- Q. How then would you designate the type of work your working party was doing on that airport?
- A. War work to the aid of the enemy.

1		2		1		2	
cm		Ref:		1		ins	
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES							
WO 235/1012 PT 1							
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.							

144

- Q. What representations were made to the Japanese, if any, in respect of these things?
 A. An official letter of protest was sent in by Lt.FIELD, R.A.
- Q. What was the content of this official letter, to your knowledge?
 A. It was a complaint that this was war work against International law and therefore as POWs we should not be doing that work.
- Q. What was the result of the sending of the letter by Lt.FIELD?
 A. Lt.FIELD was sent for by the Japanese about 4 or 5 days afterwards.
- Q. Will you say what Japanese?
 A. In regard to this complaint he was interrogated by the then Adjutant to Col.TOKUNAGA.
- Q. Can you describe the interrogation?
 A. During the interrogation the Japanese officer told Lt.FIELD that he would teach him something about International law whereupon he proceeded to beat up Lt.FIELD very severely, resulting in Lt.FIELD having his head split open.
- Q. How long did these working parties to KAI TAK^{RCL} go on?
 A. They went on till the 3rd week in December. I think the actual date was 22 December.
- Q. That is the period from about the last week in September till the first week in December, about 2 months?
 A. Middle of September to the 3rd week in December.
- Q. 1942?
 A. Yes.
- Q. Can you tell the Court what was going on in the camp during that period outside of working parties?
 A. There was very little going on I should say owing to the fact that anyone who was fit enough to move about was sent out on working parties.
- Q. What was the condition of those who were not on the working parties?
 A. The condition of the men was very bad indeed; they were suffering badly from malnutrition. There had also been a bad epidemic of diphtheria.
- Q. During that period you have spoken of, will you tell the Court what you know personally respecting the death rate?
 A. The death rate in the camp at that time, between September and December, was at its highest during the whole of the internment.
- Q. Subsequent to that date you have mentioned, what other, if any, working parties were there that you could speak of personally?
 A. Working parties resumed again in April 1943 and this party went again to KAI TAK.^{RCL}
- Q. One party went to KAI TAK^{RCL}, where did the other parties go?
 A. Later on, about August a party went to ABERDEEN.
- Q. That type of work did they do there?
 A. The type of work consisted of handling gasoline drums, 50-gallon drums and also handling of bombs.
- Q. Who ordered these working parties to take place?
 A. Presumably the Japanese camp administration.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref.
WO 235 / 1012 PT1	
1	2
line	line

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives leaflet.

- Q. How many men would go on a party to ABERDEEN?
 A. Parties varied from say 50 to 100 men on an average.
- Q. You say the men were loading and unloading gasoline. In what way were they handling the gasoline?
 A. These were completely man-handled, taking 4 men to lift one drum.
- Q. How big would the drums be in diameter?
 A. Two and a half feet.
- Q. These were two and a half feet in diameter and man-handled? To begin with, what was the shape of the drums?
 A. They were cylindrical in shape, I should say about 3 feet, possibly $3\frac{1}{2}$ feet high.
- Q. How would they be man-handled?
 A. It was a question of storing them in the godowns. They would be rolled in and then lifted up and stored in rows up to 5 or 6 high.
- Q. Will you indicate the size of the bombs you were working on?
 A. The largest ones were 250 kilo.
- Q. How did you have to man-handle that?
 A. These were partly man-handled and partly laid on to trucks - there was a small haulage crane.
- Q. How would you grade this type of labour - light, medium or heavy?
 A. I should call it very heavy for the diet they were on and also the times they had to do so many per day. They were driven harder, which made it heavier work still.
- Q. How would you describe it with regard to the safety factor?
 A. In view of the possibility of air attacks I should say it was extremely dangerous. These godowns at BRICKHILL, there must have been at least 20 large godowns there, most of them contained gasoline drums and a large number of them.
- Q. Have you any idea what the gasoline was used for?
 A. I presume it was used for aviation.
- Q. What type of work then would you describe this?
 A. I should again describe this as war work. Obviously with handling of bombs it must be war work and the gasoline at that time must have been used for war work.
- Q. Do you recall any other working parties?
 A. Another working party went out to LI CHI KOK oil installation.

is adjourned for five minutes REX
 The Court goes into temporary recess.

The Court re-assembles REX

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cm	Ref:
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
line	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.

EXAMINATION IN CHIEF -- MR PEARCE.

Q. You were telling us about the working party at LICHIKOK -- about August 1944 -- what was the occasion for that working party?

A. The working party was sent to work on the oil installations which had been destroyed or bombed by the American Air Force.

Q. Were you personally present on those working parties?

A. Yes, I was present on one or two occasions.

COURT: Major Puddicombe when you say 'those working parties' will you kindly say whether they were both or whether this refers to LI CHI KOK only? *(must be)*

WITNESS: LI CHI KOK *only. 200*

COURT: Could you ask about the working party at ABERDEEN?

PROSECUTOR: Were you present at any time on the ABERDEEN parties?

WITNESS: Yes, I was.

Q. What type of work was being done at LI CHI KOK?

A. The type of work done there was clearing away a lot of debris caused by Bombing, and to dig trenches for placing oil drums in.

Q. How did that compare with the nature of work -- would you classify that as Heavy, Light or Medium type work?

A. I should say the digging of trenches and handling of drums would be termed Heavy -- and clearing away of the debris caused by bombing would be medium.

Q. What other parties, if any, have you to speak of?

A. There were other parties sent out in the early part of January 1945 to areas around KOWLOON to dig tunnels in the hills there.

Q. Were you present on these working parties?

A. No, I was not present on any of these working parties.

Q. What was the purpose of these tunnels?

A. The information I got was that these tunnels were built for the purpose of storing ammunition.

Q. What was the safety factor there?

A. As a matter of fact I should say the work carried out there was extremely unsafe -- there was no safety factor -- there was no proper of the tunnels as they went further in.

No further questions. Examination in Chief completed.

COURT:

Q. One point about the working parties, -- could you give the Court any indication as to what time work actually commenced; how long it went on for, and was there any intermission or break?

A. Is that with regard to each working party?

Q. On the average -- what time did work actually start and when did you knock off to go back?

A. On an all round average I should say work started at about 9 in the morning and finished at 5.30 in the evening.

Q. Was there any break or intermission?

A. Yes, these varied also and different parties had different breaks.

Q. Can you give the court some idea of this -- would there be a break for food at midday, or in the morning, twice a day or only once a day?

A. In the early days at KATRAK there would be breaks either one in the morning or two breaks during the day. Later on at ABERDEEN there would be breaks of one-quarter hour after every 1½ hours work.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.

147

Q. At what time did the working party have their mid-day meal and how long were they allowed for it?
 A. I think about one hour.

Q. About what time of the day?
 A. At mid-day.

No further questions.

CROSS-EXAMINATION by Mr Fujita.

Q. From the SHAMSHUIPO Camp to the KATATAK airfield, did you ever ^{RU} do the land route there? ^{by RU}

A. Up to about Christmas the first working party went by ferry -- the second party that went to KATATAK ^{KATATAK RU} used the land route.

Q. If the land route ^{is} used, what is the distance from the SHAMSHUIPO Camp to the KATATAK airfield?

A. Approximately three miles.

Q. Were these three miles done by foot sometimes - or were they done by truck. ^{RU}

A. To KATATAK, by truck most of the time.

Q. Were there times when you marched there?

A. I cannot recollect -- there may have been one or two occasions when there was no transport -- but I cannot recollect.

Q. When the working party was mustered in the morning, what method was used to form this working party?

A. There were so many so many detailed -- 100 I think for each party, and the men detailed in each group or party had to fall in with their respective parties until a roll call was taken or otherwise have their numbers checked.

Q. Who took these roll calls?

A. The roll calls were taken by our own men -- then the Japanese sentries would take over the parties and the number in each party would be checked.

Q. Then, in case there was a POW who was seriously ill at this roll call could he be taken out of the working party.

A. Very seldom -- no.

Q. Then that means that only the POWs that were fit would be at this roll call -- none were there that were unfit to work?

A. No, I should not say so.

Q. About the gasoline drums you explained them as being 2½ feet in dia. and one metre in height; is it true that these drums were rolled to the godowns?

A. These drums were transferred from ABERDEEN Pier to the godowns or vice versa -- at the time they were loaded on to lorries or when being stored in the godowns they were both rolled and lifted.

Q. From my own experience I have found that to lift up a drum of gasoline it is very heavy, but to roll one of these drums is very easy, is this not true?

A. Yes, I agree, this is obvious.

CROSS-EXAMINATION by Mr. Hasegawa.

Q. You testified that the quality of food of the working party was about the same as the quality of food as the other POWs, what was the quality of the food?

A. I think, as far as I can recollect, the food issued at that time was 5 ozs. of rice and 10 ozs. of bread. I am talking of when I got back in September 1942. This was altered later on, however and the bread was cut down to 5 ozs. and the rice increased to about 12 ozs.

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref.		ins		ins	
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES							
WO 235 / 1012 PT1							
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' Terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.							

148

- Q. Do you know whether there was any addition made to the food issued for working parties?
- A. There was an additional amount allowed to working parties, but this was later on and not in the beginning.
- Q. Do you know how much this increase was?
- A. I could not say the exact amount -- it was shared out usually when they came back from a working party at night so I do not know exactly.
- Q. Then that means that later an extra addition of food was given to the working parties?
- A. Yes, that is so.

No further questions.

RE-EXAMINATION ^{RU} ~~IN CHIEF~~ -- declined.

COURT:

- Q. Can you tell the Court where is this place LI CHI KOK?
- A. It is ~~situation~~ situated about one mile from SHAMSHUIPO Camp.
- Q. When the POWs went to ABERDEEN how did they go?
- A. They were taken in some sea vessel.
- Q. You stated that Lt FIELD was beaten by a Japanese Officer, do you know who that officer was?
- I do not know his name but I understood from Lt FIELD that he was Adjutant to Col TOKUNAGA at that time, but I do not know his name but I do remember there was the same Adjutant during the whole time of interment.
- Q. Can you give the month and the year?
- A. Yes, I think it was December 1942.
- Q. You have told the Court that some of the men who went out on these working parties were sick -- can you describe what was the condition of these sick men from what you yourself saw?
- A. They were generally suffering from malnutritional diseases.
- Q. Did you ever see a man suffering from dysentery or diphtheria on any of these working parties?
- A. I cannot recollect about diphtheria but I should say there were some who were suffering from dysentery.
- Q. Was there any distinction made as to the work men had to do when they got to the place -- I mean between men who were fit and the men who were unfit?
- A. No, not at KIATAK ^{KATAK RU} or ABERDEEN.
- Q. If a man became so sick that he could not work or met with some accident at work, what would happen then?
- A. I should say that they would be allowed to rest for a time. If they met with a serious accident they would ask for transport to be taken back and after a time probably this transport would be obtained. I am talking of fairly serious accidents, though.
- Q. Who were the Japanese who supervised the work of these working parties -- were they the Camp Guards or were the working parties handed over to other personnel?
- A. As far as the work was concerned the parties were handed over to other personnel.
- Q. What was the attitude of this personnel to the POWs in the working parties?
- A. This varied a great deal -- the Japanese main interest was to get whatever work they had to be done, done as soon as possible. This came first irrespective of the condition of the men and the amount of work involved. The treatment depended largely on the type of work that had to be done.
- Q. ~~Apart from that can you recall any specific~~
A. X

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref.		ins		ins	
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES				WO 235/1012 PT1			
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives material.							

149

- Q. Apart from that can you recall any specific instances of illtreatment of POWs on the part of these supervisors?
- A. I can recollect people being beaten up for not doing work, sometimes by the sentries and sometimes by the supervisors.
- Q. While you were on these working parties did you ever see Col TOKUNAGA, at any time, come to inspect these parties, or see what work was being done?
- A. Yes, I did.
- Q. When did you see him and where?
- A. I have seen him at ~~HITAKA~~ KAITAK. ^{acc}
- Q. About how often, can you say roughly?
- A. Twice - certainly - during the times ^{acc} when I went out.
- Q. Besides Col TOKUNAGA did you see Lieut SAITO or any of the other Accused at any of these working parties?
- A. I can recollect Capt SAITO appearing on working parties but I cannot recollect seeing any of the others.
- Q. What working parties were those?
- A. ~~Also~~ KAITAK. ^{acc}
- Q. Did you ever go on a working party to HAPPY VALLEY?
- A. No sir.

COURT: Mr Fujita, arising out of the questions asked by the Court do you wish to ask any further questions?

DEFENCE: Yes.

- Q. You testified that some of the members of the working party were sick with dysentery, were these patients ever examined for germs?
- A. I presume they would have been.
- Q. After examination were these dysentery patients sent out on the working parties?
- A. I cannot recollect but there were people going out suffering from dysentery.
- Q. Then who included these dysentery patients in the working parties, -- who was responsible?
- A. We had to produce the number of men required for a working party -- that was the answer as I told you earlier.
- Q. Does that mean that even though the POW doctors knew that these men were sick with dysentery they were included in the working parties?
- A. I don't know whether there were ^{acc} all cases of dysentery -- there were so many men sick -- men with diarrhoea; men suffering from loose stomachs -- I was thinking more of men with diarrhoea and loose stomachs than men with dysentery.

No further questions.

COURT: Mr Hasegawa have you any further questions arising out of the questions made by the Court.

DEFENCE: No.

PROSECUTOR: No further questions.

COURT: Witness may stand down.

The Court is adjourned until 1000 hours on Monday, 9 December 46.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235 / 1012 PT1	
1	ins
2	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

NO 5 WAR CRIMES COURT.

TENTH DAY'S proceedings of the trial of Col TOKUNAGA ISAO, Capt SAITO SHUNKICHI, Lieut TANAKA HITOSHI, Interpreter TSUTADA and Sgt HARADA JOTARO, of the Imperial Japanese Army.

(Held at Jardine Matheson's East Point Godown on Monday, 9 December 1946).

1000 hours.

12 WITNESS FOR PROSECUTION -- Major C.F. MILES *having been duly sworn*

EXAMINATION IN CHIEF *is examined by the Prosecution RICH*
RICH

Witness is sworn in. RICH

Q. Will you tell the Court your full name?
A. Charles Frank Miles.

Q. What is your occupation?
A. My occupation at present is that of Chief Steward of the Hong Kong Government Medical Department.

Q. What does that occupation consist of?
A. At present -- the care of male staff and equipment other than pharmaceuticals in the whole of the Medical Department.

Q. Where do you live?
A. Queen Mary's Hospital.

Q. Will you tell the Court when you arrived here and what your job was when you first arrived?
A. Originally, I was appointed by the War Office as Deputy Assistant Director of Medical Services for the British Military Administration in Hong Kong in September 1945. I arrived here on November 6th 1945 and my duties during the period of the British Military Administration, and in fact, up to 1st September this year when I retired from the Army, were the care and procurement and the uncovering of all items of medical equipment including drugs, instruments and pharmaceuticals.

Q. What was the situation in regard to drugs when you arrived in November 1945?
A. When I arrived there were three uncovered sources of medical supplies; also there was a large medical store situated in the Government stores building at North Point.

COURT: Would you mind explaining to the Court what you mean by 'uncovered stores'.

WITNESS: Known and ascertained. I was originally charged with the job of uncovering stores already existing in Government buildings, the general idea being to collect them all into one central place. We first dealt with the three known sources.

COURT: Other than what the military had taken over?

WITNESS: The British Military Administration dealt mostly with the civil side. Certain military people, such as original occupying troops had also 'uncovered' medical stores in various barracks and things, which I did not take over.

COURT: I understand that you took over, on the 6th November or thereabouts, some stores, but not all the stores that were here when the Japanese capitulated?

WITNESS: That is correct.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
line	line

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.

WITNESS: The second store uncovered was a medical store plainly labelled in Japanese or Chinese characters, which meant 'Japanese Military Medical Store', having been controlled by the Japanese. This occupied the whole of the 6th floor of the Hong Kong, Shanghai Bank.

The third place was a collection of medical stores at Queen Mary's hospital which consisted of four very large rooms packed with pharmaceuticals, and three garages which contained between 230 to 240 cases of Japanese drugs.

COURT: Were there other stores than these that you have spoken of when you arrived here, and during the time of the Japanese capitulation?

WITNESS: We uncovered a further collection of medical stores in a godown which I believe was called the SUI BON FOR Godown which, at that time, was known as Japanese Military godown.

COURT: Where was that godown?

WITNESS: At West Point -- known to us as the Japanese Military godown. Apart from medical stores there were many thousands of smashed up and dismantled radio sets -- this was a big godown in the protected area of West Point where the Japanese had built gates at each end.

Q. What do you know of the Chinese Military Mission in respect to Japanese stores?

A. I was approached by a member of the Chinese Military Mission, through the liaison officer, in the earlier days, who made a claim to all military stores handed over by the Japanese. 230 or thereabouts cases of drugs, Japanese drugs, contained in the garages in the Queen Mary were handed over to the Chinese Military Mission. This was handed over at the time when I arrived. Subsequently, we handed over a further 65 cases.

COURT: Can you indicate to the Court the amount of those stores which you uncovered.

WITNESS: Of Medical Stores.

The stores which I took over were sufficient to maintain and care for the sick of this Colony, with the exception of a few special items which we obtained from the R.N. that were not available, until the end of January when the first emergency supplies arrived from outside.

COURT: When you say, the sick, do you mean the European sick?

WITNESS: Excluding the Services, which we did not treat at all, all the sick of the Colony, in private hospitals and nursing homes; there was one nursing home, I think, which closed down -- other than that every hospital was controlled by the British Military Administration and supplied by them as well.

Q. Can you indicate the ~~proportion~~ proportion of those stores which were stores recaptured? Have you the documents?

A. Yes, I have.

COURT: Major PUDDICOMBE, is this document being produced as an Exhibit?

PROSECUTOR: Sir, they are his books and I do not think Major MILES can submit them to the Court.

COURT: Were these books made by you at the time when you were taking over the stores?

1		2		Ref.		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
cms						WO 235 / 1012 PT1	
						1	
						ins	
						2	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.

WITNESS: I am not referring to them -- I actually borrowed the documents from the Custodian of Property to refresh ~~myself~~^{my memory} I originally, the books were forwarded by me to him, and they contain a list of drugs which we did not want and which we passed back to him for disposal. At the moment I want to refer especially to the rough proportions of Japanese and Allied drugs in it.

COURT: Unless the Witness can give evidence with regard to these documents which he did not make himself, I must have copies, as ~~exhibits~~ ^{originals} ~~properly~~ ^{certified} ~~not~~ ^{not}

WITNESS: The list was originally prepared by me -- I only recovered it from the Custodian of Property for the purpose of referring to it. This list is a list of 40 typed sheets of items amounting in all to 255 lots of drugs which we did not find necessary for use; they have a high market value, and were returned to the Custodian of Property by us. The lots in this are variable; in some cases there are many thousands of tins of a drug. In other cases there are probably amounts of only 20 tins or something like that. In the main the lots are fairly sufficiently large enough to occupy one whole godown.

COURT: Out of the drugs that were unuseable were there any British drugs?

WITNESS: Sir, I would rather not say British drugs -- if I might say so, I would rather use the term Allied drugs -- that would be much better as there were only some British drugs -- others were made by American producing branches in China; some of the drugs recovered were made in Shanghai or places like that.

Q: Were these drugs here when the British surrendered to the Japanese?
or when the Japanese surrendered to the British?

Q. I cannot answer that question, sir. That they were here when the British surrendered, I am not able to say -- possibly the Japanese may have brought them from Singapore or China. They were definitely or Allied origin and could not have come in from our countries.

COURT: Was there anything to indicate they might have been British or Canadian Army Medical stores?

WITNESS: Some of them, sir, yes.

COURT: Was there anything to indicate that any of them might have been Red Cross stores?

WITNESS: There was no indication that any of them might have been Red Cross supplies -- there was every indication that a proportion of them, were, in fact, British Army Medical Stores from WOOLICH^{WCC} -- they were issued in bottles relabelled from bulk and bore the name of the drug and the name of issue -- marked 'Army Medical Stores, WOOLICH'. But only a small proportion of them.

Q. What were the stores in North Point - Japanese or British?

A. They were mainly British, American or Chinese, i.e. not native Chinese -- Chinese from pharmaceutical factories in Shanghai, and a little less than one-quarter, I shall have to estimate this, of Japanese propriety medicines such as TOKADA and other firms.

Q. Will you tell the Court, from your records, what are the parts of such drugs as Epsom salts?

A. Magnesium Sulphate? I must point out to the Court my records ~~for the~~
do not concern the first two months of the British occupation; at that
time there was neither the staff nor the opportunity to run collective
records in each of the places.

I personally remember in North Point store a matter of about $2\frac{1}{2}$ to 3 tons of magnesium sulphate packed into bags of about 120 lbs. a bag and marked 'Magnesium Sulphate', U.S.

[illegible]

Q. What about Emetine?

A. Emetine is a drug which is used hypodermically or subcutaneously in the treatment of amebic dysentery.

Q. Are you a dispenser?

A. Yes, I have been for several years.

I have a record here of North Point alone which shows approximately 3,000 ampuls of emetine. This, to the best of my knowledge, did not constitute all the stock. I have also another record of the Shanghai Bank store which shows 378 boxes each containing a dozen ampuls.

COURT: Before we leave the question of emetine -- from your knowledge of dispensing, is emetine also used for bacillary dysentery as opposed to amebic dysentery?

WITNESS : I have never seen it used for this purpose at all -- I have 25 years experience and have never seen it used.

Q. What about sulphas?

A. Sulpha drugs in the main were not freely available. Most of the sulpha drugs in use at the present time were evolved during the late war. I remember taking over, I do not think I have a record of it here, but I assume it was used in emergency, some 40 to 50 tins of M & B 693. In view of the very small amount of M & B 693 it is possible this may have been obtained during the few weeks I arrived here from another source.

Q. What about vitamin preparations?

A. Vitamins A and D, preparations such as Cod Liver Oil and malt of various preparations -- there was a fairly good supply. There was a pretty good supply of vitamin B, preparations of which were, to a large extent, Japanese. Japanese yeast preparations done up in small screws of paper containing a dose in each screw of paper and Japanese Yeast tablets. There was also quite an appreciable stock of various very expensive patent tonics which contained a small proportion of Vitamin B1, like Parke Davis' Metatone.

Q. What about anaesthetics?

A. There was very little chloroform uncovered but there was quite a number of cases of ether; about two thirds of which one could say was of British or American production. This could be easily identified as an Allied production because the ether, of which we still have some two or three cases now, are packed up in brass cans with a patent lid or screw cap so as to prevent any form of explosion. The remainder of the ether was, I think, Japanese.

Q. Because they were in cans, why must they be of British manufacture?

A. I am afraid you have misunderstood the point -- they were in the type of cans used in the manufacture of our products and were actually labelled as such and bore the name of BURGONNE BURBIDGES (British) and MALLINKRODT (American). To a great extent, the remainder of the ether was in rather peculiar looking 3/4 oz. glass ampuls and appeared to be of Japanese manufacture, and in fact bore the name NARGOSI on the label.

Q. Have you anything you want to add relevant to what drugs were found by you when taking over these stores?

A. The only thing I have to say is that it would appear from the enormous amount of stuff that we took over, for instance the amount handed over to the Custodian of Property, the weight of which, at a rough estimate was between 15 and 20 tons, the stock was sufficient to occupy the whole of a bonded warehouse, piled high -- and that is not taking into consideration such articles as sulpha drugs and penicillin and also such items as were taken over by the fighting forces. And altogether these stores were sufficient to carry us through until we got our first emergency supplies in January.

No further questions.

COURT:

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref.		1		ins	
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES		WO 235/1012 PT1					

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives material.

COURT:

Q. You stated that there were enough drugs for the sick in Hong Kong for about two months?

A. More than that, in fact -- the first supplies of emergency drugs arrived here on a ship on the 15th of January and we did not take them into use until the end of January.

Q. Can you give the Court any indication what was the civil population at that time and the number of sick during that period?

A. I am afraid I cannot answer that question freely. Hospitals were full to capacity but the bed strengths at that time were not quite the same, I mean as high, as they are now. We had on an average, and I should say this is a general figure, about 2,000 to ~~2,500~~ 2,500 equipped beds occupied during that time. In fact I should think the minimum figure would be more correct -- say about 2,000 equipped beds daily at that time. I must point out that in addition to hospitals we had, at that time, a large number of medical clinics in existence all over the colony.

Q. These quantities of drugs -- did they cover the sick in the Colony of Hong Kong only or did they also cover Kowloon and the outer territories as well?

A. They covered the whole colony including the new territories. There is one thing, however -- during those early days, the services in Hong Kong, particularly on the other side, for instance the R.A.F. and others, also established unofficial clinics themselves. We did not get all the sick, therefore, particularly from the new territories.

Q. Can you tell the Court anything about serums of any kind which you found?

A. The only serum, of which we uncovered colossal quantities, was cholera vaccine which, in the main, was out of date. In respect of other serums, the Government Bacteriological Institute and the Bacteriological Institute in Kowloon, although part of our Department, had been run during the war and therefore stocks were localised there under the Pathologist -- this was none of my concern and therefore I did not uncover anything apart from the vaccine.

Q. Can you tell the Court of anything you may have discovered with regard to surgical instruments, dressings and disinfectants?

A. There were large quantities of dressings -- some of them European -- some, a kind of fibre paper composition, which were Japanese -- numbers of field dressings and shell dressings which appeared to me to be either British or Dominion Army -- looked like that to me.

Q. What about disinfectants? Answer this generally?

A. There was between 1 ton and $1\frac{1}{2}$ tons of crude Phenol in large glass carboys; also quantities of Formaldehyde and Johnson's deodorising fluid, apart from large quantities amounting to several tons of Chloride of Lime and some five tons or thereabouts of crude sulphur.

Q. Are you prepared to swear to these facts to which you have referred in your notes?

A. In the Custodian's list -- yes -- because I prepared this myself. To the others, these were prepared by clerks and I cannot swear to something I did not handle myself. I brought these ledgers to refresh my memory. The officer who actually made them has now left the Colony. They are, however, Government ledgers made at the time the stores were opened up at North Point. With regard to items such as Magnesium Sulphate, I can swear to this and as I handled and transported the stores myself.

COURT: Major PUDDICOMBE, with reference to this list -- I would like to have extracts relative to these items -- the two items referred to. Certified true copies of these extracts will be required and the Court must be able to check these Extracts with the Original at the time they are submitted.

The Court will adjourn for five minutes.

1		2	
cms		Ref:	
WO 235/1012 PT1		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1		2	
ins		ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

CROSS-EXAMINATION by Mr Fujita.

Q. The drugs that were recovered at North Point and also at Hong Kong Shanghai Bank, do you know under the supervision and control of which Japanese Units those drugs were at the time of the capitulation?

A. No.

No further questions.

CROSS-EXAMINATION -- Mr. Hasegawa -- declined.

RE-EXAMINATION -- declined.

COURT

Q. When you took over these drugs at the various godowns was there anything about the way in which they were stored, or the condition they were in -- can you give any indication as to how long they had been in these godowns?

A. I am afraid not. The Hong Kong Shanghai Bank Store, when I saw it on my arrival, was a properly run store; it was not a place in which drugs had been dumped and had been shut up; no, to all intents and purposes, it appeared consistently used, and would appear to have been an issue depot. The same applies to the North Point Store.

Q. Can you tell the Court, from your experience as a dispenser, what drugs, apart from what you have described, in tablets, are used for treating pellagra and were any drugs for the treatment of this disease found in the stores uncovered?

A. There are certain highly developed and concentrated types of vitamin preparations that are usually given over a period by injection; there were none of those. The only vitamin preparations which we took over in fairly reasonably large stocks was vitamin products for war oral and administration.

COURT: Mr Fujita have you any further questions arising out of the questions asked by the Court.

DEFENCE: No.

COURT: Mr. Hasegawa -- have you any further questions arising out of the questions asked by the Court.

DEFENCE: No.

COURT: Major PUDDICOMBE -- have you any further questions arising out of the questions the Court has asked.

PROSECUTOR: No.

COURT: Witness may stand down.

PROSECUTOR: Sir I would like to mention in reference to the list of witnesses -- there will be one or two more witnesses under the First Charge under Sub-section (a), viz. Lt Col FREDERICK, who I have called in tomorrow morning. In the meantime Dr. J.W. ANDERSON will give evidence this afternoon. With regard to Major BAILLIE, I would like to take this witness from Sub-section (a) of the First Charge and will produce him under sub-section (b).

I will now continue to read affidavits.

(The Prosecutor reads the unsworn statement of Major ASETON-ROSE, (Exhibit M(1)).

COURT: Major PUDDICOMBE, will you explain -- in addition to the original handwritten statement of Major ASETON-ROSE there seems to be attached, statements made by other officers. There is a statement by Capt COOMES, Capt STRAHAN and one by Capt EVANS?

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref:		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES		Ins	
		WO 235/1012 PT1					

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.

PROSECUTOR: These statements are preliminary statements made at the time this one was made. Subsequent affidavits have been taken. I have already read that of Capt STRAHAN, I have one of Capt EVANS', and Capt COOMBES will be a live witness.

Attached to the statement of Major ASHTON-ROSE, is a certificate during the period 21 August 1942 and 4 September 1942 with regard to diphtheria. This is dated 26th February 1943.

Before proceeding with the affidavits, sir, I wish to submit the photographs mentioned in the previous affidavits -- I presume you want these on record as well.

(The photographs are produced to the Court).

These are exhibited by the Prosecutor marked V. and attached to Colonel REID'S affidavit. Rec

(The Prosecutor reads the affidavit of Surg.Lt. JACKSON, marked (as Exhibit O(1)).

(The Prosecutor reads the affidavit of Lt.Col. SHACKLETON, marked (as Exhibit P(1)). Extracts only are read.

(Prosecutor reads the affidavit of Lt.Col. ROBERTSON, R.A.M.C. (marked Exhibit S(1)).

The Court is adjourned until 1400 hours.

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref:		1		line	
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES							
WO 235/1012 PT1							
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' material.							

TENTH DAY

9 Dec.46 P.M.

At 1400 hrs. on 9 Dec. the Court re-assemble pursuant to adjournment; present the same Members as at adjournment.

13th WITNESS FOR THE PROSECUTION - Dr. J.W. ANDERSON.

On being sworn is examined by the Prosecutor.

Q. Will you tell the Court your full name?
A. James William ANDERSON.

Q. Profession?
A. Surgeon.

Q. Will you qualify yourself, in the usual manner?
A. Bachelor of Medicine, Bachelor of Surgery, Fellow of the Royal College of Surgeons.

Q. What post-graduate experience have you had?
A. I have been in HONG KONG since 1924 up till the outbreak of war and again this year in practice.

Q. Did you say where you obtained your degrees?
A. All at EDINBURGH.

Q. You were about to continue about post-graduate work?
A. During the war I was Temporary Major in the Royal Army Medical Corps in HONG KONG.

Q. Where do you reside at present?
A. My offices are at ALEXANDRA Buildings, HONG KONG.

Q. Do you know the Accused?
A. Yes, all with the exception of TSUTADA whom I only knew by sight.

Q. Can you indicate which is which?
A. Col. TOKUNAGA in front, Capt. SAITO and HARADA, and the others I had no personal experience of.

Q. Which is SAITO?
A. Capt. SAITO with the glasses on the far side, right hand side.

Q. I understand you were taken POW at the fall of HONG KONG in 1941. Will you tell the Court briefly where you served your imprisonment?

A. I was serving in BOWEN Road military hospital as Surgical Specialist and was captured on 25 December. I remained there until March 1945 when the BOWEN Road hospital was closed. In March 1945 I went to SHAM SHUI PO Camp, the men's division, until April 1945. Then I was transferred to the Central British School where in August 1945 we were liberated.

Q. Was that hospital as an organisation known as the British Military Hospital?
A. It was.

Q. Will you tell the Court in general what the function of the hospital was, in relation to the POW camps?
A. The hospital was intended to serve as a hospital for cases from all the camps in HONG KONG and KOWLOON.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235 / 1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

- Q. In what way would they serve the camps in KOWLOON and HONG KONG?
- A. In HONG KONG at the beginning we had cases from North Point camp and later we had them from SHAM SHUI PO from August 1942 onwards. They were sent in drafts from there. In North Point we had occasionally one or two men admitted but there again it was a case of drafts.
- Q. Can you tell the Court what the conditions of the transfer of these patients were between the camps and the hospital?
- A. From North Point they were brought by lorry or car, from SHAM SHUI PO by lighter or ferry and then by lorry from the pier up to BOWEN Road Hospital.
- Q. This method of transport you speak of, can you indicate to the Court the suitability for the type of work you had to do then?
- A. The drafts from SHAM SHUI PO were usually so great in number that they were very over-crowded in the journey. For serious cases it was certainly an ordeal to come from SHAM SHUI PO to BOWEN Road under these conditions. I do not remember an ambulance ever being used although stretchers were put on lorries.
- Q. What were the conditions of segregation of various types of cases on these transfer trips?
- A. Practically none at all. Certain infectious cases did have a mask put on before they left and would still have them on arrival, but the conditions were definite over-crowding of practically all patients and the cases prescribed from the camp hospital.
- Q. What was the criterion for moving a patient from SHAM SHUI PO to BOWEN Road hospital?
- A. I believe recommendations were made by the British medical officer in SHAM SHUI PO as regards transfer of cases, but in many cases patients were too ill really to travel and arrived in one case, ~~one~~ dying on the way. Another I remember died a few hours after arrival; they obviously should have been moved to hospital, if any good could have come from hospital, some time before.
- Q. Do you recall a man named LAPOINTE?
- A. Yes, I think he was the man I have just referred to, who died ~~from~~ ^{on the way from} camp to hospital.
- Q. Who was the man you spoke of who died a few hours after admission. Do you recall his name?
- A. A HONG KONG Volunteer by the name of RAPP.
- Q. Do you know how long he had been ill in SHAM SHUI PO before he was moved?
- A. He had been ill for a matter of weeks before removal from SHAM SHUI PO.
- Q. What was the nature of the illness?
- A. Beri-beri.
- Q. You recall a man called HOOK?
- A. Major HOOK of the WILTIPPEG Grenadiers.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cm	Ref:
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.

- Q. What do you know about him?
 A. He was in the officers' camp at KOWLOON and developed a very serious symptom of encephalitis.
- Q. When you speak of the officers' camp, which do you mean?
 A. He was then in ARGYLL Street officers' camp. He was brought in to hospital which was then at Central British School in 1945 after he had been ill for 10 days. He died a few days later.
- Q. He was brought into hospital with encephalitis?
 A. Yes.
- Q. What happened to Major HOOK?
 A. Efforts had been made I understand by, I think, Capt. STRAHAN of the I.M.S. to have him removed earlier but he had not been moved until he was in a very serious condition indeed.
- Q. What treatment could he have been given in the British military hospital that was not available in the other hospital? What was the point of bringing him to your hospital?
 A. We had better facilities first of all for nursing him and probably for drugs also.
- Q. Do you recall a man called SMITH?
 A. Bombardier SMITH who was operated on in August 1945. Requests had been made to remove him for operation from SHAM SHUI PO men's camp but they were turned down. Eventually they had to operate in SHAM SHUI PO men's camp. He was sent along later to us with a very foul discharging wound, violently septic.
- Q. To turn to Major HOOK for a minute. Can you indicate to the Court the length of time between the onset of his illness and the time he arrived in your hospital, and the time he died?
 A. About 10 days after he had taken ill he arrived in hospital. He died 7 or 8 days after admission.
- Q. Do you recall a man called BOWKER?
 A. Yes, Lt. A.C.I. BOWKER of the HONG KONG Volunteer Defence Corps. He was sent over from officers' camp ARGYLL Street to BOWEN Road Hospital with an acute obstruction of the intestines and it was three days after the symptoms had developed in spite of repeated requests in the officers' camp to have him moved for operation. He arrived in BOWEN Road and died before I could operate him. He was a particularly ~~obscure~~ case with me because if he had arrived 3 days before, he was in fairly good general condition and would almost certainly have been saved by an ~~all~~ operation.
- Q. You have spoken both in the case of Major HOOK and Lt. BOWKER to requests having been made. To whom were these made?
 A. I am referring to requests made by medical officers of the camp, of which I heard afterwards and of which the patients themselves informed me, at the time made both to the Camp Commandant and, in both these cases, to Capt. SAITON.

COURT: Dr. ANDERSON, you used the words just now "in these 2 cases". Are you referring to Lt. BOWKER and Bombardier SMITH or to Major HOOK?

1		2		1		2	
cm		Ref.		1		In	
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES							
WO 235 / 1012 PT1							
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.							

A: Major PUDDICOMBE mentioned Major HOOK and Lt. BOWLER and my last answer was referring to these two. The same applies to Bombardier SMITH also. I was not asked directly in that question.

- Q. You spoke too of the condition of Lt. BOWLER. Are you able to say positively what caused his death?
- A. Yes, I performed a post-mortem examination and found the condition had been due to a volvulus of the colon or twist in the large bowel.
- Q. What was the condition of the hospital supplies when the Japanese took over the British military hospital at BOWEN Road?
- A. We had a full set of surgical instruments, including, anaesthetics and anesthetic machines. We had a quite fair supply of drugs of practically all kinds and a well-stocked dispensary, and we had equipment in the way of blankets and beds to house 300 to 400 comfortably although rather crowded.
- Q. What, if any, action did the Japanese take regarding these stores in the hospital?
- A. Some were removed; others were left. We had for the first 2 or 3 months a fair supply of drugs we required but we had no vitamin preparations in store. Therefore, when the lack of vitamins became evident we had nothing with which to combat it except for what we could get outside.
- Q. What about anaesthetics?
- A. We had in the beginning as I said sufficient anaesthetics but in the course of a few months these ran out completely, with the exception of some spinal anesthetic which I continued to use almost throughout; I do not think Capt. SAITO was aware of its presence.
- Q. What is emetin?
- A. Emetin is an alkaloid in the treatment of amoebic dysentery.
- Q. What about your supply of that drug?
- A. Our supplies of emetin ran out within a few months as we had quite a number of cases of dysentery, even in January 1942.
- Q. What type of dysentery are you referring to?
- A. Amoebic dysentery as opposed to bacillary dysentery.
- Q. Was this type of dysentery present throughout the term of your imprisonment?
- A. Yes, we had cases of amoebic dysentery practically the whole of the period from January 1942 to August 1945. The same might be said of bacillary dysentery. We were almost never free from cases.
- Q. What is the treatment of bacillary dysentery?
- A. That is treated by the use of salts and the use of sulphur drugs, one of the sulphur preparations.
- Q. What salts are used?
- A. The sulphates or Epsom salts and associated allied salts.
- Q. How was your supply of Epsom salts and sulphates during the course of your internment?
- A. After the first few months we were almost always short of it. We were supplied with some by Capt. SAITO but we never had enough for our requirements.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref.
WO 235 / 1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	ins

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

- Q. Can you indicate to the Court just how short you were?
 A. At times we had none at all for a matter of several weeks. At other times we were given 1 or 1½ lbs. which was very soon used up, a matter of days.
- Q. Did you say that bacillary dysentery was also treated with sulphur drugs?
 A. Yes.
- Q. Can you tell the Court what type of sulphur drug would be used?
 A. ~~Sulph~~ Sulfa granadine. This is the best but the other sulphur preparations can also be used for the disease.
- Q. What sulphur drugs did you receive from the Japanese?
 A. We received preparations called TRIANON, the exact chemical composition of which I am unaware, which was the only sulphur drug which we received from them.
- Q. How adequate was that supply?
 A. In my opinion entirely inadequate. On most occasions we had to ration our patients, down to a certain amount, and to cut off from some entirely, in order that the others might have a fair quantity with which they could be treated.
- Q. What is the condition referred to as Avitaminosis?
 A. We use the expression avitaminosis to include all diseases attributable to lack of vitamins in the diet.
- Q. What experience had you of this condition during your incarceration?
 A. The first indication we had was I think in April 1942 when a lack of Vitamin B became evident among certain prisoners.
- Q. Commonly speaking, Doctor, what is ~~the~~ Vitamin B? Where is it found?
 A. In green foods, in cheese, yeast, fruits and things of that nature. It is found in many forms of food.
- Q. What forms does avitaminosis take?
 A. Lack of vitamin A was shown by a condition in the eyes on the surface of the eye-ball. Lack of vitamin B was shown in conditions of the nervous system and also in the intestines, also in the eyes and the back of the eye. Another effect of Vitamin B lack was on the circulation, affecting the heart and causing water logging of the limbs, swelling of the limbs.
- Q. Where do you find Vitamin A?
 A. In vegetables, especially things like carrots.
- Q. ~~What about~~ Vitamin C?
 A. Lack of it causes a disease known as scurvy. That we fortunately did not see much of during our imprisonment.
- Q. What measures were taken by you in respect to these dietary deficiencies?
 A. In the beginning when we were allowed to buy certain articles through the canteen we bought what we could and issued it to the patients to implement their rations. During the full course of the imprisonment we ran a fund for that purpose buying first of all through the canteen and later through the agency of sentries and any agency we could get ~~for some~~. While it was allowed, some money was sent out through the Camp Commandant to friends outside who then endeavoured to spend it to the best advantage possible and this was often brought in, the food.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref.
WO 235 /1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

- Q. What representations were made to the Japanese respecting diet?
- A. Numerous representations were made throughout the full period and on one or two occasions a very full medical report was given. Capt. SAITO was given a very full report on one occasion which I remember, in February 1943 containing observations on the diet, our estimation of the protein, carbo-hydrate and fat content and also of the vitamin content.
- Q. Who made these reports, this report to Dr. SAITO?
- A. The report was drawn up by all the medical officers and it was actually signed by Col. BOWIE as officer commanding.
- Q. In the report to Dr. SAITO was any conclusion drawn by your report in the event of the diet continuing as it did?
- A. Yes, the conclusions, or rather the results of the diet were referred to verbally on many occasions and in these reports, which were perhaps more carefully worded, they were also included. It was pointed out that even with the additional food which we were able to get through outside agencies and the International Red Cross, even with that, our diet fell below the minimum which we expected for patients.
- Q. How serious then were the diseases under the heading of avitaminosis? Did you suffer any deaths or was it hardly prevalent?
- A. There were well over 200 deaths attributable to malnutrition, avitaminosis, or some mild condition supervening on top of these which carried patients off.
- Q. Had the report you made been acted upon fully by the Japanese, Dr. SAITO, what would your death rate have been?
- A. We should have had no deaths except for those possibly from late results of war wounds and other causes which were not attributable. We should have had no deaths at all from malnutrition or avitaminosis.
- Q. Will you tell the Court what you know of the incidence of diphtheria during the Japanese occupation?
- A. Our first cases in BOWEN Road were I think in July 1942. They continued till the end of that year, the worst period being August to October 1942.
- Q. Did those cases get infected in the hospital?
- A. Only some of those. We got them from North Point camp and SHAM SHUI PO camp. Owing to the difficulty of segregation we had one or two cases infected in the hospital but these were fortunately few.
- Q. What is the effective treatment for diphtheria?
- A. The only effective one was the use of anti-diphtheric serum in sufficient doses.
- Q. Are there any prophylactic measures that can be taken against the disease?
- A. Yes, you can have preventative inoculations in the presence of an epidemic with serum, and you can also use antiseptic gargles, throat sprays to kill off any diphtheria organisms which may be in the throats of those who have not actually got the disease but are carrying the organism.
- Q. Once the disease makes its presence known, what is the normal accepted procedure? When it is known that the disease is present in the community; I do not mean in the individual.

1		2		Ref.		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
cms						WO 235/1012 PT1	
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' material.							

- Q. What representations were made to the Japanese respecting diet?
- A. Numerous representations were made throughout the full period and on one or two occasions a very full medical report was given. Capt. SAITO was given a very full report on one occasion which I remember, in February 1943 containing observations on the diet, our estimation of the protein, carbo-hydrate and fat content and also of the vitamin content.
- Q. Who made these reports, this report to Dr. SAITO?
- A. The report was drawn up by all the medical officers and it was actually signed by Col. BOWIE as officer commanding.
- Q. In the report to Dr. SAITO was any conclusion drawn by your report in the event of the diet continuing as it did?
- A. Yes, the conclusions, or rather the results of the diet were referred to verbally on many occasions and in these reports, which were perhaps more carefully worded, they were also included. It was pointed out that even with the additional food which we were able to get through outside agencies and the International Red Cross, even with that, our diet fell below the minimum which we expected for patients.
- Q. How serious then were the diseases under the heading of avitaminosis? Did you suffer any deaths or was it hardly prevalent?
- A. There were well over 200 deaths attributable to malnutrition, avitaminosis, or some mild condition supervening on top of these which carried patients off.
- Q. Had the report you made been acted upon fully by the Japanese, Dr. SAITO, what would your death rate have been?
- A. We should have had no deaths except for those possibly from late results of war wounds and other causes which were not attributable. We should have had no deaths at all from malnutrition or avitaminosis.
- Q. Will you tell the Court what you know of the incidence of diphtheria during the Japanese occupation?
- A. Our first cases in BOWEN Road were I think in July 1942. They continued till the end of that year, the worst period being August to October 1942.
- Q. Did those cases get infected in the hospital?
- A. Only some of those. We got them from North Point camp and SHAM SHUI PO camp. Owing to the difficulty of segregation we had one or two cases infected in the hospital but these were fortunately few.
- Q. What is the effective treatment for diphtheria?
- A. The only effective one was the use of anti-diphtheric serum in sufficient doses.
- Q. Are there any prophylactic measures that can be taken against the disease?
- A. Yes, you can have preventative inoculations in the presence of an epidemic with serum, and you can also use antiseptic gargles, throat sprays to kill off any diphtheria organisms which may be in the throats of those who have not actually got the disease but are carrying the organism.
- Q. Once the disease makes its presence known, what is the normal accepted procedure? When it is known that the disease is present in the community; I do not mean in the individual.

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref:		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES		ms	
		WO 235 /1012 PT1					

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

- A. All contacts with cases should be segregated until their throats can be proved free of organisms by investigation in a bacteriological laboratory.
- Q. What did you point out to the Japanese in ~~respect~~ ^{connection with} ~~spite of~~ this procedure?
- A. Certain throat swabs were taken and given to them for investigation. What exactly happened to them afterwards we do not know. They were reported as being negative.
- Q. Can you say approximately when that was done, within a month?
- A. I should say the swabs were certainly taken away either September or October 1942 from DOWEN Road Hospital.
- Q. What about segregation? You have spoken of the swabs and the method of segregation. What did the Japanese do about that?
- A. We had all the cases in one room or its verandah; that was all we could do. Those working with them wore masks and gargled their throats. Other patients were not allowed into that room. If any case developed in another ward in the hospital it was impossible to segregate the other patients in that ward.
- Q. To your knowledge could the Japanese have effectively put at your disposal means of segregation?
- A. Certainly not in the hospital as it then was; we were too over-crowded.
- Q. Respecting the serum, what serum had you in the hospital at the time of the onslaught of this disease?
- A. There was no serum in the hospital and we received from the Japanese on 3 occasions a total of under 100,000 units.
- Q. Do you remember when these units you speak of were received?
- A. The first I think in August 1942, the last of the 3 batches about the beginning of October, 1942.
- Q. How many patients would 100,000 units treat?
- A. About three-quarters of one patient.
- Q. Were requests made to anyone for the increasing of the supply?
- A. Yes, requests were made to Cpl. SANO who was Camp Commandant and to Capt. SAITO himself.
- Q. What was the effect of the requests?
- A. We only received the amounts I have already stated.
- Q. What, to your knowledge, was the state of supply of this serum in the Colony?
- A. In December 1941 there were ample supplies to have coped with the epidemic in all the camps to our knowledge in the Colony - British supplies.
- Q. Can you tell the Court anything about the whereabouts of these supplies?
- A. I am referring to supplies held by the British Army medical authorities and also in several refrigerated godowns where trade supplies, such as those of EVANS, ~~LESCOT~~ ^{LESTER} and WEBB and other firms were stored.
- Q. To your knowledge did Dr. SAITO know of these supplies in the godowns you speak of?
- A. I offered myself to go and find these supplies but the offer was refused.
- Q. To whom did you make the offer?
- A. Cpl. SANO and Capt. SAITO were present.

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref.		1		ins	
		WO 235/1012 PT1					

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

The Court goes into temporary recess at 1130 h. a.
The Court re-assembles at 1135 h. a.

- Q. Just one more question about diphtheria. Will you tell the Court what could be done in regard to alleviating the diphtheria victims that were in your charge? *tracheotomy* a.c.
- A. Since the use of anti-diphtheria serum, *tracheotomy* - opening of the throat to allow air to go in to prevent suffocation - was practically unknown. I had to do several of these *tracheotomies*, not to save life but merely to extend it and ease the sufferings of others who were only a few feet away from people throttling to death. As we were not allowed lights at night, these had sometimes to be done practically in the dark with no asepsis instruments at all.
- Q. What lights were available?
- A. At that time a very shaded torch was allowed at night by those responsible for the night care but as we had not room inside the diphtheria ward or room and many of the cases were on the verandah, crowded together, these tracheotomies had to be done there in bed, in the dark. The operation is an emergency one and has to be performed at once if at all. There is no question of removing him to a more suitable place. Those who did not *acquire* *get a* *tracheotomy* *a.c.* died of paralysis of muscles due to the poison absorbed. Those who survived the epidemic (there were a few) some of them were left with paralysis of the muscles, legs, arms, chest and in some cases face, which persisted for a very long time and rendered them more liable by their weakness to catch other diseases which became prevalent later on. In all there were about 100 deaths from diphtheria or diphtheria supervening on avitaminosis. We could have saved probably 95 percent of those patients with food and serum and probably 80 percent with serum alone without the food.
- Q. Turning to the *tracheotomy* *a.c.* for a moment and your necessity for performing them, what could have been done to ameliorate those conditions. *tracheotomy* *a.c.*
- A. If we had had enough serum the need for *tracheotomy* *a.c.* would probably never have arisen. If the cases had been able to be nursed in comfort then the conditions would have been very much better for patients. They were so crowded that *there* were patients on either side, a few feet away listening to the whole operation.
- Q. What could have been done? How could this have been remedied, these conditions of no light and close proximity of one patient with the other?
- A. The more seriously ill could have been moved to small rooms or to an operating theatre if necessary and prevented, as I say, the sufferings of those who had not reached that stage.
- Q. Why then, Doctor, was this not done? Why were they not put in the operating room or put in small isolated rooms?
- A. The rooms were not available and it meant taking these patients through part of the hospital to the operating room, if we had been allowed to do so, at night in a part occupied by patients not suffering from the disease.

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref.		1		ins	
		WO 235/1012 PT1					

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

- Q. What do you mean when you say "if you had been allowed to do so?"
- A. Permission to move the patient to the operating theatre had to be obtained first from the Japanese at night and there was no time to make these arrangements.
- Q. What requests were made, if any, respecting permission to move the patients or to place them in a more advantageous position?
- A. The ward in which they were was the diphtheria ward. There was no other accommodation available inside the wire.
- Q. I do not think I made myself plain. Did you or did you not ask that these conditions under which you were labouring, making ~~tetani~~ ^{tetanus} and so on, would be bettered; or did you ask for better facilities in that respect?
- A. We were constantly asking for better facilities for that and other things which we wished to do.
- Q. To who were these requests made?
- A. To Cpl. SANO and Capt. SAITO.
- Q. Will you tell the Court from your observation what you considered SAITO's attitude or character generally was toward the patients and toward the other members of the staff?
- A. Our impression was that Capt. SAITO was not interested in the welfare of the patients or of the staff.
- Q. On what did you premise that impression?
- A. To ~~all~~ ^{all} requests we had practically no answer or refusal. The amount of drugs supplied by the Japanese, as I say, was inadequate, ~~but~~ in many cases hopelessly inadequate. As a medical officer he was fully aware of the situation in both BOWEN ROAD hospital and the camp and in our opinion did nothing in any way to ease the situation.
- Q. Who was the c/o of BOWEN Road Hospital?
- A. You mean Japanese?
- Q. British.
- A. In the beginning Col. SHAKLETON ^{RE} who was removed in August 1942 and then Col. POWIE.
- Q. What access had these officers to Capt. SAITO?
- A. Capt. SAITO arrived at BOWEN Road I think in February, at the end of February 1942. He lived in a house which was the old Sisters' quarters of the hospital but was not there all the time. He did not come daily and in most cases requests to see him had to be made through Cpl. SANO.
- Q. How co-operative was he in receiving these requests to see him?
- A. Both ~~G/Os~~ ^{G/Os} saw him on many occasions but with both of them the usual answer was either "No" or delay and, as I said before, we very rarely got anything we really wanted.
- Q. When you say the answer was "No", was that answer in reply to a request to see SAITO?
- A. On some occasions the greatest difficulty was experienced in delay, sometimes of days, in seeing him.
- Q. What was his attitude toward your and your fellow medical officers' diagnoses of various diseases?
- A. He very rarely examined any case in hospital.
- Q. In that case did he or did he not accept your diagnoses?
- A. Yes, he accepted our diagnoses. The only time they

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235 / 1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

were refused was on death certificates we had to change some diagnoses to suit the Japanese and Capt. SAITO.

- Q. Will you illustrate his refusal to accept diagnoses on death certificates, briefly?
- A. They were chiefly references to malnutrition or avitaminosis which were altered by us on his order.
- Q. Respecting his treatment of the hospital staff and patients, will you tell the Court anything you know in this regard, for instance his treatment of Lt. Col. BOWIE.
- A. Col. BOWIE and other officers were slapped on several occasions by Capt. SAITO for the most trivial offences. He also paraded diphtheria convalescent patients who were all slapped for looking over the front side of the verandah at BOWEN Road at an air-raid. These men were all sick men, some of them barely able to stand. Capt. SAITO's only appearance, I think, in the diphtheria ward was to slap the convalescent patients, as far as I remember.
- Q. Have you anything to say in regard to Major BOXER?
- A. Yes, Major BOXER was a patient of ours who was shot through the lung and had a severe nerve injury in one arm. He was paraded on one occasion I remember, I think in September or October 1942, and slapped. That was for his refusal to sign the escape promise, or rather his explanation of his refusal to sign. Every person in BOWEN Road was asked to sign a form saying he would not escape. Some refused, among them Major BOXER, and his explanation was that no Japanese officer would have signed such a document. Therefore he was not prepared to sign it. He was then slapped, when I was present on that occasion. Later Major BOXER signed the certificate. I myself and Col. BOWIE and I think 3 others eventually signed that form in July 1945 in the presence of Capt. SAITO.
- Q. Who slapped Major BOXER?
- A. He was slapped both by Capt. SAITO and NIIMORI.
- Q. Do you recall patients called MURRAY and ARCHIBALD?
- A. Yes, they were Canadian Volunteer orderlies who came from camp to help us when our own RAMC personnel were transferred from the hospital to another destination.
- Q. Have you anything specific to tell the Court in regard to Capt. SAITO's treatment of these men?
- A. Yes, on one occasion a small suitcase or attache case was found just beside our wire and an investigation was ordered by Capt. SAITO of the circumstances. Cpl. SANO, he was then I think Sgt. SANO, was Camp Commandant at the time. NIIMORI and a few others came in and took the investigation which lasted several days. Several patients and staff were beaten up on the questioning in connexion with the incident, and MURRAY and ARCHIBALD, who had been on duty in the ward in which the attache case was found, were in the end adjudged guilty, along with a third whose name I forget for the moment, and they were beaten up and removed from the hospital.
- Q. You say this investigation took several days. Have you any knowledge of the form of the interrogation of MURRAY, ARCHIBALD and the rest of them?
- A. Yes, it was put to them that they had done many things. They denied that and were then beaten up.
- Q. How often did that occur?
- A. To MURRAY and ARCHIBALD?

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives Terms and Conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives leaflet.

1 2
cme
Ref.:
WO 235/1012 PT1
1
ms
2

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES

- Q. Yes, to MURRAY and ARCHIBALD?
 A. They were interrogated for some considerable time, beaten several times and eventually taken out, put in a small hut down BOWEN Road during the night under cover and removed the next morning.
- Q. Have you any idea how severe this treatment was?
 A. Yes, I saw them afterwards; they were both very badly bruised.
- Q. Do you know anything of the interrogation of Pte. TAYLOR?
 A. Pte. TAYLOR was an RAMC orderly who was interrogated the same time and was also very badly beaten up. I saw him also immediately afterwards.
- Q. Have you anything to say in respect of Cpl. PYKE?
 A. Cpl. PYKE of the RAMC suffered in the same way as Pte. TAYLOR.
- Q. Do you know who conducted these interrogations and beatings?
 A. Capt. SAITO and NJIMORI.
- Q. Will you tell the Court what the effect of this particular incident was on the hospital generally?
 A. The investigation was conducted in an office close to the wards and the noise of the beatings could be heard by patients many of whom were extremely sick. One of the patients in the ward, who was in an extremely weak state, attempted to commit suicide rather than face the investigation.
- Q. Leaving that for the time being, have you anything to say in regard to your water supply at BOWEN Road hospital?
 A. Yes, about September 1944 the water supply for the hospital was cut off entirely. We were not informed of this beforehand. The first we knew was when the water actually failed, about 10 o'clock one morning. We were allowed a small party of 8 men out for 2 or 3 hours. They removed the hand rail along BOWEN Road for a distance of 200 yards, dammed up the nullur between the hospital and MAGAZINE GAP Road and put the piping in there, and that trickle was our only supply for the next 7 months.
- Q. What observations did you make of the water supply to the Japanese occupied premises near your hospital?
 A. As far as we could observe the water was still piped to other buildings, including those on BOWEN Road.
- Q. What communication had you with the International Red Cross during the whole period of imprisonment?
 A. Every 6 months there was a visit by Mr. ZINDEL who was a delegate of the International Red Cross, but his visit, as far as observing the true conditions, was a complete farce. Col. TOKUNAGA was present on all of these occasions and preparations were made beforehand to get the place looking as well as possible, but we were not allowed any communication with Mr. ZINDEL. We were specially warned by Capt. SAITO on more than one occasion that no talking to him was allowed. The only occasion when Col. BOWIE had any speech with him was on the last visit in 1945.
- Q. As a result of these pre-inspection preparations, what impression would an Inspector get of the hospital, true or false?
 A. A false one. It looked as if we were all enjoying ourselves.

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref:		1		ms	
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES							
WO 235 / 1012 PT1							
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet							

- Q. Generally in regard to your requests for serum, better conditions, food and so on, to your knowledge what knowledge had Col.TOKUNAGA of the requests and conditions in the hospital?
- A. He visited the hospital on occasions and some of the written requests were addressed to him at HQ.
- Q. Have you anything you want to add in regard to the charges against these Accused in respect to either your experience of patients coming to hospital or in the hospital itself?
- A. The arrangements for travel of cases from camp to hospital were very definitely bad and contributed to our death rate. The absence of drugs and sera also unquestionably did, to a very large extent. These things, both at the time, and on the mature reflection of the last 15 months, could have been avoided because the sera and drugs I am quite certain were in the hands of the Japanese. Capt.SAITO was quite certain of what we wanted and knew perfectly well the situation we were in and he did not give us what we required. I should add in all in 3 years 8 months patients in our hospital received 7 Red Cross parcels, 4 Canadian and 3 British. The general effect of the arrival of the parcels was very easily noted from a medical point of view, both in the rate of recovery and general well-being of patients for two or three weeks after they arrived. Had we had more Red Cross parcels we could certainly have saved more patients. Capt.SAITO as to the parcels informed us on one occasion that Col.TOKUNAGA was in complete charge of the distribution of these Red Cross parcels.

(No more questions)

COURT: You referred to the water supply at BOWEN Road hospital being cut off on one occasion. Have you any idea by whose orders or why it was done?

A: Sgt.SANO informed us it was on orders of HQ. Capt.SAITO I think was there that day and he made no explanation.

COURT: You identified the Accused Sgt.HARADA. Was he at BOWEN Road at any time?

A: Yes, I have seen him at BOWEN Road. He was also at the Central British School at KOWLOON as our Commandant for a period.

COURT: Have you anything to say about his behaviour or attitude to POWs, by your contact with him?

A: Generally speaking, he was overbearing and rude. Personally I had no relations with him except when I appealed to him to ~~gaxhark~~ give back certain notes of ours which he was taking away in a lorry at Capt.SAITO's order. They were medical notes. They were so large in number they required a lorry, to remove them. We kept these notes for many months and Capt.SAITO was quite aware of their existence. They were removed by Sgt.HARADA by his order in July 1945.

COURT: Can you tell anything to the Court as to the mail you received in the hospital?

A: Yes, we received no mail until July 1943 when we got certain letters and myself in all I received 20 letters in 3 years 8 months. All of them were 6 months to 2 years old.

COURT: Was any quantity of mail delivered to you or to the patients in the hospital after the Japanese surrender?

A: No.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

PROSECUTOR: Sir, I had not expected the Examination-in-Chief to be so long. Could you inquire from Witness if he can come first thing in the morning?

Witness: I am willing to appear here tomorrow.

At 1630 hrs. the Court adjourn until 1000 hrs.
on Tuesday 19 Dec. 1946.

1		2		Ref:		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES		1		1		2	
cme						WO 235 / 1012 PT1							

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

NO 5 WAR CRIMES COURT.

ELEVENTH DAY'S proceedings of the trial of Col TOKUNAGA ISAO, Capt SAITO SHUNKICHI, Lieut TANAKA HITOSHI, Interpreter TSUTADA and Sgt HARADA JOTARO, of the Imperial Japanese Army.

(Held at Jardine Matheson's East Point Godown on Tuesday, 10 December 1946.)

The Court assembled at 1000 hours.

CROSS-EXAMINATION by Mr. Fujita

COURT: Dr. Anderson, you are still bound by the oath which you took yesterday.

- Q. When patients were transferred from the various camps to the BOWEN ROAD hospital, did any POW doctor or orderly escort these patients to the hospital?
- A. On occasions, a medical officer came across as far as the ferry wharf, and in one or two cases an orderly would be with them but they were not allowed to the hospital as a rule.
- Q. When seriously sick patients were transferred to the hospital I think that the Japanese side permitted orderlies or doctors to escort them.

PROSECUTOR: He cannot argue with the witness, sir -- that's not a question.

COURT: Mr. Fujita, if witness says they did not, you must take his answer for what it is worth. You can put it to the witness in the form of a question and accept his answer but you cannot argue with him and tell him what was permitted by the Japanese unless you are prepared to call in evidence for your defence to show that such a thing was done.

- Q. What was the maximum number of patients that could be accommodated in the BOWEN ROAD Hospital?
- A. There was no maximum laid down we took in whatever patients were sent to us.
- Q. What was the maximum capacity of the hospital? How many patients could be accommodated?
- A. Comfortably, about 200 -- we always had more than that.
- Q. Yesterday you testified that there were about 400 beds at BOWEN ROAD hospital -- by that fact does it mean that about 400 patients could be accommodated?
- A. They could be accommodated, but not comfortably -- we were denied the use of the whole of the front verandah and latterly of the back verandah as well. The hospital accommodation varied according to directions from the Japanese and therefore it is impossible to estimate the number of patients that could be accommodated for all the time that the hospital was in use.
- Q. When was it first discovered that patients actually had diphtheria germs?
- A. In July 1942, as far as BOWEN ROAD was concerned -- we got the first case from NORTH POINT Camp.
- Q. Yesterday you testified that throat swabs were taken from the patients and these were sent to the Japanese to be inspected for germs -- you testified that the Japanese side always gave a negative answer, when was this?
- A. That was around about September 1942 so far as I can remember. These throat swabs were not taken from all patients -- only a small number of swabs were taken. There was practically no use in making a diagnosis, when the diagnosis was obvious without the use of the throat swabs.
- Q. Treatment and diagnosis of patients was done by the POW doctors, is that correct?
- A. Yes.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235 / 1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	ins

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.

- Q. In case an operation should be carried out on a patient, was it necessary to receive the permission of the Japanese first or could the POW doctors carry out the operation on their own?
- A. During the day we did not inform the Japanese on all occasions when we operated -- they were, however, informed after if they could not have been informed before hand. At night permission had to be obtained because of the question of light and movement also in the building after dark.
- Q. You just said because of the lights, was that because black-outs were carried out at that time?
- A. Strict blackout was enforced only some months after the imprisonment; sometime towards the end of 1942, I think about August or September -- I cannot give the exact date. Previous to that lights were allowed until a certain time and then they had to be extinguished.
- Q. In answer to a question, what was the attitude of Dr. SAITO towards the patients you said that he did not carry out any diagnosis of POW patients, but as the POW doctors themselves carried out the diagnosis, if Dr. SAITO did interfere, would this not seem strange?
- A. Capt SAITO was the Japanese Medical Officer in charge of all POWs -- actually only the diagnosis of diseases and the treatment of patients was left to us. It was his duty to supervise and see where the inefficiencies were and provide adequate facilities -- I am not complaining about the diagnosis and treatment -- in doing this ourselves we realized the deficiencies of food and medicines. Capt SAITO who, at all times was in charge of us, should have shown some interest and helped us in providing facilities and medicines.

No further questions.

CROSS-EXAMINATION by Mr. Hasegawa.

- Q. Yesterday you testified that when patients were transferred from NORTH POINT camp to BOWEN ROAD hospital, trucks or passenger cars were used, what sort of passenger cars were used?
- A. I remember seeing one which was a car used by the Commandant of the Camp, this was an ordinary saloon car.
- Q. Yesterday you also testified that when patients were moved from the SHAMSHUIPO Camp they were first transferred to the pier in a ferry, then from the ferry, then from the ferry to the hospital a truck was used, was there not a passenger car in use also?
- A. No, there were only trucks and buses in use; both these were grossly overcrowded. The car was used on one occasion when a Japanese officer brought up one or two officer patients from the ferry.
- Q. Yesterday you testified that a man named LaPOINTE became sick, do you know about this?
- PROSECUTOR: I remember witness testified LaPOINTE died -- there was no question about him being sick -- he died in the truck.
- Q. Do you know what was the reason why he died?
- A. No, I did not examine him before death or after so I cannot give any direct evidence.
- Q. Then in that case how do you know when he was sent to the hospital that it was too late?
- A. I heard he was seriously ill when he left the camp and had been for some time; I heard that.
- Q. Yesterday you testified about a Major HOOKER, do you know the disease he was sick with?
- A. The disease had been diagnosed in camp by the Camp Medical Officer as meningitis -- when we had carried out examinations it was found his death was due to encephalitis.
- Q. Did you yourself carry out the latter diagnosis?
- A. Yes, along with Major HARRISON.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235 / 1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

- all
- Q. What was the percentage of deaths under encephalitis?
- A. You mean the percentage of mortality -- now -- between 30% and 50% depending on the treatment. This disease is a serious one, the only hope is immediate care and treatment.
- Q. Yesterday you testified that you thought that if Lt BOWKER was entered into hospital three days earlier he ~~may~~ ^{might} have been saved; can you enlarge on that statement?
- A. Lt BOWKER'S general condition at the time he took ill was fairly good -- in fact above the average of the other POW officers. The conditions under which he died could only be relieved by operation, and early operation. Three days were certainly too late. He died on the operation table actually before the operation started. He was brought over and as soon as we had the operating table ready he was put there and died before the operation; he was certainly in a very painful condition before he died. It is my opinion, considering the circumstances of the case, that had he been operated within 24 hours of the symptoms he would have been saved; within 48 hours there was still a chance, but I consider after that it was almost hopeless.
- Q. Then is it true that you were not able to operate on Lt BOWKER or did he die before you began the operation?
- A. He died before I began the operation.
- Q. About sulpha drugs, you testified that after a few months all the stocks of sulpha drugs were used -- from what date did you calculate the period?
- A. From the commencement of the imprisonment -- as we were using these for several months the stocks naturally became less and less -- and as they became less we had to use them much more economically so that we actually had to use them at the expense of our patients. As we did not know when we would get further supplies of ~~supl~~ sulpha drugs we had to make a decision and use them on certain cases only.
- Q. About dysentery -- were there dysentery patients at the beginning of the interment?
- A. The first case arrived from NORTH POINT in the first or second week of January 1942. There were no cases from SHAM SHUI PO then -- we did not receive any until August 1942, but from NORTH POINT they began to arrive in January 1942.
- Q. Until August 1942 how many patients came from the NORTH POINT Camp?
- A. I could not say the exact number now -- our records were destroyed by Capt SAITO.
- Q. About the throat swabs of diphtheria patients -- was this started first by the POWs or by the Japanese?
- A. We ~~have~~ had no facilities ourselves for examining throat swabs -- this requires special treatment in a laboratory and could only be done by the Japanese. Capt SAITO asked what could be given in regard to making a diagnosis and our wish then was to examine the throats of contacts and not so much a diagnosis of the cases that arrived sick -- we did not want a diagnosis of these cases -- the disease was obvious -- it would have been more useful if we could have examined all contacts.
- Q. Is it true that throat swabs were carried out at the BOWEN ROAD hospital and also at the SHAM SHUI PO Camp?
- A. Perhaps I should explain the point about throat swabs as there appears to be some misunderstanding about this. A throat swab can be examined directly by examining it under a microscope -- this is called a direct examination. There is also a method of culturing the swab for some time to grow the organisms so that they can be seen better. We had two microscopes -- one privately owned and the other which was borrowed by Capt SAITO and never returned. This was useful only in carrying out direct examinations. This was only really useful in cases which had actually developed the disease. In those cases

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235 / 1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

a diagnosis was not difficult. It was not the method of diagnosis that was of such great importance -- as there was no method of treatment.

Q. Were not these ~~xxx~~ examinations carried out with the purpose of isolating patients?

A. Yes, if isolated contacts were found to be carrying diphtheria bacilli, they were grouped together in one ward and were in fact isolated from the hospital as far as this was possible.

Q. The examination which you requested the Japanese to carry out what sort of examination was that?

A. Of throat swabs -- culturing throat swabs and examining them.

Q. Then, there was no general examination with the purpose of isolating suspected cases?

A. No, complete swabbing of all patients and staff was not done -- there were no facilities for that and there was not a sufficient number of throat swabs. This was not really necessary as we had already isolated the patients in one room and all contacts were kept down to a minimum. Those who went in to the patients were isolated and the orderlies were not used for the treatment of other patients at the time. If the Japanese had facilities in the laboratory for culturing organisms, the same laboratory could have been used for making serum. That is, assuming it was necessary to make the serum which I do not believe. I know that there was ample stock of anti-diphtheria serum in the colony.

Q. Yesterday you testified that you asked the Japanese side to examine some of the throat swabs? Did the Japanese at that time have a laboratory?

A. They informed us they did and the swabs were taken away to the Laboratory. Where this was situated I cannot say. We assumed that it was the Government Bacteriological Institute.

Q. Yesterday you testified that at times COL SHACKLETON and COL BOWIE visited Dr SAITO at the BOWEN ROAD Hospital, but at times it was very hard to get in touch with Dr SAITO, by that, what do you mean?

A. Capt SAITO was not always there, he was often absent for some days, and a request to see him would have to pass through the Camp Commandant, or Cpl SENO, who expressed to us his difficulty in getting Capt SAITO to attend. COL SHACKLETON and COL BOWIE had no ready means of getting in touch with Capt SAITO unless he happened to be in the hospital when he might or might not see them.

Q. Were you always in touch with Capt SAITO?

A. Myself, no -- by no means.

Q. Yesterday you testified that in December 1941 there were large quantities of diphtheria serum -- military serum -- also serum in the hands of merchants in a godown and you offered to go and buy this serum, did you yourself make this offer?

A. Yes, I did personally.

Q. To whom did you make this offer?

A. Capt SAITO and Cpl SENO. I might point out that Capt SAITO very seldom deigned to converse directly with us -- however, when the request was refused I drew a diagram for Cpl SENO where these stocks might be found and hoped he might be able to find them. On the same occasion -- I am sure Capt SAITO will remember, I requested the use of an English directory of Hong Kong so as to verify the various names before we gave the information to him.

Q. A directory of Hong Kong?

A. Yes, you know, a directory giving the names of business houses and where they were situated.

Q. You said that when you offered to go and get this serum you made the offer to Cpl SENO, Capt SAITO was also present, why didn't you make the request to Capt SAITO?

A. On that occasion Col BOWIE, myself, Cpl SENO, Capt SAITO and an interpreter were all in the room. Capt SAITO paid little or no attention

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref:		1		ins	
		WO 235/1012 PT1					
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.							

174

to any request. The only satisfactory method was to deal with Cpl SENO in his presence.

Q. Was Lt CAMPBELL on duty at BOWEN ROAD hospital?

A. He was.

Q. Was he a doctor -- a medical officer?

A. No, Lt CAMPBELL was commissioned in the R.A.M.C. He was a Quartermaster -- these men can be commissioned but they are not, in fact, doctors.

Q. Have you ever heard from Lt CAMPBELL that he and Cpl SENO went to look for this medicine but could not find the medicine?

A. I am quite certain that Lt CAMPBELL was not allowed out of BOWEN ROAD on that occasion. He did go out with Cpl SENO on one or two occasions to get supplies, that is true, but on that particular occasion Lt CAMPBELL did not search for diphtheria serum.

Q. Later, was he ever permitted to look for diphtheria serum?

A. Not to my knowledge, no.

Q. In September 1944 did you hear of an order that lighting facilities would be limited?

A. Yes, the lighting facilities in the town had been cut down owing to the shortage of fuel. We ourselves were cut off entirely by light. I mean electric lights supplied from the power station. We were not allowed any lanterns or any substitute either.

Q. Is the BOWEN ROAD Hospital situated on a high level?

A. Yes, some distance up the peak -- about 300 or 400 feet I suppose.

Q. When you were informed that the lights would be limited were you not informed also that the water would be turned off?

A. We were not informed that the water would be turned off -- the first intimation we had was when it was actually turned off.

Q. As you just said, at that time there was not enough of fuel to generate electricity -- also to pump water to a high place, much power is necessary, therefore, is it not natural if electricity is limited, also the water would be limited.

A. It is not natural to cut off the water to a hospital without warning -- the only alternative we had was to draw water from a nullah which was very unsatisfactory; and from our observation, on the same level, other places still had water. The water we obtained came in through a pipe ^{all} into an old bath and it had to be carried into the hospital. There were few men who were able to carry this water and therefore this placed considerable strain on the personnel who were doing so.

No further questions.

RE-EXAMINATION BY PROSECUTOR:

Q. There is one point I would like you to clarify -- respecting these black-outs, please explain the fact that you had to do the tracheotomies without sufficient light -- what do you mean by this -- will you explain what you mean?

A. At the time to which I referred yesterday, we were allowed one small shaded torch inside the building for the purpose of attending to patients at night. There were diphtheria patients on the verandah as well where no lights could be used and therefore for us to have used the torch on the verandah meant running the risk of getting into trouble. Besides, with regard to the patients to which I referred yesterday, these could not be moved without permission and apart from that their moving around would have meant spreading the infection among other patients in the building. Tracheotomy has to be done in a hurry and there was no time to arrange the removal of patients at night so as to perform these tracheotomies. Had we had anti-diphtheria serum, tracheotomies would have been entirely unnecessary; in fact this method is practically unknown in any modern hospital.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
Ref: WO 235 / 1012 PT 1	
1	2

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.

- Q. In the case of encephalitis, how important is early diagnosis?
- A. An early diagnosis is not quite as important as it is important to diagnose it from other conditions which would appear similar, for instance, the symptoms in meningitis are similar and therefore an exact diagnosis in all brain conditions is of the utmost importance as regards treatment.
- Q. What is the diagnosis difference between encephalitis and meningitis?
- A. For a diagnosis of encephalitis it is necessary to make a microscopic examination of the cerebral spinal fluid.
- Q. When should that be done; when there is a suspicion of one disease ^{or not} from the other being present, how soon should an examination be done?
- A. Immediately.
- Q. Now on the question of throat swabbing, as I understand from your answers, the reason for an examination of throat swabs is to pre-determine whether the disease is going to become prevalent or not, is that correct?
- A. Yes -- you determine which contacts have the organisms in their throat -- there are various stages of the disease and you confirm your diagnosis from an examination of these throat swabs -- you have cases already developed, -- early cases -- doubtful cases and so on.
- Q. Having had your throat swabs completed by a ~~bio~~ biological examination, and the result determined, what advantage or what action do you take with regard to the finding?
- A. You would be able to isolate contacts carrying the organisms and prevent them from being the source of infection to others. As regards those who have the disease, throat swabbing alone would be ineffective, it is necessary to administer the serum.
- Q. In the determining of the disease in contacts or carriers, what is the effect of the throat swabbing technique -- I mean with regard to the microscopic examination spoken of and the cultural procedure.
- A. Both methods may be used -- the cultural method would be the one of most use. It is likely in many cases that a direct throat swab examination may be negative whereas a cultural one may prove positive. Therefore it is of extremely great value to determine who are the carriers.
- Q. Do I understand then, sir, that in the very preliminary stages, where the disease is not ~~manifest~~ manifest but an onslaught suspected, that the cultured method is preferable to the direct view of the microscope?
- A. Yes, in cases of suspicion of the disease, the cultured method in the early stages would be of value. It is the accepted practice, if there is the slightest reason to suspect a patient has diphtheria, to administer the serum immediately and to wait afterwards for the result of the cultured test. If positive you can administer more serum and if negative the treatment need not be carried on.
- Q. From your professional point of view, presuming that requests had been made in June for a cultural examination of the throat swabs, and this was given, how effective would it have been in obviating an onslaught of the severity of a diphtheria epidemic?
- A. As far as BOWEN ROAD Hospital was concerned -- there were no cases until we had them sent over to us from the Camp; this would have been of no value whatsoever.
- Q. What I mean is this -- ~~if~~ if you make examinations of throat swabs from a reconnaissance point of view, how effective is that to forestall any onslaught of an epidemic. In other words, if you asked for this procedure in June, and subsequently say 30 or 40 days later the epidemic materialises, can you say, had that procedure been carried out in June as recommended, the effects, six weeks or a month later would have been obviated?
- A. If your examinations in June revealed carriers in diphtheria organisms, then these could have been removed, and there would no longer be any possible sources of infection.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref.
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	ins

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives Material'.

176

- Q. About the Government Biological Institute which you referred to -- would you say it would be difficult for a stranger arriving in this Community to find that place -- would the Biological Institute be hard to find?
- A. I should say it would be perfectly easy to find.

No further questions.

QUESTIONED BY COURT.

- Q. When you had this interview with Cpl SENO and Capt SAITO as to your offer to go and find the serum, do you know whether Cpl SENO passed that suggestion on to Capt SAITO actually?
- A. Yes, sir, and I think Capt SAITO'S knowledge of English was sufficient to be quite aware of what was going on apart from Cpl SENO telling him.
- Q. What do you know about Capt SAITO'S knowledge of English?
- A. On the few occasions on which we were able to speak to him he seemed to understand fairly well. He never officially spoke English to us, however -- he always spoke through an interpreter but on occasions we were able to test his knowledge of English and I should say it was fair.
- Q. Do you yourself know of any occasion when Capt SAITO was actually in the hospital and refused to see COL SHACKLETON or COL BOWIE?
- A. Yes, on numerous occasions both Col SHACKLETON and Col BOWIE have told me of their annoyance in not being able to get an interview with Capt SAITO. I have known of them to try for 48 hours to see him but he was not able to grant an interview.
- Q. When he was on the spot?
- A. Yes, when he was actually in the hospital.
- Q. Did Capt SAITO ever say anything to you or to any other medical officer giving some explanation why he could not get the drugs you asked for?
- A. No, sir, his answer was either "NO" or that "it was very difficult." In both cases it meant the same thing.
- Q. Did you ever hear what was LaPOINTE'S ^{symptoms?} ~~symptoms?~~
- A. I cannot remember exactly -- my impression was it was some form of avitaminosis.
- Q. In connection with sulpha drugs, you refer to sulphur being useful for treating dysentery -- I have the names from another medical party who has given evidence -- sulpha peridine and sulpha guanidine -- are these drugs the same or are they two different drugs?
- A. Sulpha Peridine is the original M & B 693 -- Sulpha Guanidine is a better product as it is less toxic. Both drugs are similar in composition but their action is different.
- Q. About the dysentery cases from NORTH POINT Camp, before you got the ones from SHAM SHUI PO, were these bacillary dysentery or amoebic dysentery. Would you say that any one type of the two dysenteries was more prevalent than the other.
- A. We received both types -- I should say there were about 80% bacillary.
- Q. Is Pellagra caused by vitamin deficiency, if so, by what vitamin?
- A. Yes, deficiency of vitamin B2 or sometimes called vitamin G.
- Q. How many patients was BOWEN ROAD designed to accommodate when it was a British Hospital?
- A. 190.
- Q. You said you had to get permission for an operation if it was to be performed at night, from whom would you have to obtain this permission?
- A. Cpl SENO, when we got hold of him -- he would give this permission on his own responsibility. Our main difficulty was that no responsible officer was in the building at night and that caused delay in getting in touch with them.
- Q. Did Capt SAITO ever attend an operation in BOWEN ROAD hospital?

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref.		WO 235/1012 PT1		line	
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' Terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.							

177

A. I remember him once coming in, while I was operating, into the Operating Theatre.

COURT: Mr Fujita, arising out of these questions, are there any further questions you would like to ask?

DEFENCE : Yes.

Q. Are diphtheria germs contained in places other than inside the throat?

A. Yes, they are occasionally found in wounds of the skin.

No further questions.

COURT: Mr. Hasegawa, arising out of the questions the Court has asked, are there any further questions you wish to make?

DEFENCE: No.

COURT: Major PUDDICOMBE, arising out of the questions the Court has asked, are there any further questions you would like to ask?

PROSECUTOR: No, sir.

The Court will Adjourn for five minutes.

Witness may stand down.
The Court is adjourned.
14TH WITNESS FOR PROSECUTION - Lt Col E.C. FREDERICK.

EXAMINATION IN CHIEF.

The witness having been duly sworn is questioned by the Prosecutor:

Q. Will you tell the Court your full name?

A. ERNEST CECIL FREDERICK.

Q. What is your rank?

A. Lieut.-Colonel.

Q. What is your present occupation?

A. I was due for release in October but I have not yet been officially notified that I have been released from the Forces.

Q. What is your present address?

A. Repulse Bay Hotel.

Q. I understand that you were taken prisoner-of-war when the Japanese occupied Hong Kong, will you tell the Court briefly where you spent your imprisonment here?

A. I was originally at STANLEY, after STANLEY I was taken to NORTH POINT, from NORTH POINT, about the middle of January 1942, to SHAM SHUI PO. I remained there until September 1942, I then went to ARGYLL STREET, spent about a month in BOWEN ROAD hospital, then back to ARGYLL STREET and back to SHAM SHUI PO for about a year or so of the Pacific War.

Q. During the period that you were in SHAM SHUI PO - first - from January to September 1942, who was responsible for the good order of the Camp?

A. Until April, when Major-General MALBY and most of the officers left SHAM SHUI PO for ARGYLL STREET, Major-Gen. MALBY was responsible for the Camp. When they left the Camp, about the 15th of April, I was one of about a dozen officers detailed to remain at SHAM SHUI PO. As I was a senior officer I was told by the Japanese that I would be responsible for the good order and behaviour of the Camp.

COURT: To what Unit did you belong?

1		2		1		2	
cm		Re:		ins		ins	
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES							
WO 235/1012 PT1							
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' material.							

WITNESS: R.A.S.C. -- Royal Army Service Corps.

PROSECUTOR:

- Q. What did you remark respecting the conduct of the sentries and prison guards towards our own prisoners?
- A. Shortly after the GOC left the Camp, I complained to the Camp Commandant about the frequent beatings which were being given to our men, sometimes for trivial causes and sometimes for no apparent cause at all. I was told that as we had surrendered unconditionally we had absolutely no rights and any Japanese sentry was perfectly justified in whatever action he took towards us.
- Q. Respecting accommodation in the Camp, what were the conditions that you found with regard to SHAM SHUI PO CAMP?
- A. The huts in which we were placed were very over-crowded and in a shocking condition without doors, windows, leaky roofs and latrines and washing accommodation was of the very worst that one can imagine.
- Q. What steps did you take in respect of these conditions of accommodation?
- A. I applied for extra huts, of which there were quite a number, but was refused. Particularly when the diphtheria outbreak came, I asked if we could use some of the empty huts to segregate some of the diphtheria contacts, that was refused.
- Q. To whom did you make these requests?
- A. To the Camp Commandant -- also huts for the diphtheria contacts -- to Capt SAITO.
- Q. Who was Capt SAITO?
- A. He was the Japanese Medical Officer.
- Q. Where is he now?
- A. Sitting at the right end of the back row.
- Q. You spoke of a diphtheria epidemic, will you tell the Court what steps you took in that respect over and above the ones you now mentioned regarding accommodation?
- A. I applied to Capt SAITO for serums; in fact we were always asking him for medicines and drugs for the hospital -- to be told always that there was none for us. I told him unless we had adequate serums and drugs the then heavy death rate would increase. The reply I got was "The men can die".
- Q. Do you know Lt Col ROBERTSON -- then Major ROBERTSON -- of the R.A.M.C.?
- A. He was the senior British Medical Officer in camp.
- Q. Do you know, to your own knowledge, if he made requests to see Capt SAITO?
- A. Yes, I remember one particular instance when I was in the hospital with Major ROBERTSON and he asked Capt SAITO if one of the patients could be taken to St Teresa's Hospital, where he could get proper treatment, otherwise the man would be dead very shortly. The answer was, "No, the man cannot be taken out - let him die". The man died the next day.
- Q. These conditions which you speak of in the hospital, to whom other than SAITO, if to anybody, did you make representations?
- A. I made representations to the Camp Commandant, and through him to Col. TOKUNAGA.
- Q. What was the result of these representations?
- A. Nothing was done to better our lot at all.
- Q. A moment or two ago you stated you had asked for extra accommodation for the purpose of segregation, and it had been refused although additional huts were available, where were these additional huts available?

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref.
WO 235 / 1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	2

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' material.

- A. Adjoining the ones in which we were accommodated.
- Q. Will you tell the Court what were the conditions of the morning parade?
- A. If a man reported sick after the morning parade lists had been made out he was not allowed to go into hospital but had to go on parade. There were many instances when men were carried out on parade on stretchers. They were sometimes left in the pouring rain for half an hour or more. After parade they were carried back to the huts. There were cases of acute pellagra and beri-beri who went hobbling out on sticks to the parade. Everybody had to attend the morning parade and there were no exemptions at all. If you were a hospital case, but could not be moved to the hospital due to there being no room, it didn't matter how ill you were, you still had to attend the parade.
- Q. What have you to say in respect to the food supplied to you?
- A. The Japanese laid down a ration scale for us but never once did we receive that to which we were supposed to be entitled. When the rations came in they were invariably short; if we complained, we were beaten. The Japanese NCO who brought them in, sometimes for no apparent reason, because he may have been ill-tempered, I suppose, after we had taken out a certain amount, would drive away with the remainder and we would not even get the day's ration. Also, on many occasions the Japanese would come in and take away from what we had.
- Q. Can you tell the Court anything respecting the supply of clothing and blankets?
- A. I repeatedly asked for clothing and blankets for the men and up to the time I left the Camp all that had arrived were a few old top coats and no blankets. These were given to the first draft leaving SHAM SHUI PO for Japan.
- Q. What was your experience in SHAM SHUI PO Camp with respect to the International Red Cross?
- A. I was warned that there would be a Red Cross inspection of a representative from Shanghai and one from Hong Kong and Col TOKUNAGA came into the Camp and decided upon the tour the inspection would make. When the Red Cross representatives arrived they were taken and shown a certain Officer's room as being typical of all Officers' accommodation which, of course, was entirely incorrect.

PROSECUTOR: Will the Court permit the job of the particular Officer to whose room reference is made to be mentioned.

COURT: Permission granted.

PROSECUTOR:

- Q. What was the position of the Officer of whom you have spoken, in the Camp?
- A. He was called the Camp Liaison Officer.

WITNESS: The Inspection party then went to the Cookhouse where a piece of meat which had been sent in was being cooked and they were shown this as being the prisoners food for the day. After this, this piece of meat was taken out by the Japanese and we had none of it at all. From there they went to the hospital but were only allowed into the Entrance Hall which was specially cleaned for the occasion. A large bowl of disinfectant was placed in the centre with towelling and soap. Inside in the wards the men were lying on the bare concrete floors -- there were insufficient beds -- no clothing -- no blankets and they were in a dying condition. The Representatives were not allowed in. From there they went to the Bakery, and from the bakery out of the Camp and I was not allowed to speak to them at all during the whole of the tour of inspection. They did not inspect any of the huts in which the men were living.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

Q. You were not permitted to speak to them; and the POWs, were they permitted to speak to these Red Cross officials at the time of that particular inspection?

A. Nobody was allowed to speak to them.

COURT: Before we leave the question with regard to this Red Cross tour -- can you ask Witness in what month this inspection took place, and what, if any, Japanese officers accompanied the inspection.

PROSECUTOR:

Q. Can you say approximately when this inspection took place?

A. I think it would be either May, June or July, of 1942. I cannot remember exactly.

Q. How was the inspection party made up?

A. Col TOKUNAGA, the Camp Commandant, two interpreters and various other Japanese -- the two Red Cross representatives, and from the Camp, myself, and the Liaison Officer.

Q. Just for the record -- who was Col TOKUNAGA?

A. He was the Colonel Commandant in charge of all POW Camps in Hong Kong.

Q. Where is he now?

A. Sitting in the front.

COURT: Was Dr. SAITO present on this occasion, do you remember?

WITNESS: I think so but I cannot swear to it.

The Court is adjourned until 1400 hours.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235 / 1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	ins

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives material.

11th DAY.

10 Dec. P.M.

At 1400 hrs. on 10 December the Court re-assemble pursuant to adjournment; present the same Members as at adjournment.

19th WITNESS FOR THE PROSECUTION - Lt.-Col. E.C. FREDERICK

EXAMINATION IN CHIEF (Contd.)

- Q. Have you anything to tell the Court respecting the reception of Red Cross amenities?
- A. Yes, when I was at ARGYLL Street on several occasions I saw the local Red Cross supplies, i.e. supplies which were purchased locally by the Red Cross representative, arrive in camp and I saw the Japanese camp staff help themselves to quite appreciable quantities and yet they would make us sign receipts for the whole amount. On another occasion when we were short for fuel we had for cooking our food two very large packing cases with loose lids which were sent to us from TOKUNAGA's HQ. When we took the lids off, each case contained many hundreds of Red Cross food tins.
- Q. Will you tell the Court how you were able to identify these tins as being Red Cross tins?
- A. In many cases the labels were still on the tins.
- Q. Have you anything to add in respect of Red Cross parcels?
- A. Yes, we were able to buy Red Cross supplies from the camp sentries practically all the time after we had our initial parcels.
- Q. What type of Red Cross supplies did you buy from the sentries?
- A. Meat, cigarettes, milk, jam - anything.
- Q. Will you tell the Court what attitude the Japanese took toward the possibility of escape by POWs?
- A. In May of 1942 I and about 8 other officers were taken out to the Camp Commandant's HQ where TOKUNAGA was. We were told that as we had surrendered unconditionally, we would sign a parole not to attempt to escape. I pointed out this was contrary to a soldier's oath of allegiance and that I could not consent to it. TOKUNAGA told me that as Major-Gen. MALBY and all the other officers in ARGYLL Street had signed, we would do the same or be treated as mutineers and shot. I asked could I obtain Major-Gen. MALBY's permission to sign the parole, either by telephone or by letter or alternatively could I be shown Major-Gen. MALBY's signature on the parole form. All these requests were refused.
- Q. What consequences did TOKUNAGA say would attend your refusal to sign this parole?
- A. We would be treated as mutineers and summarily shot. I was told to have the whole of the camp on parade on the following Saturday morning ready to sign that parole. On the night following this incident two Japanese came to my room about midnight and said that they had received orders from TOKUNAGA that they would make me sign. I refused to sign. I was beaten up. The same thing happened the following night. I was again beaten up on refusing to sign.
- Q. Can you say who beat you up?
- A. Two Japanese NCOs; I do not know their names.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives material.

Lt.-Col. FREDERICK.

Q. To what extent were you beaten?

A. I can say pretty badly manhandled, with fists and a stick. On the day set aside for the signing of the parole the whole camp were drawn up on parade, but as I had canvassed the whole of the camp through the officers and all the men had agreed that they would not sign until we had proof of the General's and the other officers' signature, when the time came to start signing the parole the whole camp stood fast. We had arranged that the camp medical officers, our own British medical officers, would sign as we thought measures might be carried on against them if they held out and we would require them to be quite fit to look after us. TOKUNAGA arrived, addressed the party and said as we had surrendered unconditionally we would sign our parole or again he ~~was~~ threatened if we did not, ~~we~~ would be treated as mutineers and shot. When the order was given for the signing to commence I was the first officer in to the hut, at the side that were signing. I said I could not sign except under the conditions which I had already told Col. TOKUNAGA. TOKUNAGA was informed I had refused to sign. He called two sentries, had me taken outside the hut and my hands tied behind my back with a wire noose being put round my neck so that if my hands dropped I would strangle myself. He gave an order to the sentries to beat me up, TOKUNAGA himself striking several times. I still refused to sign. I was beaten up again, TOKUNAGA again striking me several times. I was then told by TOKUNAGA I would be given one minute to sign otherwise he would have me shot there and then. He gave an order to two sentries who loaded their rifles and stood in front of me three yards away. He accused me of being the ring-leader in the camp's refusal to sign, to which I agreed. I still refused to sign and TOKUNAGA struck me again several times and walked furiously away. In about 10 minutes he returned and held a paper in front of me which appeared to be Gen. MALTEBY's signature on the parole form. He asked me if I would then sign and I said after I had the General's signature verified by two of my officers I would. After this was done I was untied and I signed my parole. I was then ordered by TOKUNAGA to order the camp to sign, which I refused to do. I said I would tell the men I had signed after seeing the General's parole form and that each man must decide for himself. A total of 112 men refused to sign and were marched out of camp in batches. They returned to camp that day and the next day and all told me that they had been ill-treated and threatened they would be executed if they did not sign. That is why they signed.

Q. How many men did you say left the camp on that occasion?
A. I think it was 112.

Q. How many came back?
A. I think most of them came back. I think one or two were kept outside.

Q. Do you recall who they were?
A. I can recall one or two names - Capt. BAXTER was one, Sgt.-Major WOODS was another, but I am afraid I cannot recall many.

Q. Have you any knowledge of the treatment of Chinese civilians by the prison guards?
A. I saw an old Chinese male being dragged through the camp at SHAN SHUI PO with his hands tied behind his back, wire round his neck, with the sentry jerking it as he led him along. I saw this man taken to the water's edge, shot in the back and as he fell in the water the guards were still firing at him in the water.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
line	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.

Lt.-Col. FREDERICK.

Q. Are you able to say when that occurrence took place?
 A. It must have been somewhere between April and September 1942. I also saw a Chinese youth of about 18 bayoneted in the back. When he fell in the water he was fired at by the guards. On both these occasions the guards were laughing and seemed to be thoroughly enjoying the whole performance. I saw a Chinese girl about 18 shot and killed by a sentry outside the wire.

Q. Can you again give the Court some idea when these 2 last occurrences took place?

A. It would be between the middle of April and 9 September 1942.

COURT: Would you mind explaining to the Court why you fix those two months as your brackets so to speak?

A: Because I took over from the GOC in April 1942 and I was moved out of the camp in September 1942.

Q. Have you anything to add to your statement respecting the conditions in SHAM SHUI PO or ARGYLL Street or any occurrences that are relevant as far as the Accused are concerned to the charges they are faced with?

A. From my own experience I can say that the treatment of the sick in ARGYLL Street was particularly inhumane, for which I blame SAITO.

Q. Will you tell the Court why you blame SAITO for the conditions under which the hospital was conducted in ARGYLL Street?

A. He was the Japanese medical officer in charge and we had to take all orders from him or submit any applications or requests to him. I know that when very ill troops were allowed to be moved by officers from ARGYLL Street to BOWEN Road, the arrangements that SAITO made for them were callous in the extreme. I had been in the camp hospital bed ridden for 4 months with amoebic dysentery when SAITO finally gave permission for me to be moved to BOWEN Road Hospital. SAITO would not allow me to be placed on the stretcher and I was laid on the bottom of an open lorry which had just carried ~~sniff~~ fish and vegetables. This was in August and I was left in the lorry for over an hour whilst a guard went and had food. There were 4 other officers in the lorry with me and we were driven to SHAM SHUI PO camp and I was left lying on the pier there for about 3 hours waiting for a launch to come, with no shade or shelter. When the launch came about 45 men from the camp hospital at SHAM SHUI PO were put on board as well as we 5 from ARGYLL Street. When we arrived at HONG KONG all of us, about 50, were put in one lorry and driven up to BOWEN Road Hospital.

(No more questions)

CROSS-EXAMINATION by Mr. FUSITA KCL

Q. At the camp was there a POW in charge of rations?

A. Yes.

Q. Did you have any connexion with the distribution of rations?

A. Yes, we distributed whatever was brought in.

Q. When the rations were brought in, were you always present?

A. Nearly always present.

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref:		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES		Ins	
		WO 235 / 1012 PT 1					

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

Lt.-Col. FREDERICK

- Q. A little while ago you testified that two big boxes were brought from TOKUNAGA's place as fuel. Were the boxes brought from TOKUNAGA's residence or from his HQ?
- A. From his HQ, just below the ARGYLL Street camp. I would like to say that I am not certain whether he lived there or it was just his HQ. It was the large block of flats just outside ARGYLL Street Camp.
- Q. You also testified that you saw a Chinese girl, about 18 years old, being killed. How long did you see this?
- A. The girl was walking past the sentry. The sentry called something in Japanese; she stopped. Then he called something to her again. She still stood where she was. Then the sentry turned round and began to walk away. The girl assumed everything was all right and walked. The sentry turned round, fired and killed her.

CROSS-EXAMINATION (^{2cc}Contd. by Mr. HASEGAWA)

- Q. In answer to a question of the general conditions of the accommodation at SHAM CHUI PO camp you said that the huts had no windows or doors and that the roof leaked. Does this condition include all the huts?
- A. Some were better than others.
- Q. At that time were only the good huts used as accommodation?
- A. No, some were very bad indeed. We had to use what we could. The hospital was particularly bad.
- Q. You said that near the hut in which you were accommodated there were several vacant huts. What was the condition of these vacant huts?
- A. Very poor.
- Q. If they were so bad could they have been used as a hospital?
- A. I suggested that they be used as a place of segregation of men who had been mixed with diphtheria patients.

(No more questions)

Re-Examination (By Prosecutor)

- Q. In regard to this POW who attended when the rations arrived, what was his authority over the Japanese who brought the rations in and, as you said, took them away again?
- A. Absolutely none. He had no authority at all.
- Q. Will you look at this Exhibit H(4) of photographs and tell the Court if you recognize any of the buildings and, if so, will you refer to them by the number that you see at the top?
- A. No. 7 is where the empty cases came from with the Red Cross tins in them.

QUESTIONED BY THE COURT:

- Q. In describing these incidents with regard to Chinese civilians who were killed or otherwise ill-treated by guards, are you positive that these were guards from inside your camp?
- A. Yes.
- Q. How did you know that the 2 large cases which were sent to you for firewood came from the POW HQ, photo No. 7 at H(4) which you have just shown to the Court?
- A. Because we sent an officers fatigue party to bring them up from there.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1 cms	2
<i>Ref.: WO 235 /10112 PT1</i>	
1	2 ins

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' literature.

Lt.-Col. FREDERICK.

- Q. On the occasion when you were struck by Col. TOKI INAGA as you described to the Court, what did he strike you with?
- A. His fists.
- Q. On what part of the body did he strike you?
- A. On the head and face, everywhere.

PROSECUTOR: I think, Sir, if the Court permits I will spend the rest of the afternoon reading the rest of the affidavits that were supposed to come first, before the Colonel interrupted.

I will begin by reading Exhibit T(1) which is a record of evidence of Capt. Solomon BARD, Hui G FONG Volunteer Corps.

(Affidavit of Capt. Solomon BARD read by Prosecutor).

PROSECUTOR: The next two affidavits are those of Capt. Ida WELLWOOD and they are Q(1) and R(1).

(Affidavits of Capt. Ida WELLWOOD read by Prosecutor).

PROSECUTOR: Exhibit "A" is here, Sir. I do not suppose you want me to read the 60 odd pages of it?

COURT: I think, Major PUDDICOMBE, the Court will excuse your reading those.

PROSECUTOR: The next affidavit is that of Lt.-Col. D.C. BOWIE which has been produced as Exhibit U(1).

(Affidavit of Lt.-Col. BOWIE read by Prosecutor).

PROSECUTOR: The next is a certified true copy of a letter dated 20 August 1945 addressed to Lt.-Col. BOWIE, signed S. SAITO, and another one dated 29 August 45 also signed S. SAITO.

First letter now read as signed S. SAITO REC

(Statement of S. SAITO read by Prosecutor).

COURT: In view of that fact that Dr. ANDERSON, who was a witness here, has signed as a witness in respect of these 2 documents signed by Dr. SAITO, the Court would like it to be arranged ~~for~~ **at** his convenience for you to recall Dr. ANDERSON so that he may be asked if he remembers it. It would enable the Defence also to cross-examine on that.

PROSECUTOR: I do not think there ~~any~~ any other matters that concern Dr. ANDERSON, Sir, for certain so that we would not have to recall him more than once. If you permit that we leave that till the Prosecution is about to close and if any other matters come up ~~will be~~ **will** be able to present them at the same time.

COURT: Certainly.

1		2	
cms		Ref.	
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES			
WO 235/1012 PT1			
1		2	
Ina		Ina	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

PROSECUTOR: The next affidavit is that of B.I. EVANS and it is Exhibit V(1).

(Affidavit of B.I. EVANS read by Prosecutor)

PROSECUTOR: The next Exhibit is W(1) Summary of Examination of SAITO Shunkichi.

(Statement of SAITO Shunkichi read by Prosecutor).

At 1600 hrs. the Court adjourns till 1000 hrs.
on Wednesday 11 December, 1946.

1		2		Ref.		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES		1		1		1		2	
cme						WO 235 /1012 PT1									

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.

12TH DAY.

11 Dec. P.M.

At 1430 hrs. on 11 December the Court re-assemble pursuant to adjournment; present the same Members as at adjournment.

No. 15

15th WITNESS FOR THE PROSECUTION - Mr. H.F. HOPKINS.

On being sworn is examined by the Prosecutor.

Q. Will you tell the Court your full name?
A. Henry Feltor HOPKINS.

Q. What is your employment?
A. I am employed by JARDINE MATHESON & Co. Ltd.

Q. What is the nature of your employment there?
A. Mercantile Assistant.

Q. Is it part of your duties to keep records and stocks and so on?
A. Yes.

Q. (Handing documents) Will you produce these documents to the Court stating from where they came and what the substance is?

A. The stock records which are produced here are taken from files recovered since the re-occupation of the Colony and represent the stock of diphtheria anti-toxin which was kept by us under lock and key on our premises Nos. 16 to 18 PEDDER Street. These are the figures as at 30 November, 1941. We have no record of stocks after that date but the sales for November are given for comparison purposes.

Q. About November's sale, you say it is put there for comparative purposes? Are we to infer from that that the sales of December would be comparable to those of November?

A. The sales for the month of December or for the 8 days of December we were open for business would be practically nil or certainly very low.

Q. Would it be fair to say then that the least amount of stock you had on hand would be the units mentioned in paragraph 1 less the sales as at November during the year 1941?

A. Yes, that is so.

PROSECUTOR: Those are produced by the witness and are part of his record; certified true copies of his records.

COURT: Are you in charge of the originals of these?
Witness: Yes Sir.

COURT: This is not certified as being a true copy of anything; it simply says on such and such a date stock records show so much. It is not certified on the document itself.

I think if Mr. HOPKINS reads it out and certifies on the document that these are true copies that will satisfy the Court.
(Certified true copy of the stock records of JARDINE MATHESON & Co. Ltd. as at 30 Nov. 1941, showing stocks of diphtheria anti-toxin on hand is handed to the Court, initialled by the President, marked L(4) and attached to the proceedings.)

1		2		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
cms		Ref:		WO 235/1012 PT1	
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives leaflet.		1		2	

Mr. HOPKINS

Q. Were you a POW here during the Japanese occupation?
A. Yes.

Q. Where were you interned?
A. I was taken prisoner at STANLEY FORT, midnight 25 December, 1941; I was subsequently transferred to NORTH POINT Camp where I stayed one month and then transferred to SHAN SHUI PO, POW camp where I stayed until 15 December, 1943 when I was drafted to JAPAN.

Q. Do you identify any of the accused?
A. Yes, I can identify in front Col. TOKUNAGA, on my left at the back TSUTADA, on my right at the back SAITO.

Q. What medical inspection was given to POWs about to go to JAPAN?
A. The method of determining the fitness and/or liability of prisoners to go on draft to JAPAN in the case of our camp was conducted by SAITO and consisted of a series of physical tests which were carried out. These tests were held on the parade ground at SHAN SHUI PO and the first test consisted of a run of approximately 50 yards. In the case of my own unit, the HONG KONG Volunteer Defence Corps, the first heat to be run consisted of 4 Warrant Officers. Two of these, W/O 1 JACK and B.S. WALKER were obviously unfit by reasons of age and condition to go on draft but nevertheless they were selected. Both these W/Os were hospitalized immediately on arrival in JAPAN. Both never went to the factory in JAPAN for a single day and both died in JAPAN, one within a month and one some 9 months later.

Q. What, besides this foot race, what other method of physical examination did SAITO employ?
A. As far as I can make out the main test of fitness was the run. You were handed a paper which was marked by a Japanese character on completing that run. You were then required to chin yourself on a bar, but so few prisoners could in fact achieve this that after a while that was stopped.

Q. Is that all?
A. After selection for the draft and immediately prior to embarkation, stool tests were taken. One man in fact did not go on the draft because of dysentery.

(No more questions)

CROSS-EXAMINATION:

Q. Could you explain how this diphtheria medicine was stored?
A. The diphtheria anti-toxin was stored in a specially constructed ice box.

Q. Can you explain where this refrigerator was situated? Is it situated in your company's godowns?
A. The ice box was situated under lock and key in our premises No. 16 to 18 PEDDER Street.

Q. When did you last inspect the storage of the diphtheria anti-toxin?
A. 30 November, 1941.

Q. After this date, when was the next time you had the opportunity to inspect the stores?
A. I was mobilised on 8 December 1941 and, except for a brief visit to the office on 17 December, 1941, I did not return to the office.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref.
WO 235 / 1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

Mr. HOPKINS:

- Q. During the Japanese occupation do you know ~~whether~~ the stores were left as they were or not?
- A. I am unable to say what happened to the stores after 17 December, 1941.

CROSS-EXAMINATION ^{RCL} (Contd. by Mr. HASEGAWA)

- Q. You said that you were included in the draft that was sent to JAPAN on 15 December, 1943. Before that date were other drafts sent to JAPAN?
- A. Yes.
- Q. How many persons were included in your draft?
- A. 400.
- Q. At the medical examination for the draft were not the POW Doctors present?
- A. Yes.
- Q. Could you tell what sort of medical examination these POW ^{RCL} doctors did?
- A. There was no medical examination carried out by the POW doctors.
- Q. Did not the POW doctors hand in a report to the Japanese side concerning the result of the daily medical examinations that the POWs took?
- A. That is possible.

RE-EXAMINATION.

- Q. In answer to the last question you said it is possible. What actual knowledge have you got of the procedure that medical Doctors took in regard to making reports?
- A. As a party commander I was responsible for making out statements. What happened to these I could not say after I left my company; but a daily return was kept of categories by party commanders which was kept in the camp office and which I believe was handed over to the Japanese authorities.

QUESTIONED BY THE COURT:

- Q. Can you tell the Court of this physical test of your party that went to JAPAN - were any of the Accused present on that occasion?
- A. SAITO conducted the proceedings, passed each file, each heat as they completed the run. In the first case, although both the two men quoted by me could not complete they were passed as fit to go on the draft.
- Q. Had either of these men been in hospital at SIAM SPW PO. to your knowledge?
- A. Yes.
- Q. Do you know what had been wrong with ^{RCL} them?
- A. Both men had suffered from a serious malnutritional complaint. Both W/Os were also veterans of the last War. I am unable to give their exact age but I should say both were in the region of 50 years of age.

1		2	
cms		Ref:	
WO 235/1012 PT1		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1		2	
ins		ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives Terms and Conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives leaflet

Mr. HOPKINS:

QUESTIONS PUT THROUGH THE COURT: (By Defence) *Mr. FUSIER A RCL*

Q. Have you any medical knowledge?

A. No, none at all.

Q. You said that two were unfit, was this as a result of your own observation?

A. My own observations, confirmed by a British Doctor in JAPAN on the arrival of these 2 men in JAPAN who said that both men should never have been sent on the draft. That opinion was confirmed by a Japanese Lieutenant Doctor who expressed surprise that two men of that medical category should have been sent to JAPAN when the men required were fit to work, and, as I said, both these men never did a day's work whilst they were in JAPAN.

Q. How long did the draft take to reach JAPAN?

A. We left HONG KONG on 15 December 1943. We arrived at MOJI on 6 January 1944 and arrived at our destination which was near NAGASAKI on 7 January 1944.

Q. You said that both of these W/Os were in hospital with malnutrition. Do you know when they were in hospital?

A. In the case of Sgt. Major WALKER to my definite knowledge he had been hospitalized not 3 months before we went on draft. In the case of Sgt. Major JACK he had been in hospital within a year of being posted on the draft. Exact dates I am afraid I cannot give. I would also like to add to the best of my recollection Sgt. Major WALKER was permanent "C" British medical category and Sgt. Maj. JACK permanent "E" British category, the grade "A" being the grade indicating fitness to go on working parties.

(No more questions) *Mr. NASEGAWA - Prosecutor RCL*

16th 17th RCL
WITNESS FOR THE PROSECUTION - Mr. R. NAZARIN, *having been*
duly affirmed RCL
On a solemn declaration is examined by the Prosecutor.

Q. Will you tell the Court your full name?
A. Ramee NAZARIN.

Q. What is your nationality?
A. MALAY, born in HONG KONG.

Q. What is your age?
A. 58 years.

Q. What is your permanent address?
A. 453 LOCKHART Road in the city of VICTORIA.

Q. What is your present occupation?
A. I am the Acting Manager of HARRY WICKIN & Co.

Q. What is the HARRY WICKIN Co.?
A. An import and export firm and commission agents.

Q. At the time of the Japanese occupation of this Colony, what was your occupation?

A. I was the Accountant and Secretary of HARRY WICKIN.

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref:		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES		ins	
		WO 235/1012 PT1					

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives material.

Mr. LAZARIT:

- Q. Were you employed here in HONG KONG?
- A. Yes.
- Q. As the Accountant and Secretary of the firm had you knowledge of stocks on hand of various goods?
- A. We were agents for EVANS, LESCHER and WEBB, a pharmaceutical firm and they supplied us with stocks of pharmaceuticals and other serum and vaccine for our stocks.
- Q. How much stock of vaccine serum had you ordinarily on hand?
- A. We were the contractors to supply the Government and always had on hand a six months' supply in case of any epidemic.
- Q. Where did you keep this supply of serum and vaccine?
- A. The greater portion of our stock of sera and vaccine were kept in the town depot of the dairy farm and a small quantity was kept in our office ice chest for immediate emergency.
- Q. Where was it kept?
- A. In the town, the cold storage.
- Q. Just where is that dairy farm depot?
- A. It was in CONNAUGHT Road, Central.
- Q. Can you be a bit more specific than that?
- A. Just near POTTINGER Street; I cannot give you the exact number of the place. It is near the vehicular ferry.
- Q. That was in this stock of serum and vaccine, what nature of serum and vaccine?
- A. As the office was all looted I can only tell from memory. We had a quantity of anti-tetanus, diphtheria anti-toxin and anti-dysentery serum.
- Q. Do I understand then that you had in your stock in the cold storage of the dairy farm a six months' supply for the Government of the sera of which you speak?
- A. Our contract with the Government was that we must have at least 6 months' supply and the stock we had, I believe, would ordinarily last 2 years.
- Q. What was the annual percentage of deterioration of such stock?
- A. About 5 percent.

CROSS EXAMINATION:

- Q. What was the estimated amount of drugs that would be used in 6 months, such drugs as diphtheria anti-toxin and anti-dysentery serum?
- A. HARRY WICKIN, after the occupation all our books and everything was looted. We tried to get our list of stock from EVANS, LESCHER & WEBB for whom we gave detailed balances of everything we had in hand. Their office was blitzed too. We could not get any information. As far as I could remember after 6 years, the greatest amount used was the anti-tetanus serum and diphtheria only a small amount because this is not an everyday occurring disease. Dysentery serum we only got a very small quantity of. Anyhow that would be enough to last; if any epidemic came along, we could last 6 months after this.
- Q. Were you yourself responsible for the storage of the various drugs?
- A. Yes, I had one assistant to help me who looked after the books. I was responsible for all the stocks.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref.
WO 235 / 1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	ins

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

Mr. HARAPIN:

- Q. Do you know who was responsible for the actual storing of the goods?
- A. I make an order to the Dairy Farm to store the goods for us. I am the man. Supposing we sent in serum to the dairy farm, "please receive for storage one or two cases serum", I make out the chit myself.
- Q. Because of this you do not know what actually happens to the medicine?

COURT: I am not quite certain of the exact meaning of Mr. HARAPIN's question, whether witness knew what happened to the medicine after the Japanese invaded the Colony or whether he did not know about the medicine at all.

- Q. I mean during the Japanese occupation.
- A. I know nothing about it.
- Q. The percentage of deterioration which you said was about 5 percent, could you enlarge on this statement?
- A. I mean during the many years I was in charge of these medicines we had to throw away very few of those expiring serum. There was not more than 5 percent; that is what I mean.

RE-EXAMINATION:

- Q. I do not know whether it is possible in Re-Examination but I would ask the Court to ask the Witness what sort of a container, in size, shape and material was used to convey these stores to the dairy farm cold storage.

QUESTIONED

BY THE COURT: Will you tell the Court that?

- A. These sera as usual were in a small phial depending, of course, on the size of the serum or vaccine. These little red glass tubes are packed in paper boxes. They are all packed in one wooden case with straws to keep them tight. They the y are sent down to the dairy farm.

- Q. Where were you when the Japanese invaded the Colony in December 1941?
- A. I was in HONG KONG.
- Q. Did you remain in HONG KONG all the time the Japanese were here?
- A. I was in HONG KONG up to January, 1943; then I went over to MACAO with the permission of the Japanese.
- Q. Were you still carrying on your business, or any kind of business while you were in HONG KONG?
- A. I did run about as a broker selling paper.
- Q. Were you in possession or control of any of your stocks of drugs during that time?
- A. No.
- Q. Did you go to this dairy farm godown where your goods were kept?
- A. I dare not get near it.
- Q. Did anyone take over your stocks, or was anyone in charge of your stock of drugs while you were in HONG KONG?
- A. Just after the occupation I went back to the office. I found there were some Japanese gendarmes already brought in who took what they could from the office. I opened some of the cupboards: there was some medicine. P.T.O.

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives Terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives leaflet.

1 2
cme

Ref:

WO 235/1012 PT1

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES

1

ins

2

Mr. NAZARIN.

A. (Contd.) A few days afterwards the office was used by the Japanese as a sort of internment camp for the then Colonial Secretary, L. GIMSON (he was in office then). I found a lot of medicine and it so happened a Major of the RAMC said there was no medicine up in the military hospital. He got a sack and took away what he could take from our office. That is the only time I had any control over the medicine.

QUESTIONS PUT THROUGH THE COURT.
(By Mr. BULLITT, Defence Counsel)

Q. What sort of medicine did this Major take back with him?
A. There were some injections which were not necessary to be put in cold storage, some for eyes and different purposes and other proprietary medicines such as liver extract and that sort of thing.

No question by Mr. Nazarin re

(By Prosecutor)

Q. Is it necessary to keep anti-diphtheria serum on ice?
A. Yes, it is necessary to keep it in a certain temperature to keep it in good order.

(No more questions)

re

17TH WITNESS FOR THE PROSECUTION - Mr. Lewis GUY.

On being sworn is examined by the Prosecutor.

Q. Will you tell the Court your full name please?
A. Lewis GUY.

Q. What is your occupation?
A. Chemist, with WATSON & Co.

Q. What had you to do with the Wholesale Department of WATSON & Co.?
A. Manager of the Wholesale Department.

Q. What is your age?
A. 68.

Q. Where were you born?
A. ENGLAND.

Q. What is your present residence?
A. NORTH POINT, HONG KONG.

Q. At the time of the British surrender to the Japanese in December, 1941, what was your position then?
A. I was Manager of WATSON's Wholesale Department.

Q. Can you tell the Court what stocks of drugs you had at that time, at the time of the Japanese capture of HONGKONG?
A. No, I cannot tell you; all our records are lost. I cannot tell you what stocks we had.

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref.		ins		ins	
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES							
WO 235/1012 PT1							
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives leaflet.							

Mr. GUY.

Q. If you cannot say definitely, can you tell the Court from your experience about what quantity of drugs would be on hand at any given time?

A. Usually we keep 6 months' stocks.

Q. Would it be correct to say then that that was the situation at the time of the Japanese occupation of HONG KONG?

A. We had fairly heavy stocks at that time, possibly more than usual.

Q. Do you remember at all what these stocks consisted of, what kind of drugs?

A. General drugs and chemicals of different kinds - serums, vitamins.

Q. When you mentioned serums, for what diseases did you have serum?

A. Anti-typhoid, cholera and diphtheritic serums, smallpox vaccines.

Q. Can you give any indication of any other particular drugs you had, such as drugs for the treatment of dysentery?

C. COURT: That is a bit leading.

PROSECUTOR: It may be, Sir, but after all this is a specific witness who is giving evidence as to not facts that happened but something that was present at the time. If you say so I will have to go on to get it, but I think, under the circumstances, a leading question is not unfair.

C. COURT: Perhaps we could put it this way. Did you carry a stock of drugs suitable for treating tropical illnesses?

A. Yes.

C. COURT: Can you tell the Court what sort of illnesses would be included?

A. All kinds of tropical wasting diseases for which vitamins were used, anemia.

Q. Were there any other diseases you carried medicine for?

A. We had not stock medicines for particular diseases - it was in general. We had a thousand and one things in our place at different times for treating practically everything that comes along. We did not treat people, we just sold.

Q. You have mentioned serums and vitamins tablets. Will you endeavour to remember anything else you had on stock at that time?

A. Do you mean in the matter of liver extracts, cod liver oil and that type of stuff?

Q. Any medicine you had on hand at all.

A. We had large stocks of cod liver oil, emulsion and different vitamin products of that description, tablets of dozens of different kinds, immense stocks of quinine at the same time. Also patent medicines such as those of Parke Davis, Burrows Wellcome - all their preparations we had in stock.

Q. What common medicines did you have in stock?

A. Drugs and chemicals like IPOLIN, castor oil. We had ample supplies of those things, bicarbonate of soda, all that type.

Q. What antiseptics did you have?

A. We had good stocks of LYSOL, HYG-EOL, mercurial preparations and other patent disinfectants. There was ample DETTOL.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
Ref: WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives Terms and Conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' Material.

Mr. GUY.

- Q. I am not speaking so much of those disinfectants as antiseptics.
 A. I cannot particularize on anything else of what we had at the time.
- Q. These vitamin pills, tablets, etc. what would they include?
 A. Vitamin A, B, B1, C and D, little of E.
- Q. What substances are included in those vitamin pills?
 A. They were mostly in tablet or pill form or injections.
- Q. What were they made of?
 A. Some were naturally vitamins and others were synthetics.
- Q. What were the natural vitamins made from?
 A. Those we had at that time were mostly from halibut oil, cod liver oil or shark's liver.
- Q. Does it include anything else?
 A. Not that I remember.
- Q. What about synthetics, what would they be composed of?
 A. Ascorbic acid.
- Q. Is that all?
 A. No, there were others but I do not remember what they are.

PROSECUTOR: I am afraid I am going to have to insist on a full list of these things bit by bit because there is one important item that has been omitted. It is here on his statement. I suggest I be allowed to do it. I do not think it is unfair in any way to ask him what supplies they had of that particular drug.

COURT: You appreciate, Major Puddicombe, the Court have to keep an eye on the questions on the grounds that the Defence possibly do not understand our rules about leading questions. Therefore in the interest of the Accused the Court have to put an objection which would otherwise be made by the Defending Counsel. If you ask Mr. FUJITA if he has any objection to that question being put and he does not object, then the Court will not object.

DEFENCE: I have no objection.

- Q. Did you have any sulfa pyridine in your stock?
 A. Yes.
- Q. Did you have any nicotinic acid in your stock?
 A. Yes.
- Q. Can you tell the Court what became of these stocks during the Japanese occupation?
 A. No I do not exactly know what became of them, but in February the Japanese civilians took me in from STANLEY to go over the wholesale department. When they came there they found the Navy were in occupation and we were not allowed to go in. So I presume that the Navy had it.

COURT: When was this?

A. We were brought in in February 1942.

Cross-Examination declined. No questions by Court.

At 1630 hrs. the Court adjourn till 1000 hrs. on 12 Dec. 46.

1		2	
cms		Ref:	
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES		WO 235/1012 PT1	
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.		1	
		ins	
		2	

196

No. 5 WAR CRIMES COURT.

TWELFTH DAY'S proceedings of the trial of Col TOKUNAGA ISAO, Capt SAITO SHUNKICHI, Lieut HANAKA NITOSHI, Interpreter TSUTADA and Sgt HARADA JOTARO, of the Imperial Japanese Army.

(Held at Jardine Matheson's East Point Godown on Wednesday, 11 December 1946).

The Court ^{2cc} assembled at 1000 hours.

The Prosecutor applies for an adjournment next Wednesday morning, 18 December 1946, until the afternoon, on medical grounds. ^{2cc}

COURT: The application is granted.

^{2cc} 18

12TH WITNESS FOR PROSECUTION -- Dr. COOMBS.

EXAMINATION-IN-CHIEF

The witness having been duly sworn is questioned by the Prosecutor:

Q. Will you tell the Court your full name?
A. ANTHONY HENRY REGINALD COOMBS.

Q. What is your occupation?
A. I am in the Port Health Office, Hong Kong.

Q. In what capacity do you serve in the Port Health Office?
A. As Port Health Officer.

Q. What is your profession?
A. Medical practitioner

Q. Will you briefly outline to the Court your qualifications as a Medical practitioner - your degrees -- are they post graduate degrees -- or qualifications other than your University Education -- medical practice?
A. M.R.C.S. -- Member of the Royal College of Surgeons.
L.R.C.P. (London) -- Licentiate of the Royal College of Physicians.
D.T.M. & H. - Diploma of Tropical Medicine and Hygiene.

Q. How long have you been in practice?
A. Since 1937.

Q. Are these post graduate degrees?
A. Not the qualifying degrees -- the D.T.M. & H. is a post graduate degree.

Q. When did you actually acquire your qualifying degrees?
A. In 1937.

Q. I understand that you were taken prisoner of war here in Hong Kong in 1941 and that you were then serving as a physician in the R.A.M.C. is that correct?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Where were you interned?
A. In SHAM SHUI PO Camp.

Q. Where you there during the whole period of the Japanese occupation?
A. I was there from the date we entered the Camp until April 1945, then I was moved to the C.B.S. Hospital on KOWLOON side.

Q. Approximately when did you go into camp?
A. I think it was about the 28th of December 1941.

Q. Can you identify any of the Accused?
A. I can -- Col TOKUNAGA, sitting in front -- Mr. TSUTADA at the left end of the back row, Capt SAITO at the right end of the back row. I know HARADA, second man from the left in the back row -- only from the time I was in the C.B.S. hospital.

1		2		1		2	
cme		Ref.		1		Ins	
		WO 235/1012 PT1					

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' material.

No. 5 WAR CRIMES COURT.

TWELFTH DAY'S proceedings of the trial of Col TOKUNAGA ISAO, Capt SAITO SHUNKICHI, Lieut HANAKA HITOSHI, Interpreter TSUTADA and Sgt HARADA JOTARO, of the Imperial Japanese Army.

(Held at Jardine Matheson's East Point Godown on Wednesday, 11 December 1946).

The Court re-assembles at 1000 hours.

The Prosecutor applies for an adjournment next Wednesday morning, 18 December 1946, until the afternoon, on medical grounds. *Rec*

COURT: The application is granted.

Rec 18

14TH WITNESS FOR PROSECUTION -- Dr. COOMBS.

EXAMINATION-IN-CHIEF

The witness having been duly sworn is questioned by the Prosecutor:

Q. Will you tell the Court your full name?

A. ANTHONY HENRY REGINALD COOMBS.

Q. What is your occupation?

A. I am in the Port Health Office, Hong Kong.

Q. In what capacity do you serve in the Port Health Office?

A. As Port Health Officer.

Q. What is your profession?

A. Medical practitioner

Q. Will you briefly outline to the Court your qualifications as a Medical practitioner - your degrees -- are they post graduate degrees -- or qualifications other than your University Education -- medical practice?

A. M.R.C.S. -- Member of the Royal College of Surgeons.
L.R.C.P. (London) -- Licentiate of the Royal College of Physicians.
D.T.M. & H. - Diploma of Tropical Medicine and Hygiene.

Q. How long have you been in practice?

A. Since 1937.

Q. Are these post graduate degrees?

A. Not the qualifying degrees -- the D.T.M. & H. is a post graduate degree.

Q. When did you actually acquire your qualifying degrees?

A. In 1937.

Q. I understand that you were taken prisoner of war here in Hong Kong in 1941 and that you were then serving as a physician in the R.A.M.C. is that correct?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Where were you interned?

A. In SHAM SHUI PO Camp.

Q. Where you there during the whole period of the Japanese occupation?

A. I was there from the date we entered the Camp until April 1945, then I was moved to the C.B.S. Hospital on KOWLOON side.

Q. Approximately when did you go into camp?

A. I think it was about the 28th of December 1941.

Q. Can you identify any of the Accused?

A. I can -- Col TOKUNAGA, sitting in front -- Mr. TSUTADA at the left end of the back row, Capt SAITO at the right end of the back row. I know HARADA, second man from the left in the back row -- only from the time I was in the C.B.S. hospital.

1		2		1		2	
cm		Ref.		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES		1	
cm		Ref.		WO 235/1012 PT1		1	
cm		Ref.		WO 235/1012 PT1		2	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.

197

Q. Who was Col TOKUNAGA?

A. Col TOKUNAGA was the Commander-in-Chief of all the prison camps in Hong Kong.

Q. Who was Capt SAITO?

A. He was the Japanese Medical Officer in charge of POW Camps in Hong Kong.

Q. Who was TSUTADA?

A. He was the interpreter in the SHAM SHUI PO POW Camp.

Q. Who was HARADA?

A. I am not sure what his official position was at all -- he was, I think a Guard Commander in the C.B.S. hospital when I was there.

COURT: Do you remember what rank he held at the time.

WITNESS : Sgt.

PROSECUTOR:

Q. What do you know about dysentery in the SHAM SHUI PO Camp?

A. There was a very large number of cases of dysentery especially earlier on in Camp.

Q. How did you treat the dysentery patients?

A. They were treated with what we had at the time, which was not very much; the drugs which we had at that time were brought in with us when we came to the Camp and we had very little with which to treat the dysentery cases.

PROSECUTOR: Dr. you have to presume that we know nothing at all and I would like you to be a little more specific about the drugs -- what sort of drugs did you have?

A. In the first few weeks of the camp, when the place was over-crowded, there were a large number of dysentery cases -- this disease developed and spread enormously due to the fact that the place was full of flies, and there was very poor hospital accommodation for the cases. We had a certain amount of magnesium sulphate to treat the patients with and a stuff called 'Kiesulguhr' which is a sort of water filtering powder.

Q. You had that when you went into Camp?

A. Yes, during the first few weeks of the imprisonment.

Q. How long was this supply which you had in Camp adequate for your needs?

A. For about three weeks.

Q. How did you get replacements?

A. We did not get any official replacements of drugs until the Japanese sent in drugs to us, which was very irregular and in very inadequate amounts.

Q. Can you give any idea of the seriousness of the onslaught of dysentery?

A. I do not know how many deaths there were from dysentery at the time. These cases were in a separate part of the hospital -- quite a number of patients died, but I do not know how many as I was not looking after that lot myself.

Q. Had you had the medical supplies that were requested in adequate quantities what would have been the effect on this death rate?

A. A large number would not have died if we had supplies of M & B 693.

COURT: Would you mind enlarging on that -- what would you say would have been the percentage of recovery had you had the drug that you required? 'A large number' is rather vague --

WITNESS : I should say about 70% of those who died from dysentery could have been saved with proper drugs.

COURT: And does that apply to bacillary dysentery or amoebic dysentery?

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref.
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
line	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.

WITNESS: To Bacillary -- which this epidemic was -- because this type of dysentery is spread by flies and so on.

COURT: Is it right to say Amoebic dysentery did not assume an epidemic form in SHAN SHUI PO Camp?

WITNESS: I do not think one could say we had an epidemic of it -- we were not able to diagnose amoebic dysentery for certain without ~~the~~ microscopes. These cases were nearly all of bacillary dysentery.

PROSECUTOR:

- Q. Can you tell the Court anything about the adequateness of your diet in SHAN SHUI PO Camp?
- A. The diet consisted ~~xxx~~ mainly of rice and vegetables, which were inadequate as regards protein and vitamins are concerned, and as a result of the diet a large number of deficiency diseases or avitaminosis, and one other disease, which I cannot remember now, developed as a result of these deficiencies in the diet.
- Q. How serious were these dietary diseases?
- A. They were very serious indeed -- about three months after we had been in the camp they started to appear in the form of an oedema of people's legs; about half the camp had this swelling, and a few months after that, about June, they began to get paralysis and a disease known as "electric feet" which is ~~an~~ extremely painful condition with paralysis of their legs and sometimes of their eyes and even fingers. This actually took six months to develop after they had the swelling in about March.
- Q. How serious then were these dietary diseases which you have mentioned?
- A. They were serious enough to cause a number of people to die and to cause disabilities to others which were very long lasting; in fact a number of these people have still got these disabilities, especially in regard to their eyesight, and these were definitely due to deficiencies in their diet.
- Q. Had you had adequate diet what would have been the death rate or the effect of the other lasting diseases?
- A. The prisoners would not have developed diseases such as beri-beri and pellagra -- they would not have had these disabilities and the death rate would have been very considerably lower. I cannot say how many less would have died but a very large number less.
- Q. In respect to the two diseases which you mentioned before, dysentery and avitaminosis, -- what representation did you make to the Japanese respecting the condition of your medical supplies and of the dietary conditions?
- A. The Japanese were approached about the food and asked to improve it on very many occasions by the Officers in the Camp, with no result.
- Q. When you say 'The Japanese were approached' -- which Japanese were approached?
- A. The Camp Commandant of the Camp. We were continually making requests for drugs and medical supplies -- we got a certain amount from the Japanese but they came in at most irregular times and in very small amounts for the amount of work we had to do.
- Q. Who did you make those requests to?
- A. I used to make them through a senior medical officer in the Camp who made them to the Camp Commandant.
- Q. Can you tell the Court anything about diphtheria in SHAN SHUI PO Camp?
- A. Yes, in June 1942 we had a few cases of diphtheria which we were not very sure to start with as to whether they were diphtheria or not. We asked the Japanese to take throat swabs and report on them for us.
- Q. What do you mean by taking throat swabs.
- A. Taking throat swabs of the patients ~~xxxxxxx~~. They took the swabs of three people for examination -- these were returned as negative

1		2	
cms		Ref.	
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES		WO 235/1012 PT1	
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.		1	
		Ins	
		2	

but by that time the disease obviously was diphtheria and a large number of other cases had developed.

- Q. You say throat swabs were required in June, when were they taken?
 A. The throat swabs were taken from these three people in June 1942 and sent back as negative -- not diphtheria.
- Q. Who were they sent back by and where were they taken?
 A. By the Japanese -- presumably by their bacteriological laboratory. By the time they had come back, the disease obviously was diphtheria, as I said before, and in the next few months the number of patients increased and we had altogether among the British POWs about 260, of whom about 60 died. Quite a number were sent outside to St. Teresa's hospital, and I do not know how many died there, but I know at least 20 died.

COURT: Will you enlarge a little more about these swabs?

PROSECUTOR: That is what I was going to ask, sir.

- Q. If you refer to the conditions of the swabbing of the throat for a moment, you asked for that in June 1942, what was the purpose in asking for this throat swab test?
 A. When these cases first occurred, in order to make certain what they were we asked for a swab diagnosis of the case.
- Q. Having been able to have a diagnosis of the swabs what would your procedure have been?
 A. The swabs were taken in the first place to verify the fact whether the disease was diphtheria or not and generally a throat swab is treated clinically to detect carriers of the disease. In the case of an epidemic swabs are used on a large scale even among people who are not showing symptoms of the disease because these people who are contacts or carriers have to be isolated during the epidemic.
- Q. Therefore, I presume, the examination of a throat swab, from what you have said, is made as a precautionary and diagnostic procedure rather than actual treatment of the disease?
 A. That is correct it is not a treatment at all.
- Q. Now, then, could you make the point a little clearer -- the swabs which were sent to the Japanese for examination -- did the persons from whom they were taken show any signs of the disease?
 A. They had the disease -- two out of the three cases died from diphtheria.
- Q. Can you remember how soon after the swabs were taken and sent to be clinically treated that the symptoms became obvious?
 A. Within two or three days.
- Q. And how long was it from the time the swabs were sent to the Japanese that they were returned to you with a report that they were negative?
 A. I should say about two days -- between 24 and 48 hours.
- Q. Have you had personal experience of examining throat swabs yourself?
 A. I have had, yes -- but sometimes it is very difficult to definitely diagnose the case from a swab.
- Q. Now, sir -- two other medical witnesses have mentioned in their evidence two different methods of examining swabs -- the first is microscopically and the second is by the cultural method -- would two days have been adequate time in which to have carried out a diagnosis by the cultural method or not?
 A. Two days would be about the minimum time for a cultural examination -- a microscopic examination can be done at once on the spot.
- Q. As a professional man what conclusion would you be prepared to draw from the failure on the part of the Japanese to discover that these swabs were positive for diphtheria?

XX

1		2		1		2	
cms						ins	
Ref:				WO 235/1012 PT1			
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES							

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives Terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives leaflet

- A. I should say that they had probably not attempted to examine them by the cultural method at all.
- Q. What is the relative effectiveness of the microscopic and cultural procedure technically?
- A. This depends entirely on the technique of the man making such an examination and on a man's experience. An experienced man can spot the germ by a direct microscopic examination -- this whole matter would depend entirely on the technique and efficiency of the person undertaking the examination.
- Q. If swabbing them is a precautionary measure what is the actual method of avoiding the disease?
- A. The only method is treatment by serum -- there is no other means -- treatment by anti-diphtheria serum or anti-toxic serum are the only methods of treating the disease before it is established. You do not wait for the results of a swab test in a diphtheria epidemic. You treat every case with a sore throat as diphtheria and you treat them straight away -- you treat the case with the serum as soon as they develop a sore throat and that is the method undertaken in an epidemic of diphtheria.
- Q. Do I understand throat swabbing is used as a precautionary method only and not after the disease is established?
- A. Once the disease is established, swabbing is used for the purpose of segregating carriers.
- Q. Then it is ~~used~~ used just as a precautionary measure?
- A. Yes.
- Q. In this epidemic which you have in SHAMSHUIPO, what facilities did you have for effectively treating the disease before it was established, that is with the serum that you have mentioned?
- A. We had no serum in our medical supplies and we had no serum for a considerable length of time during the epidemic.
- Q. What representations did you make to the Japanese about this matter?
- A. The serum was asked for as soon as we realized that these were diphtheria cases and it was continually asked for for some months. It was asked for every day and more than once a day by personal application to Capt SAITO and to the Camp Commandant by myself, Major ROBERTSON and Major BROWN and we did this throughout the last few weeks of June, July and August.
- Q. What was the reply to your request from Capt SAITO and the others for this serum?
- A. They said they would try and get some but we did not get any.
- Q. Are you able to tell the Court how such serum is produced?
- A. It is produced originally from a horse -- I do not know the technicalities of each stage I have only seen it when it has been put up in sterilised ampoules and used. There are different kinds of serum -- the ordinary meat serum; horse serum, and then the concentrated extracts of serum.
- Q. To get back to the manufacture of serum -- having got your horse, can you tell us briefly what is done with the horse to produce this serum, and who does it?
- A. This stuff is usually supplied all ready for use in ampoules or similar containers which are manufactured by chemical firms who have to have a licence to produce this stuff.
- COURT: I do not think that is what the Prosecuting Officer is getting at -- having got a horse what steps are taken to ~~improve~~ improvise the serum on the spot.
- A. This can be improvised on the spot with considerable difficulty -- you would first have to give the horse diphtheria -- bleed it and when the horse was immune to diphtheria you would later separate the serum and sterilise it so that it can be given to human beings and this would be quite a big job.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cm	Ref:
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives Terms and Conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives material.

We did actually ask for a horse and were prepared to do this ourselves. I cannot say what the results would have been -- but a request was made for a horse to be brought into camp.

PROSECUTOR:

- Q. What was the answer to the request for a horse?
A. We got no horse.
- Q. Under what conditions do you make serum -- where could you make serum?
A. In a Laboratory.
- Q. To your knowledge were there laboratories in Hong Kong where such serum could be devolved?
A. There were certainly laboratories here before the War which could have been used for making serum but whether they existed while we were in the Camp I do not know.
- Q. In your Public Health Department are there any laboratories?
A. Now? Yes. There is one on the island and one on the mainland.
- Q. Can you say, within reasonable limits, how long it would take to make diphtheria serum, presuming you undertook to make it in May, when would you actually have serum which you could use in the treatment of the disease?
A. We could have had it in June sometime.
- Q. You told us that you made a request for serum - when did you actually receive the serum and from whom?
A. We first had serum in September 1942, which came in through underground channels and not from the Japanese Military authorities but this was very small in amount. It did however make an enormous difference to those people who were lucky enough to get it. We gave it to fresh cases of the disease that were developing at that time -- this was administered in very small amounts but was enough to make a difference. We used to give doses of about 4,000 units to each new case when the proper dose was in the region of 100,000 units.
- Q. You said that 60 cases died in Camp and 20 in St Teresa's hospital, now, just for the record, I presume you gave that as an approximation, was the figure of 60 the total number of deaths?
A. That was among the British as distinct from the Canadian.
- Q. Is that inclusive of those who died in St. Teresa's hospital?
A. No.
- Q. I have here before me a document which was produced before another witness -- I am going to ask you a simple hypothetical question -- what the position would have been had ~~you~~ you had what this document shows, i.e. 33 doses of 1000 units
4 doses of 2000 units
10 doses of 3000 units
149 doses of 5000 units
18 doses of 10000 units
and 16 doses of 20000 units.
- Would this have made an effective difference in your death rate, that is had you received those doses at the time when you first requested the Japanese for serum?
- A. It would have made all the difference between the cases who were dying and the cases with the disease. The death-rate without serum is usually about 30% and with serum usually 1 or 2% -- very often not even as high -- it all depends on how early you get the serum. You can usually count on 100% recovery with the proper doses of serum. This is proved because nearly all the deaths occurred before we had the serum. Many people died because they had had no serum. The worst month for actual deaths was September. After that we had plenty of serum brought in -- after October 1942 and we were never short of serum at all.

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref.		Ins			
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES							
WO 235/1012 PT1							
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.							

Q. You spoke of the accused, Capt. SAITO, being the Medical Officer (Japanese) of the POW Camp. What interest did he take in this diphtheria epidemic. How many times did he visit the hospital?

A. He visited the hospital on several occasions throughout the epidemic but only once in the first month or two when the epidemic was increasing; later on he came in once or twice when we had moved the hospital across to JUBILEE Buildings and isolated the diphtheria cases. During the bad time, the first three months of the epidemic, he himself only came in once and was very careful not to go near these bad cases -- they were extremely bad cases.

Q. From your own experience of the Accused, Dr. SAITO, what concern did he show over the seriousness of the epidemic.

A. I do not know how concerned he was over the epidemic -- he showed very little interest and so I do not know what he felt about it.

Q. Can you tell the Court anything of the attitude of the Accused, Dr. SAITO, toward the death certificates which you made, either in the case of diphtheria or any other deficiency diseases of which you had personal experience?

A. The Japanese did not like deficiency diseases being mentioned on death certificates. Also in the cases of dysentery. We had to put enteritis instead of dysentery. We were not allowed to mention malnutrition on death certificates either. However, I remember on all the cases of diphtheria, I wrote down diphtheria on the death certificates as well.

Q. Will you take this document, which is marked Exhibit T(2) and tell the Court what it is and point out anything that you yourself know of the documents of which it is composed?

A. These are Case Medical History sheets of patients who died in SHAM SHUI PO, ARGYLL STREET and BOWEN ROAD.

Q. Who made up these case history sheets?

A. These were made up by the doctors who were POWs in these camps and when patients died these were handed to the Japanese and apparently they kept them altogether here.

Q. Are you able to indicate from those documents any diagnoses which were changed from the originals or which you were ordered to put down incorrectly, for instance, you said you were told to state enteritis in the case of dysentery, and so on?

A. I could not say that from these sheets because the death certificates which we had to write may have been different to the disease that is put down against each name here. There are a whole lot of diphtheria cases here -- the only treatment against them is weak carbolic. There are no actual death certificates here, just the Case Medical History sheets of everybody who died. I remember a lot of these cases extremely well. Some are marked as enteritis -- they were not my cases and whether they really had dysentery or not I could not say.

Q. Are there any among those documents which were kept by you yourself?

A. Yes, there are a very large number here of those who died from diphtheria -- my signature is here against all those cases -- there are about 60 of those here.

Q. 60 there of death under your signature who actually died of diphtheria?

A. Yes.

COURT: Before you return the document, do you recognise the signatures of any other medical officers?

WITNESS : Yes.

COURT: Can you tell the Court whose signatures you recognise?

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref:					
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES							
WO 235 / 1012 PT1							
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.							

- A. COL. BOWIE, Major HARRISON, Major ASHTON-ROSE, Sgrn.Lt.Cdr. GUN, R.N., Capt RODRIGUES, Major BROWN, Capt EVANS, DMS., Sgrn.Lt. JACKSON, and Capt. LANCASTER. Those are all British Medical Officers and of the Canadian Medical Officers I recognize Major CRAWFORD, Capt GREY and Capt. Bankoff's signatures.

The Court is adjourned for five minutes, C 1130-4, RCL
The Court re-assembles at 1135-4, RCL

- Q. Will you tell the Court when the Canadians arrived in SHAM SHUI PO Camp?
A. They came across from NORTH POINT in September 1942.

- Q. Had they Medical Officers with them?
A. Yes, they had four Medical Officers with them when they came over.

- Q. When they arrived what was the condition of the health of the Canadian troops?
A. Their general condition was about the same as ours, and with regard to infectious diseases, they had some cases of diphtheria with them. Not very many -- nothing like the number we ourselves had, at that time.

- Q. Do you know what their position was with respect to serum?
A. They had no serum at all at that time -- we had some of this smuggled over -- a very little -- and we shared this with them. I gave some to Col CRAWFORD and he used it on his bad cases of diphtheria.

- Q. There is a report here, a monthly report, dated 30th October, concerning diphtheria patients which I would like you to comment on: "A large number of deaths can be attributed to the discord between the British and Canadians which prevented the British Medical Officers transferring the serum to the Canadian side" Can you comment on that statement?
A. There was no discord at all between the Canadians and British -- in fact they were very friendly and very united especially under the circumstances in which we were. The supplies of serum that we had were unofficial -- there was no supply made by the Japanese authorities and therefore it was given on the sly to the Canadian Medical Officers by us. Later on when the serum was sent in there was sufficient for everybody at that time; both Canadians and British had enough and there was no need to withhold any from anybody.

- Q. Would you then say that this statement which I have read out to you is true in substance or false in substance?
A. I should say it was utterly false.

- Q. You have spoken of medical supplies being inadequate, with respect to that have you anything to tell the Court regarding the available medical supplies in Hong Kong either during the occupation, or what you discovered when the occupation was over.
A. There was a very large amount of medical supplies in the Colony when we went into internment -- how long these were available for, I do not know, but Red Cross supplies came in in August and we got a certain amount of that; these were Canadian Red Cross supplies. Some more came in in March 1945, and while I was at the C.B.S. hospital in April we knew of this but nothing had been brought in until after the Japanese surrender. I saw two boxes brought in, about August 15th or 16th which had arrived in the colony about March of that same year, 1945.

- Q. What had been your need of these supplies which arrived in March and were not delivered until August -- what had been your need in the interim?
A. They contained a large number of drugs which we needed and had not seen since we had been captured -- there was a fairly good amount of vitamin capsules and vitamin preparations which would have been very useful even during those last few months between April and August.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	ins

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.

COURT: Can you say whether, before the outbreak of the war in December 1941 there was any considerable amount of dysentery among the British troops in the Colony?

WITNESS: Cases of dysentery were always cropping up but in small numbers. We had a very small dysentery ward in Bowen Road which was very often empty and never had more than one dozen people in it.

COURT: What do you reckon as your peak month in diphtheria -- the worst month?

WITNESS: September was the worst month, September 1942.

CROSS-EXAMINATION -- Mr. FUJITA.

- Q. In answer to a question about dysentery you said if there were adequate drugs about 70% of the cases would have been saved, that is about 30% would have died, is that correct?
- A. 30% might have died because apart from dysentery itself most cases had dysentery together with other malnutritional diseases and they died with more than one disease. Dysentery was the main disease but there were several other diseases killing them concurrently.

PROSECUTOR: I think there is a misunderstanding, here sir --

COURT: I think so myself.

PROSECUTOR: Witness mentioned that of those 70% who died, the cases referred to would have recovered if adequate drugs were supplied -- he did not mention the fact that 30% would have died.

COURT: Yes, I think Mr. Fujita you will have to put the question differently -- you can ask witness -- in dysentery, with the adequate amount of drugs, what percentage of recovery would you expect?
The question is put by Defence Counsel REC

WITNESS: In peace time I should say 90% would have recovered from dysentery if properly treated.

DEFENCE:

- Q. You said that the Japanese did not carry out a cultural examination of the swab and therefore the reply was 'negative', is this your opinion?
- A. Well, it is, yes. Because if they had carried out an examination they could not have failed to have found diphtheria and as the report was sent back so early as negative I should say they had not done a proper examination. By the time the swabs were brought back the cases were nearly dead with diphtheria.
- Q. After the swabs of these three persons were taken as you said could they have not contracted the disease?
- A. No, the swabs were taken because they had sore throats -- they had the disease then and that is why the swabs were taken.
- Q. Are there other diseases besides diphtheria which causes sore throats?
- A. Yes, there are.
- Q. Was there a laboratory at SHAM SHUI PO Camp where serum could have been made?
- A. There was no laboratory there but an attempt would have been made to make serum if we got a horse in.
- Q. What is the percentage of contracting this disease say between an adult Asiatic and a Western person?
- A. I do not know with respect to races -- but of adults, generally about 80% are immune to diphtheria -- that means 20% are susceptible to the disease -- and in the camp that's exactly how it worked out. The reason the whole camp did not get the disease was because 80% were immune, otherwise the whole camp would have got it. What the percentage would be or how this would apply to Eastern and Western people I do not know.

1		2		1		2	
cm		Ref.		cm		Ref.	
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES							
WO 235/1012 PT1							
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' material.							

CROSS-EXAMINATION - Mr. HASEGAWA.

- Q. The witness testified that the Accused Capt. SAITO visited the diphtheria patients at SHAN SHUI PO -- were there any other Japanese Medical Officers who visited the hospital?
- A. Yes, there was one other Japanese doctor -- I do not know his name or his rank -- but he came in on one occasion during the epidemic and visited the diphtheria wards.
- Q. You just said you did not know the rank of this Medical Officer, but do you know whether he was senior to the Accused, Capt SAITO?
- A. I think he was -- whether they were in the same Department or not, I do not know, but I think he was senior to Capt SAITO. He came in only once and I do not know his name or rank.
- Q. When this senior medical officer came to the hospital was the Accused, Capt SAITO present?
- A. I cannot remember -- I do not think he was but I could not say for sure.
- Q. When this senior medical officer visited the hospital did he not visit the hospital in August or September, i.e. during the time when diphtheria was at its highest?
- A. It was at the bad time, I cannot remember when, but it was probably about September.
- Q. As a result of this inspection did you not receive diphtheria serum immediately?
- A. We got serum in quite a large quantity at the beginning of October, which may have been due to his visit -- we did get serum then from the Japanese but not during the worst month, i.e. September.
- Q. Did you not receive a large quantity of diphtheria serum immediately after the inspection?
- A. No, the only lot of serum we got was in October -- the first week in October -- when this officer visited the hospital, I do not know, it may have been in September but by that time 50 or 60 people had died already because they had no serum.
- Q. Did you not receive a small quantity of diphtheria serum during August?
- A. Yes, we got some from another source altogether but not from the Japanese Military authorities. We got a very small amount which came in in a special way.
- Q. Did you not receive about 100,000 units of diphtheria serum in the beginning of September and about 500,000 units at the end of September?
- A. Where from?
- Q. From the Japanese side?
- A. No -- we had plenty of serum after October from the Japanese but nothing before that.
- Q. On the British side were you the only person responsible for getting serum?
- A. I needed serum and asked for it and did not get it for four months. There is no responsibility as regards asking for serum. I asked for it as often as I could get hold of anybody to ask and sent in written applications for it -- so did every Medical Officer.
- Q. Do you know whether the other POW doctors received serum from the Japanese authorities?
- A. I am sure they did not -- when the stuff or when anything was sent in it was sent in officially and put into our store, and all medical officers would know exactly when anything came in and how much was received. Nobody received medical supplies from the Japanese authorities without all of us knowing about it.
- Q. What sort of precautionary steps against diphtheria did the POWs take?
- A. Cases were isolated as far as we were able to. There was not sufficient accommodation to isolate them -- we had no permission to use separate buildings so that we could isolate the cases altogether. We got everybody to report sick on the first signs of a sore throat and gargling at

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235 / 1012 PT 1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

206

intervals was established mainly for the psychological effect, rather than the real effect. All we could do was to separate the cases of diphtheria as they occurred and examine the whole camp each morning for the first signs of diphtheria among the POWs. We had no way of isolating the cases completely, they were kept in a special part of the hospital.

- Q. Was there no disinfectant used?
A. There was no disinfectant for us to use.

No further questions.

RE-EXAMINATION -- declined.

QUESTIONED BY COURT

- Q. It has been suggested in the cross-examination that the patients whose throat swabs were sent for examination might have picked up the infection after the swabs were sent in. Can you tell the Court what is the incubation period in diphtheria?
A. The incubation period is between two and five days.
- Q. In your opinion, as a medical man, what would be the chances or possibility of those two patients having picked up the infection subsequent to their swabs having been sent in?
A. I should say this was extremely unlikely -- after the throat swabs had been taken three people could not suddenly develop diphtheria within the time the swabs were taken and the time they sent in a negative report. I could say almost certainly the patients had diphtheria when their throat swabs were taken.
- Q. Were these patients isolated or were they in contact with other cases of diphtheria?
A. No, they were not isolated because they were the first cases of diphtheria -- they could not have had contact with other cases of the disease because there were no diphtheria patients then. These were the first.

COURT: Mr. Fujita, any further questions arising out of the questions the Court has asked?

DEFENCE: No sir.

COURT: Mr. Hasegawa, have you any further questions arising out of the questions the Court has asked?

DEFENCE: No sir.

COURT: Major Puddicombe, have you any further questions arising out of the questions the Court has asked?

PROSECUTOR: No sir.

The Court is adjourned until 1400 hours.

.....

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref.:		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES		ins	
		WO 235/1012 PT1					

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

No. 5 WAR CRIMES COURT

THIRTEENTH DAY'S proceedings of the trial of Col TOKUNAGA ISAO, Capt SAITO SHUNKICHI, Lieut TANAKA HITOSHI, Interpreter TSUTADA and Sgt HARADA JOTARO, of the Imperial Japanese Army.

(Held at Jardine Matheson's East Point Godown on Thursday, 12 December 1946).

1000 hours.

ALL

19TH WITNESS FOR PROSECUTION - Mr. WAN KWOK CHIN.

EXAMINATION IN CHIEF:

The Chinese interpreter is sworn in. *Mr. LAM FONG is sworn. R.C.*
The witness makes a solemn declaration and is questioned by the Prosecuting Officer. *having been duly sworn, R.C.*

Q. Will you tell the Court your full name?

A. WAN KWOK CHIN.

Q. Where were you born?

A. HONG KONG.

Q. How old are you?

A. 36.

Q. Where do you live?

A. 99 Thompson Road.

Q. Where is that?

A. Near the Oriental Picture Show.

Q. Where is that -- WanChai -- Hongkong -- where?

A. Wanchai.

Q. What is your present employment?

A. I am employed in the Dairy Farm.

Q. What do you do at the Dairy Farm?

A. I am a storage clerk.

Q. Where were you at the time of the Japanese occupation of Hong Kong in 1941?

A. I was still in Hong Kong at the time.

Q. What were you doing at that time, who was your employer and what were you employed as?

A. I was still working at the Dairy Farm. I was employed by the Japanese at that time.

Q. At the time that the Japanese occupied Hong Kong what were you doing when you worked at the Dairy Farm -- that is before the Japanese took over, I mean -- you could not have been working for them before they took over.

A. My work was to receive cargo and deliver cargo.

Q. What kind of cargo did you receive?

A. Fruit, vegetables and meat.

Q. What else?

A. Fish and medicines.

Q. Can you tell the Court what medicines you received about the end of November 1941?

A. I received from HARRY WICKING & CO. two or 3 cases of medicine but I do not know what was inside them.

Q. Can you describe to the Court the size of these cases of which you have just spoken?

A. The size of the case was about 2'x3'x1½'.

Q. Where did you put the cases when you received them?

A. Inside the store.

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref.		Ins		Ins	
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES							
WO 235/1012 PT1							
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' Terms and Conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives leaflet.							

of

Q. Do you know what became ~~in~~ those cases?
 A. In what time?

Q. You say that you put them in the store, after you put them in the store what happened to them?
 A. Nothing happened -- I had to look after them.

Q. Where were you employed during the Japanese occupation of Hong Kong?
 A. I was employed in the Dairy Farm.

Q. To your knowledge, then, where are those boxes of medicine now?
 A. I do not know, sir.

Q. When the Japanese occupied Hong Kong where were those cases of medicine?
 A. At that time in the store.

Q. What do you mean by that time?
 A. When the Japanese occupied Hong Kong the medicine was in the store; after two months it was removed and I do not know where it was taken to.

Q. Who removed the medicine?
 A. It was removed by the Japanese.

Q. Was it removed by civilian Japanese, or Military Japanese, or by gendarme Japanese -- what kind of Japanese was it moved by?
 A. Military.

No further questions.

CROSS-EXAMINATION - Mr. FUJITA.

Q. Did you yourself put the various goods in the store and did you yourself take those goods out?
 A. No, it was put in by coolies.

Q. Then you were only in charge of the books, i.e. keeping a record? is that right?
 A. I received cargo and also kept account of books.

Q. At the time of the Japanese occupation did you receive medicine from other stores besides HARRY WICKING & CO?

PROSECUTOR: Sir -- if the Court will permit -- I'd like to submit that this question is not contesting the truth but actually attending to prove something for the Defence and therefore may I either be permitted to Cross-question, or, would the Court consider having the question withdrawn and put later on?

COURT: I consider the question is proper as one testing the accuracy of the Witness' memory over so long a period. I see no objection to the question at all.

COURT: Will the witness answer the question?

DEFENCE : At the time when the Japanese entered Hong Kong were you in possession of medicine from any other Companies besides HARRY WICKING & CO?

WITNESS: I cannot remember, I only can remember HARRY WICKING & CO -- only that firm.

Q. Is there a reason why you remember when you received medicine from HARRY WICKING & CO, and you do not remember when you received medicines from other Companies?
 A. We sometimes received from HARRY WICKING & CO (Interruption by Prosecutor).

PROSECUTOR: I think the interpretation and the translation (Chinese) is not being given as it should be, sir -- I think we are not getting the proper sense of the answers. With translations of this kind I think the interpreter should have a

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	2

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

monitor either for his own benefit, or for mine or for the Court's and I suggest if Mr. Tong is available he may be called in to monitor?

COURT: Is Mr. Tong available at the moment?

Present He is not here at present Sir. RCL

COURT: Are you suggesting Major PUDDICOMBE that Mr FUJITA'S last question was not properly translated?

PROSECUTOR: No, sir, the answer was not properly translated.

COURT: Mr. Fujita, will you repeat the question you asked after you asked whether HARRY WICKING & CO. was the only firm?

DEFENCE: Was there a special reason why you remembered that you only had medicine from HARRY WICKING & CO. at that time?

COURT TO CHINESE INTERPRETER: Will you translate the answer word for word?

WITNESS: Because HARRY WICKING & CO always had medicines sent to us, and very often, so I only can remember HARRY WICKING'S cargo.

PROSECUTOR: Sir, I think there are two or three people here who have a thorough knowledge of Cantonese and can interpret.

COURT: What is your objection?

PROSECUTOR: I do not think it is being translated accurately.

COURT: Do you speak Cantonese?

PROSECUTOR: That is not the reason, sir -- I just feel that it is not being translated correctly.

COURT TO CHINESE INTERPRETER: When the Witness answered that last question did you translate his answer literally -- word for word --
Interpreter RCL No Sir I gave the sense of his answer. RCL
Court RCL Will you please repeat his answer and translate it word by word?

WITNESS THROUGH INTERPRETER: Because HARRY WICKING always sent cargo to us -- for some time we had been receiving medicine from HARRY WICKING & CO. We received from HARRY WICKING medicines the most -- big quantity.

COURT TO ~~INTERPRETER~~ PROSECUTOR: Are you satisfied with the answer now?

Prosecutor He remembers HARRY WICKING & CO. because they always sent the largest consignment -- that is what he means to convey.
Yes Sir. RCL

COURT TO INTERPRETER: Will you translate sentence by sentence even if you have to stop the witness.

PROSECUTOR: *Defence. RCL*

Q. You said that some military came and took away the medicines, were they naval or army people?

A. Army.

No further questions.

1		2		1		2	
Cms		Ref.		The NATIONAL ARCHIVES		1	
				WO 235/1012 PT1		1	
						2	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.

CROSS-EXAMINATION -- Mr. HASEGAWA -- declined.

RE-EXAMINATION -- Major PUDDICOMBE -- declined.

COURT: Witness may stand down.

Rec

10TH WITNESS FOR PROSECUTION - Mr. FOGWILL.

EXAMINATION-IN-CHIEF

The witness having been duly sworn is questioned by the Prosecutor:

Q. Will you tell the Court your full name?

A. WILLIAM FOGWILL.

Q. What is your nationality?

A. British.

Q. What is your occupation?

A. Health Inspector.

Q. Where do you live?

A. Hong Kong.

Q. I understand in 1941 you were a member of the H.K.R.N.V.R. and was taken prisoner of war in December 1941, is that correct?

A. Correct.

Q. Will you tell the Court briefly where you were interned during the Japanese occupation of Hong Kong?

A. I was at SHAM SHUI PO, NORTH POINT, ARGYLL STREET, and then we went to SHAM SHUI PO again.

Q. When you were at ARGYLL STREET CAMP how did you occupy yourself there?

A. I was working in the bakery and then when there were any operations I was engaged there.

Q. What kind of operations?

A. All sorts of operations -- perforated appendix -- perforated gastric ulcers -- appendicitis.

COURT: Then you are speaking of surgical operations when you are speaking of appendicitis and so on. What was your profession before you became a prisoner of war?

WITNESS: Health Inspector, Hong Kong.

PROSECUTOR:

Q. What service, military or otherwise, had you before the war, Mr. FOGWILL?

A. I joined the Royal Navy in 1916 and served 12 years in the sick berth staff, R.N.

Q. What have you got to say about cholera in ARGYLL STREET?

A. Well, there were several cases of cholera in the Camp.

Q. When was that?

A. In 1943 so far as I can remember.

Q. What became of these cases of cholera?

A. At NORTH POINT, the hut beside the Camp was opened up for them and they were transferred there.

Q. What kind of a place was this?

A. Just an ordinary hut.

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref:		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES			
		WO 235/1012 PT1					

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.

Q. What to your knowledge were the hospitals in HONG KONG or the Colony at that time?

A. St. Teresa's.

Q. Do you know what requests were made respecting these cholera patients?

A. No I do not.

Q. Who was the Medical Officer in charge of POWS?

A. Japanese? Dr. SAITO.

Q. What did he do about these cholera cases.

A. Nothing.

Q. What representations to your knowledge were made to him regarding cholera.

A. I do not know.

Q. What do you know about medicines in that hospital?

A. We had very little.

Q. What did you do about that -- having very little?

A. I understand there was a request to get some in but we got none.

Q. Do you recall a man called ARMSTRONG?

A. Yes.

Q. What do you recall about him?

A. I understand he was suffering from cancer.

Q. What was his rank?

A. Lieut.-Col.

Q. You say he was suffering from cancer -- then what happened to him?

A. When this hospital opened up he was transferred there -- the hut we had as a hospital in Camp.

Q. From where did he come?

A. He came from ARGYLL STREET

Q. How long was he kept in the Camp Hospital?

A. As far as I can remember about a month or six weeks.

Q. Where did he go then?

A. I understand he was transferred to BOWEN ROAD HOSPITAL.

Q. You say you were in SHAM SHUI PO in 1944, what were you doing there?

A. I was working in the hospital.

Q. Do you recall a man called HOOK?

A. Yes.

Q. What do you know of HOOK?

A. HOOK became sick in SHAM SHUI PO.

Q. Who was HOOK.

A. Major in the Canadian Grenadiers. ^{rec} ^{cerebral spinal}
HOOK became sick in hospital with malaria and then developed G.S.M.
^{rec} a spot of meningitis. He was very ill and we asked for him to be sent to hospital but nothing was done -- we could not get him away from the camp. We asked repeatedly for about a month for HOOK to be sent to hospital. Even Dr. EVANS, when HOOK was very ill, sent out and asked for oxygen, but we were told that there was no oxygen available.

Q. Can you tell the Court how it was discovered that Major HOOK had Cerebral Spinal Meningitis? ^{rec}

A. Yes, the serum was brought out of his back by a lumbar puncture.

Q. What did they do with that serum?

A. They sent that across to "S" Camp.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives leaflet

- Q. Where was "S" Camp.
A. Next to ours.
- Q. How was your camp and "S" Camp separated?
A. By a wide nullah with a barbed wire over it.
- Q. How was the fluid passed from one camp to the other?
A. It was passed over the barbed wire to someone the other side.
- Q. What communication was allowed between S Camp and your Camp?
A. None.
- Q. Will you tell the Court how you passed the fluid through the barbed wire from one camp to the other?
A. This was done secretly when the sentries were not about.
- Q. And what was the report that you got on the examination of this fluid?
A. Positive.
- Q. How did you know of this?
A. I saw the report.
- Q. What representation was made to Capt SAITO in respect of HOOK'S condition.
A. It was asked repeatedly for the patient to be transferred to hospital which at that time was in the Central British School, KOWLOON.
- Q. How far was that from your Camp?
A. About half an hour in a lorry.
- Q. What was Capt SAITO told about the seriousness of HOOK'S condition?
A. Dr. EVANS told Dr. SAITO that HOOK was seriously ill and must go to hospital as we had no facilities for treating him.
- Q. Where was Capt SAITO when Dr. EVANS told him this?
A. On one occasion he was in the ward with the patient when I was there.
- Q. To your knowledge how many times was he in the ward when the patient was there?
A. Several times.
- Q. On those occasions what opportunity had he of seeing HOOK?
A. Every opportunity.
- Q. What advantage did he take of these opportunities to see HOOK?
A. He did not take any -- he just came and looked at him and went out, and said nothing more.
- Q. Do you recall approximately when this incident respecting HOOK occurred? Approximate date when HOOK was sick?
A. I think it was in June 1944 -- that he went sick -- 1945 (I beg your pardon). It was in 1945.
- Q. Do you recall a man named MILLER?
A. Yes.
- Q. Will you tell the Court what you know about MILLER?
A. Capt MILLER of the Royal Scots was taken ill at about 3.30 in the afternoon with perforated gastric ulcer. A request was made for Capt MILLER to be transferred to the BOWEN ROAD hospital. The reply came back that the patient could not be removed until the following day. As his condition was so serious he was operated on in the camp that evening -- and he was never removed to the hospital -- he was kept in the camp even after the operation.

1		2		1		2	
cm		Ref.		ins		ins	
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES							
WO 235/1012 PT1							
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' material.							

- Q. Will you tell the Court under what conditions this operation was performed?
- A. Well, we had a small place partitioned off in the hospital for an operation theatre; an ordinary wooden table, which was made in the camp for an operating table. Very few instruments and all sterilizing had to be done on ordinary wood fire.
- Q. Do you know a man called EARDLEY?
- A. Yes, Sub-Lieut H.K.R.V.D.R. During the bombing raids by the Americans, EARDLEY was hit in the leg by shrapnel. He was admitted into the camp hospital and we operated on him and he was put to bed. Dr. SAITO came up that same afternoon and he saw him and promised to transfer him to hospital but this was never done. Several minor operations had to be performed on him while he was in the camp in order to heal the wound, -- he also had to have skin grafted.
- Q. Return to ARGYLL STREET, what do you know about the manner in which patients were transferred from ARGYLL STREET to any other hospital?
- A. You mean for operations?
- Q. I mean, how were they transferred to other hospitals?
- A. When a man was taken ill, who required an operation, we had to carry him down to the Indian camp which was about a quarter of a mile away.
- Q. How would he be carried?
- A. The patient was carried on a stretcher and there were three people allowed to go with him; two doctors and myself -- the doctor who was going to do the operation had to carry the patient.
- Q. How would you arrange to go from one camp to another?
- A. That arrangement was made by Dr. SAITO.
- Q. And how was that arrangement made -- what representation would be made to him and how would it be made?
- A. A letter was either sent out from the Camp Office or a telephone message was sent down.
- Q. How long would it be between the time the message was sent and the arrangement was made to transport the prisoner to the other hospital?
- A. Five or Six hours.
- Q. In the meantime what was the condition of the patient?
- A. In agony.
- Q. What officers were able to give this permission to go from one place to the other?
- A. I understand Dr. SAITO was the only one.
- Q. You spoke a moment ago about yourself and two other men being allowed to accompany the patient -- can you indicate to the Court the number of occasions in which only yourself and two others were allowed to accompany the patient?
- A. At least four to my knowledge.
- Q. Can you tell the Court anything about a man called BOWKER?
- A. No, I was not employed in any work in the hospital but I remember the man was sick in the Camp at ARGYLL STREET.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref.
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	ins

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives leaflet

Q. Do you know who he was?

A. ~~Was~~ He was a Major.

Q. What was his unit?

A. HONG LONG VOLUNTEERS.

Q. When did he leave camp?

A. In 1943 -- he left as a patient.

Q. Under what conditions did he leave the camp?

A. So far as I know he left in a very serious conditions-- he was an emergency case and was rushed to the hospital.

The Court is adjourned for five minutes at 1130 L. 20
The Court re-assembles at 1135 L. 20

CROSS-EXAMINATION -- Mr. FUJITA.

Q. You testified that you asked permission by telephone sometimes, in case Capt SAITO was not present then what would happen?

A. A letter would be sent out.

Q. In the case of an emergency, when a letter would not be sufficient, then what would happen?

A. We would telephone from the Guard Room.

Q. Will you explain more fully I do not quite understand --

A. If it was an emergency the guard was always asked if we could use the telephone and we always used the telephone in the Guard Room.

Q. Then, in such a case, if it was impossible to get in touch with Capt. SAITO by telephone what would happen?

A. A letter would be sent down to the office I suppose.

No further questions.

CROSS-EXAMINATION -- Mr. HASEGAWA.

Q. You said that when a patient was transferred to the hospital permission must be received from Capt SAITO, but also was not the permission of the Camp Commandant necessary.

A. No, I do not think so, Dr. SAITO over-ruled the Camp Commandant.

Q. Did you yourself ever ask for permission to have a patient sent to the hospital?

A. No never.

No further questions.

RE-EXAMINATION -- declined.

QUESTIONED BY COURT:

Q. You described how a letter would sometimes be sent to Capt SAITO if you could not get him on the telephone -- who would take this letter -- did you ever actually see a letter being taken out of the camp?

A. No, I did not.

Q. You never actually saw a letter being sent?

A. I never actually saw a letter but I knew they were sent.

Q. Have you ever heard of a case in which Dr. SAITO gave permission for a patient to be sent to hospital and it was refused by the Camp Commandant, have you ever heard of such a case?

A. No, never.

Q. Would it be right to say although you are not a qualified man you have seen many sicknesses in your experience in the Navy.

A. Yes, sir.

1		2		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
cms		Ref:		WO 235 / 1012 PT 1	
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet		1		2	

/visible

- Q. Will you try and remember the case of Major HOOK, can you remember any particular, obviously, physical symptoms which he had?
- A. Yes -- he used to mention he had terrific headaches -- also vomiting.
- Q. Were there any other symptoms visible to the eye.
- A. Yes, in the latter stages he was very depressed and had difficulty in breathing, that is why we asked for the oxygen.
- Q. Was he delirious?
- A. Yes, at times.
- Q. Was he ever delirious on the occasions when Dr. SAITO saw him, do you remember?
- A. No, he was not actually delirious but I do not think he knew what was going on at the time.
- Q. You referred to a man called MILLER who was operated on in the Camp because his condition was so serious and he could not be sent to hospital in time, what happened to him as a result of the operation?
- A. He recovered in Camp.

COURT: Mr. Fujita, do you wish to ask any further questions arising out of the questions the Court has asked?

DEFENCE: No.

COURT: Mr. Hasegawa, do you wish to ask any further questions arising out of the questions the Court has asked?

DEFENCE: No.

COURT: Major PUDDICOMBE, do you wish to ask any further questions arising out of the questions the Court has asked?

~~PROSECUTOR~~

PROSECUTOR: No sir.

COURT: Witness can stand down.

~~20th~~ 21st WITNESS FOR PROSECUTION -- Mr. ROWAN.

COURT: Will this witness require an interpreter.

PROSECUTOR: No sir.

EXAMINATION in CHIEF.

Witness is duly sworn in and questioned by the Prosecuting Officer:

- Q. Will you tell the Court your full name?
- A. ARTHUR ROWAN.
- Q. What is your occupation?
- A. I am a pharmacist.
- Q. What is your nationality?
- A. I am a British subject.
- Q. What is your present residence?
- A. I live at 15 Seamore Terrace.
- Q. Where is that?
- A. Hong Kong.
- Q. At the time the Japanese occupied Hong Kong in 1941 how were you employed?
- A. I was operating the KWONG WAH DRUG COMPANY.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cm	Ref:
WO 235 / 1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	ins

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

Q. Are you a pharmacist, Mr. Rowan?

A. I am a pharmacist, chemist and druggist.

Q. What societies do you belong to?

A. I am a member of the Pharmaceutical Society, Great Britain.

Q. Have you any University degrees?

A. I am a Master of Arts of the University of Cambridge.

Q. During the Japanese occupation of Hong Kong have you any information to give the Court regarding a pharmacist, with respect to the presence of anti-diphtheria serum in the colony?

A. I was asked by Dr. SELWYN-CLARKE, in May or June 1942, to procure for him very urgently some diphtheria anti-toxin and I obtained for him two dozen phials of 20,000 units each. A few days later I was told to get the same quantity because the first lot was stolen by the Japanese. I spent the whole day in getting the second lot and finally delivered it to Dr. SELWYN-CLARKE very late in the afternoon -- after 6 o'clock.

Q. On the second occasion how much serum did you give Dr. SELWYN-CLARKE?

A. Altogether 48 phials of 20,000 units each.

Q. On the second occasion?

A. Yes, on the second occasion.

Q. That would be a total of how many units?

A. I think nearly half a million units.

Q. Will you just check your arithmetic -- Mr. ROWAN.

COURT: I think that is all right -- 960,000 units.

PROSECUTOR: Does the Court accept that?

COURT: Yes.

No further questions.

CROSS-EXAMINATION -- Mr. FUJITA.

Q. I did not get the name by whom this serum was requested?

A. The serum was requested by Dr. SELWYN CLARKE.

COURT: Who was Dr. SELWYN CLARKE?

WITNESS : Director of Medical Service.

COURT: Was he a civilian or a soldier?

WITNESS : A civilian.

DEFENCE : You said that some of the phials were taken away by the Japanese, does that mean that some of the phials in your possession were taken away by the Japanese?

WITNESS: The phials that were delivered to DR. SELWYN CLARKE were taken away or stolen.

Q. How do you know that these were stolen or taken away?

A. I did not see the actual stealing but when I was told to get the second lot I was informed that the first lot had been stolen and never reached the camps.

Q. In what sort of stores were you able to discover the serum?

A. I bought them from the various dispensaries in Hong Kong.

Q. Then was it impossible for you to get more than 960,000 units?

PROSECUTOR: Sir, I would like to know whether that is a statement or a request.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235 / 1012 PT1	
1	ins
2	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives leaflet.

WITNESS: No I found some of the serum after the Japanese surrender in the market.

DEFENCE: Then you did not buy the serum at one store only, you bought the serum at several stores and then you were able to get 960,000 units?

WITNESS: Quite true, I bought them from various dispensaries.

Q. Did Dr. SELWYN-CLARKE ask you to get a certain amount or did he ask you to get all you ~~can~~ could? ~~ask~~.

A. No, he gave me ~~ask~~ roughly the quantity he wanted.

No further questions.

CROSS-EXAMINATION -- Mr. HASEGAWA -- declined.

RE-EXAMINATION -- declined.

QUESTIONED BY COURT

Q. Can you tell the Court whether during the month of June you could have got anti-diphtheria serum if you had been asked to?

A. Yes, certainly.

Q. And in the month of July would you have been able to buy some?

A. Yes.

Q. And in the month of August?

A. Yes.

Q. And in the month of September 1942?

A. Yes, as I said, I found some of this serum after the Japanese surrender.

Q. But the serum which you found after the Japanese capitulation could you tell whether that was serum that had been in Hong Kong for some time or whether it had come in recently?

A. It was imported, pre-war.

Q. Did the Japanese, at any time, ask your assistance to find drugs for them?

A. No.

Q. Would it be right to say, as pharmacist that you had considerable knowledge as to the pharmaceutical business in Hong Kong?

A. Yes.

Q. For how many years have you been operating as a pharmacist in Hong Kong?

A. For over 20 years.

Q. Can you tell the Court, from your own knowledge, whether any of your business friends or acquaintances in the same line as yourself had been asked by Dr. SELWYN CLARKE or anyone else to get serum?

A. The thing is this; after the Japanese came in I volunteered my services to Dr. SELWYN-CLARKE and said I would be very pleased to help him in any way. I think I can safely say I supplied most of the medicines to the internment camps.

COURT: Mr. Fujita, are there are further questions you would like to ask arising out of the questions the Court has asked.

DEFENCE : No.

COURT: Mr. Hasegawa, are there any further questions you would like to ask arising out of the questions the Court has asked.

DEFENCE : No.

COURT: Major Puddicombe, are there any further questions you would like to ask the ~~Smorkx~~ witness arising out of the questions the Court has asked.

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref:		The NATIONAL ARCHIVES		ms	
		WO 235/1012 PT1					

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

PROSECUTOR: No sir.

COURT : Witness may stand down.

The Court is adjourned until 1400 hours.

1	2	THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES		1	2
cms		Ref:	WO 235 /1012 PT1		Ins
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.					

13th Day.

12 Dec. P.M.

At 1400 hrs. on 12 December the Court re-assemble pursuant to adjournment; present the same Members as at adjournment.

^{Rec}
2ND WITNESS FOR THE PROSECUTION - Mr. LEUNG KWCK TAI.

On being sworn is examined by the Prosecutor.

Q. Will you tell the Court your full name?
A. LEUNG Kwok Tai.

Q. Where were you born?
A. I was born on 9 October, 1891, in HONG KONG.

Q. What is your address?
A. Bacteriological Institute ^{Rec} Hong Kong

Q. What is your occupation?
A. I am the Senior Laboratory Assistant.

Q. Where are you Senior Laboratory Assistant?
A. At the Bacteriological Institute.

Q. Is that the HONG KONG Government Bacteriological Institute?
A. Yes.

Q. What was your occupation at the time the Japanese captured HONG KONG in 1941?
A. In February 1942 I was appointed by the Japanese as the Technical Expert.

Q. I think you misunderstood me. I want to know what your occupation was at the time the Japanese took the city, i.e. 25 December 1941.
A. At that time I was Senior Laboratory Assistant, Government Bacteriological Institute.

Q. How long did you remain Technical Expert at the Bacteriological Institute, HONG KONG?
A. For the last 35 years.

Q. That includes the period of the Japanese occupation of HONG KONG, does it?
A. Yes.

Q. Will you tell the Court what laboratory facilities were available to examine throat swabs?
A. We had every facility for examining throat swabs for diphtheria.

Q. Will you tell the Court what throat swabs were sent to you for examination by the Japanese from military POW camps during 1942?
A. The only internment camp from which we received throat swabs for examination was the STANLEY civilian internment camp.

Q. Will you tell the Court what supplies of swabs there were on hand?
A. We had a large supply of throat swabs on hand.

Q. What supply of the cultural medium for ^{growing} ^{Rec} knowing the diphtheria germs had you on hand?
A. We had a good supply.

Q. During the occupation, will you tell the Court of the examination of swabs you made?
A. We had mostly throat swabs for diphtheria.

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref.		Ins			
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES							
WO 235/1012 PT1							
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.							

Mr. LEUNG.

- Q. What others did you have, that is if you had any?
- A. Throat swabs for streptococci and other organisms besides diphtheria. I may add that occasionally we did get swabs for cholera.
- Q. You had rectal swabs for cholera, you say?
- A. Yes.
- Q. Had you or had you not other further swabs, whatever they might be?
- A. No other.
- Q. Where did you get those throat swabs from?
- A. We got those swabs from hospitals and from the Japanese anti-epidemic bureau.
- Q. Do you know, to your knowledge what swabs did you get from the POW camps?
- A. The only swabs we got was diphtheria swabs from the **STANLEY** Civilian Internment Camp.
- Q. I will put the question another way. What swabs did you get from the military POW camps, in regard to the throat swabs?
- A. We had never received any swabs from the military.

CROSS-EXAMINATION:

- Q. What was the date when you were asked to examine swabs from the Civilian Internment camp at STANLEY?
- A. I do not remember the exact date. It was during the first 6 months of 1942.

Cross-Examination (Cont. by Mr. Hasegawa)

- Q. You said that you received some cholera swabs. Where did you receive them from?
- A. The Japanese Epidemic Prevention Bureau.
- Q. You said that you were appointed as a technical expert by the Japanese at the laboratory from February 1942. Was the laboratory then under the supervision of the Japanese Anti-Epidemic Bureau?
- A. It was not under the Japanese Anti-Epidemic Bureau, but it was under the Japanese medical department.

Re-Examination Declined.

QUESTIONED BY THE COURT:

- Q. Just one or two questions. The swabs which you were sent from STANLEY Internment Camp, how were they marked? Were all swabs sent to you clearly marked as to where they came from?
- A. They were clearly marked "From STANLEY Internment Camp", with the names of patients in the beginning. Later on they were giving numbers only.
- Q. The Japanese Anti-Epidemic Bureau, was that a civil or a military organization?
- A. It was civil, under the Japanese medical.
- Q. As far as you know did the Japanese military medical department have any relations with the Anti-Epidemic Bureau?
- A. As far as I know, there were none.

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref.		ins			
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES							
WO 235 / 1012 PT1							
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.							

Mr. LEWIS.

Q. Had you assistants working under you, or were you doing all this work on your own?

A. We had some other Chinese assistants.

Q. Were you the head of that particular department?

A. I was not, but I was the head of the technical side of the work.

Q. Would it have been possible for swabs of any sort to have come in to the laboratory and be examined without your knowledge?

A. Not the slightest chance.

(No more questions)

PROSECUTOR: I am going to read a statement now, Sir. I have it down here as Exhibit "T" and "U". I have only one document and I do not know just why it has a double reference.

COURT: The Court will refer to their original documents.

PROSECUTOR: My friend says it is the original Japanese which is "U".

COURT: Yes, "T" is the English. You are now going to read the translation, Exhibit "T" headed diphtheria on the cover letter?

PROSECUTOR: Yes.

Exhibit T. R.C.

Rec
/Medical report dated 6 November, 1946; read by Prosecutor/.

PROSECUTOR: There is obviously some mistake in the date. If the *original* *Rec* translation can be referred to we may be able to clear that up - it was not 16 October, 1946.

Exhibit U. R.C.
COURT: (Handing original Japanese document to Interpreter) Will you see if you can find the cover letter in the original Japanese and look at the date of it?

INTERPRETER: The date shows 21 year SHOWA, October 16 and that means 1946.

COURT: It is correctly translated then.

PROSECUTOR: I am sorry. Now I understand the date is correct. This is referring to what they had found from SAITO in their files.

PROSECUTOR: With the exception of 2 witnesses who fit in tomorrow, I have concluded the proof, or what we have to offer, on sub-section (b) of the first charge. With your consent I will proceed with reading of the affidavits ~~fix~~ on the first charge, sub-section (c) which is headed "heating of POTs".

PROSECUTOR: The first are two affidavits by Rev. E.J. GREENE marked X(1) and Y(1).

(Affidavits of Rev. E.J. GREENE, both dated 11 Dec. 45 read by Prosecutor).

PROSECUTOR: I do not know why it is headed so but we did not take this affidavit; it was taken in ENGLAND.

PROSECUTOR: The next, Exhibit Y(1) is by Col. HEBLEY J.C. (Affidavit of Col. HEBLEY read by Prosecutor)

1		2	
cms			
Ref:			
WO 235/1012 PT1			
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES			
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet			
1		2	
ins			

222

PROSECUTOR: The next is the affidavit of ^{IN RCL} PAIFER A.K. which
is Exhibit A(2).
(Affidavit of A.K. PAIFER read by the Prosecutor).

PROSECUTOR: Next are 3 affidavits of Lt.-Col. J.W. ^{HOME RCL} HOLMES, B(2),
C(2) and D(2). ^{HOME RCL}
(Affidavits of Lt.-Col. HOLMES read by Prosecutor).

PROSECUTOR: Part of the first affidavit is not pertaining to
the charges.

COURT: I think paragraph 6 is the next purporting paragraph.
Paragraphs 3, 4 and 5 have no connexion with this case
at all.

PROSECUTOR: (Re. C(2)). Here is the date which I mentioned as
correct. I will read it now as it appears in the
original affidavit and, if you will note the original
date in para. 5 is 9 Jan. 42. I mention that now
because with the correction you will see that the para-
graph is actually purporting to the charges, as regards
the date.

PROSECUTOR: If I may I will read this short exhibit because the
rest of it are just exhibits attached.

(Further affidavit of J.W. ^{HOME Exhibit D(2) RCL} HOLMES read by Prosecutor *but not the
exhibits attached, which the Prosecutor states he will read on the next day. RCL*)

At 1630 hrs. the Court adjourn till 1000 hrs. on
Friday 13 Dec. 46.

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref:		1		line	
		WO 235/1012 PT1					
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives leaflet.							

NO. 5 WAR CRIMES COURT.

14TH DAY'S Proceedings of the trial of Col. TOKUNAGA Isao, Capt. SAITO Shunkichi, Lt. TANAKA Hitosni, Interpreter TSUTADA and Sgt. HARADA Jotaro.

(Held at JARDINE MATHESON'S East Point Godown on Friday December 13, 1946.)

At 1000 hrs. on Dec. 13 the Court re-assemble, pursuant to adjournment; present the same Members as at adjournment.)

COURT: Are you going to read Col. HOLME's affidavit first?

PROSECUTOR: Yes Sir. I have actually finished the affidavit, ^{RCU} I am now going to read the Exhibits, the appendices to Exhibit C(2)

(Appendices to Exhibit C(2) read by Prosecutor).

PROSECUTOR: As regards ^{appendix RCU} "B" unless you require it, I will not read the figures.

COURT: It is not necessary to read the figures. I suggest you start reading where it refers to carbo-hydrates, fats and proteins.

PROSECUTOR: ^{The Prosecutor reads appendix B to Exhibit C(2) for the Court suggested. RCU} That concludes the reading of the affidavit of Col. HOLME with appendices.

23RD WITNESS FOR THE PROSECUTION - Mr. T.P. JACKSON.

On being sworn is examined by the Prosecutor.

Q. Is your name Thomas Patrick JACKSON?
A. It is.

Q. Your occupation is that of Office Superintendent of the British Consul General in CANTON?
A. It is.

Q. I understand you were taken POW here in HONG KONG at the time the Japanese occupied this Colony?
A. That is correct.

Q. Where were you interned?
A. SHAN SHUI PO Camp.

Q. How long were you there?
A. 8 months.

Q. What do you know about the treatment of POWs by the camp personnel - i.e. guards, those in charge of the camp and so on.
A. In general it was inhumane, to say the least.

Q. Can you give any particulars?
A. Frequently very sick men were forced to attend parades and occasionally called out at night parades for 2 or 3 hours at a time.

Col. TOKUNAGA, Accused: I wish to have the Interpreter speak louder as I am not able to hear.

COURT: Will you ask Col. TOKUNAGA if he heard the last answer? Would he like it repeated?

1		2	
cme		Ref:	
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES		WO 235 / 1012 PT1	
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' material.		1	
		2	

Mr. T.P. JACKSON.

Q. Now were those very sick you speak of, how did they come on the parade?

A. Sometimes on stretchers and occasionally we used to help them out, give them an arm or even carry them out.

Q. What do you know about a man called FURN?

A. About March 1942 Cpl. HURN, Royal Army Service Corps, developed beri-beri and pellagra. From that time until the end of July 1942 Cpl. HURN received very little treatment, to my knowledge. He was forced to attend all parades, his condition steadily became worse. Ultimately we used to have to carry him out, even on these long parades lasting 3 or 4 hours.

Q. How long did this go on, how long did he have to attend parades?

A. Until about the end of July 1942.

Q. What became of him then?

A. He was taken out to hospital. 5 or 6 days later, about 6 August I got word that he had died in St. TERESA's Hospital.

Q. To your knowledge, what was the cause of his death?

A. I can know he had a very advanced condition of beri-beri and had not been eating his food for a long period. He could not eat his food, very bad beri-beri and pellagra. I cannot say what the cause of his death was.

Q. Do you recall a man named KERR?

A. I remember 2/Lt. KERR who was an Interpreter in SHAM SHUI PO Camp.

Q. What do you know of him?

A. I x recollect in the summer of 1942 on parade one day 2/Lt. KERR was very badly beaten up by a Japanese sentry. The sentry used his bayonet on him as well. I was not near enough to see how he used it but I saw injuries on 2/Lt. KERR's stomach afterwards, cuts.

Q. When this incident took place who was there to see it?

A. The whole of the parade of 7,000 men.

Q. You say you were in SHAM SHUI PO till August 1942. Will you tell the Court briefly the circumstances of your leaving the camp?

A. About the end of August I was called to the camp office and a Japanese officer told me to follow him and took me straight out of the camp, just in the clothes I stood in.

PROSECUTOR: I want to point out to the Court, the evidence witness is about to give concerns the 8th charge.

Col. TOKUNAGA (Accused): Because I am rather deaf it is very hard for me to understand.

(The Court arranges for the Assisting Interpreter to sit beside Accused.)

Q. Where did you go?

A. I was taken from there to the KOWLOON Magistracy.

Q. Where did you go from there?

A. About 2 weeks later I was hand-cuffed, tied to a rope and taken to the Supreme Court HONG KONG.

Q. What did you see in the Supreme Court?

A. I saw 5 Europeans lined up, hand-cuffed, and I think they were awaiting trial with the military tribunal.

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref:		1		Ine	
		WO 235/1012 PT1					

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives material.

Mr. T.P. JACKSON

COURT: Where did you see these men?

A. In the ante-room of the Supreme Court.

Q. How many men were there?

A. I am almost certain there were five.

Q. Can you tell the Court who they were?

A. I looked at them furtively once or twice. They were in such bad shape at first it did not dawn on me they were any I knew, but afterwards I recognized a man called BYRNE. BYRNE, I think, was of the MIDDLESEX Regiment. I also recognized a man called CONNOLLY. I did not know him very well but I knew he was one of the dockyard policemen.

Q. Now did you know these men?

A. I had occasionally seen these two in the camp. I made the acquaintance of dozens if not hundreds of men in SHAM SHUI PO Camp, but I do not know their names.

Q. Are you able to tell the Court in your own knowledge of what occasions they were in the Supreme Court building? Why were they there?

A. I knew that several men, including CONNOLLY, had been taken out for attempting to dig a tunnel from underneath JUBILEE building out to the sea while 2 escaped and they had been taken out.

Q. Will you tell the Court, as detailed as you can, what your observation was of these men's condition at that time?

A. They were in a most pitiful condition. They looked to have been in the last stages of weakness. They were haggard, drawn, looked as if they had had a lot of suffering, but I was not able to speak to them. One or two of them when I was standing there sagged down to the floor and were helped up again by the friends.

PROSECUTOR: There may be some objection to the next question, so before you answer will you please pause to see whether the Court will allow it or Mr. FUNITA wants to object.

Q. From your observation of these men at that time, what would be the possibility, for instance, of their jumping from a truck and running desperately fast on a road.

DEFENCE: I have no objection.

A. From my observation I would say it was impossible for them to jump, they probably might shuffle along. I do not think they could run. I like to reiterate I had seen sick men in the camp many months previously but these 5 men moved me to almost tears of pity, although I was in a bad state myself.

The Court goes into temporary recess at 11.30 a.m.
The Court re-assembles at 11.35 a.m.

CROSS EXAMINATION by Mr. FUNITA R.C.

Q. You said that Cpl. HURNE did not receive any treatment. Could you give the reason why he did not?

A. I know that no adequate treatment for the serious cases of beri-beri existed in camp.

Q. Ordinarily how long would a parade last?

A. Ordinarily up to one hour.

1		2		1		2	
cme		Ref:		1		ms	
		WO 235 / 1012 PT1					
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES							

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.

Mr. H. D. JACKSON.

- Q. You said that some of the patients were forced to attend parades that lasted from 2 to 3 hours. How many times did this happen?
- A. I recollect about nine occasions during the summer.
- Q. You said that ordinarily a roll call parade lasted only one hour. What was the reason on these occasions they lasted so long?
- A. We were never told the reasons. For instance, we might be called up at 12 o'clock or 1 o'clock at night and stay on parade till 3 o'clock in the morning, being numbered and counted over and standing to attention, but I never recollect being told what these emergency parades were.
- Q. Have you any knowledge whether Cpl. JUNE died of a disease other than beri-beri?
- A. I knew Cpl. JUNE since 1938. I always knew him to be a perfectly healthy, sound, physically fit man, and mentally fit.
- Q. You testified that in August 1942 a Japanese officer took you away from the camp. Do you recall what unit this Japanese officer belonged to?
- A. He was one of the SHAM SHUI PO Camp staff under Col. TOKUNAGA.
- Q. On that occasion were you interrogated?
- A. I was not interrogated.
- Q. Under what suspicion were you taken to the Supreme Court? You do not know why you were taken to the Supreme Court, is that correct?
- A. I was interrogated later on, prior to being taken to the Supreme Court. When I was first taken out I was not interrogated.
- Q. In that case you should know the reason why you were taken away from the camp. . . .

PROSECUTOR: May I object to this, Sir? Is it possible that the witness should be warned at this point that he does not have to answer any question which might incriminate him in any way.

COURT: I will give that warning.
(To witness) By law you are not bound to answer any questions, either from Major PUNDICOFF or the Defence or from the Court which might involve you in a criminal charge, of course a criminal charge by the laws of your own country.

PROSECUTOR: I take it that includes any Court Martial charge?

COURT: Certainly.

A. If I do not answer it things do not really look too well, whereas thousands of men know the misdemeanour I was taken out for. It was nothing dishonourable or wrong so to speak.

DEFENCE: I will withdraw my question.

PROSECUTOR: I would like to explain to Mr. FURITA that there is no objection to his question from my point of view. He may not understand that.

COURT:(To Interpreter): Will you explain to Mr. FURITA he is perfectly legally within his rights to ask the question but witness has a right not to answer the question if it is going to involve him in a criminal charge.

DEFENCE: However, I will withdraw my last question.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref.
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	2

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

Mr. T. P. JACKSON.

227

- Q. I wish to know what happened to you after you reached the Supreme Court.
 A. I was placed in an ante-room, hand-cuffed, facing the wall.
 Q. Were you ever tried before a Japanese Court?
 A. Yes, I was.
 Q. The five men you mentioned, were they placed in the same ante-room as yourself?
 A. Yes.
 Q. A short time ago you said none of these men would be able to get off a truck. Could they not jump from the truck, or from a higher place to a lower place?
 A. I doubt it very much.
 Q. What is the reason for your statement?
 A. I observed that they were in such a weak state, extreme weakness, haggard, thin, ill I should say.

Cross-Examination (Cont. by Mr. HASEGAWA)

- Q. By March 1942, was there not a hospital within the camp at SHAN SHUI PO?
 A. There was a hospital of sorts.
 Q. At that time was it not true that POW doctors treated POW patients?
 A. As well as they were able to, with the small amount of stuff they had at their disposal, yes.
 Q. Were not the POW doctors qualified doctors?
 A. They were.
 Q. Then the POW doctor decided admittance and discharge of patients at the camp hospital, did he not?
 A. Only under authority of the Japanese.
 Q. For admittance and discharge at the camp hospital was the permission of the Japanese necessary? Was it reported after such admission or discharge was made to the Japanese authorities?
 A. So far as I know they had to have the authority of the Japanese.
 Q. As far as your knowledge, you just said. What knowledge did you have of affairs at that camp hospital?

PROSECUTION: I would like to point out to the Court that while the Cross-Examination tests statements of the witness I submit he cannot be used as a witness for the Defence. He made no statement originally regarding admission or otherwise to the hospital. If this line is being taken to test what he said before, of course it must be accepted but I submit that unless the Counsel for the Defence can show or say he is testing the truth I submit it should not be continued.

COURT: His question was "What do you know of conditions in the hospital".

PROSECUTION: I am speaking of the line he is taking by saying whether or not he knew that men could be taken to hospital and so on. If it is a question of testing the truth of what he said before, I have no objection but if it is an attempt to use him as a witness for the Defence I suggest he should be called as a witness for the Defence and subject to Cross-Examination by the Prosecution.

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref:		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES		1	
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives material		WO 235/1012 PT1				2	

Mr. T. P. JACKSON.

COURT: The witness has made statements in respect to this man, Cpl. HURN which suggest that the witness had a certain knowledge of conditions in the hospital and what was going on there. HURN suffered, this witness said, from acute beri-beri and pellagra. He could get little or no treatment because it was not possible to give treatment for these conditions in the camp hospital and also that he was not sent out to St. MARY'S Hospital until well into July. I think, under the circumstances, the defense are quite entitled to ask questions to test the witness's recollection or the accuracy of his knowledge about the camp hospital. I see no objection to it.

- Q. What knowledge did you have of affairs at that camp hospital?
- A. The average knowledge that most prisoners had after being in there 5 or 6 months. I would like to explain that we all knew the cases that went into hospital were mainly obvious illnesses such as dysentery, diphtheria and the like but in the case of beri-beri and pellagra patients, it was a matter of common knowledge that it was very difficult for these men to be admitted to hospital. The attitude adopted by the Japanese in regard to such men attending parades appeared to me to have been as long as the man could walk or stagger along and he had no specific complaint such as high fever or diphtheria or dysentery, then he could accordingly attend parades.
- Q. To determine whether a disease was obvious or not, did not the POW doctor carry out physical examinations in such cases as dysentery, diphtheria and pellagra?
- A. In cases of dysentery, diphtheria - yes. But pellagra and beri-beri being far more prevalent in various stages than serious illnesses there were no periodic or any type of inspection to determine whether a man was fit or unfit with beri-beri or pellagra.

COURT: Will you ask Mr. JACKSON when he said "POW doctor" was he referring to the Canadian or British doctors, or any Japanese doctors who might have been in charge of the POW camp?

- Q. My question was - did not the doctors among the POWs treat and give physical examinations to patients?
- A. They did in the case where a man was obviously ill with dysentery, diphtheria and so on. But though they were aware and frequently examined men with pellagra and beri-beri in an advanced stage they could do nothing about it in regard to admitting them to hospital because the hospitals were primarily reserved for men with more specific diseases or complaints.
- Q. Was there not any case of admitting a patient suffering from beri-beri or pellagra to the hospital before July 1942? I mean the camp hospital.
- A. I remember one man being admitted there who had other complications. He was going blind and the doctors said it was caused by beri-beri, that is why he was admitted to hospital.

RE-EXAMINATION:

- Q. Just one question, Mr. JACKSON. The question was put in Cross-Examination and withdrawn. Do you want to answer that question?
- A. The question about being taken out? I would like to.

PROSECUTOR: I will put the question, Sir, with the Court's permission.
(Permission is granted by the Court).

1		2	
cms		Ref:	
WO 235 / 1012 PT1		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.		1	
		ms	
		2	

Mr. E. P. JACKSON.

229

- Q. Why were you taken out of camp?
- A. The misdemeanor I was taken out from camp for was well known to thousands of the prisoners in the camp with me, all the prisoners practically. And the action I took which constituted this misdemeanor was fully endorsed or approved by several senior officers in the camp. This is all I would like to say on that score. Several officers personally congratulated me on the action I had taken. I would like to further add that that particular action involves a certain person rather to his discredit. I would therefore rather not bring it out though I could do so. I do not think it is really relevant. It concerns a certain rather important person in the Colony.

COURT: Neither do I think it is really relevant.

PROSECUTOR: The question being withdrawn might give the Court a wrong impression on the credibility of the witness.

SUGGESTED BY THE COURT:

- Q. Just one or two minor points. You referred to these emergency parades that sometimes took place at night when everyone had to attend. Did that include people who were actually sick in the camp hospital? Did they have to attend these parades?
- A. They occasionally included sick men in hospital who were brought out on stretchers. That was usual after an escape or attempted escape when they rooted everybody out on to the parade ground, very often at night. I cannot say it included all the sick men in the hospital because I do not know if there were any left. But I have seen men carried out from the hospital on stretchers.
- Q. Can you remember anything about the weather on these special roll-call parades?
- A. I remember on one occasion the night parade was held in a torrential downpour throughout practically the whole parade. At other times it was a typical hot and dry summer night weather.
- Q. You described how you saw 2/Lt. KERR beaten by a Japanese sentry. Did you discover why 2/Lt. KERR was beaten?
- A. It was for an alleged faulty interpretation or wrong interpretation of some order given to him by one of the Japanese officials. I should add that was the general opinion and I cannot swear that that was it.
- Q. Lt. KERR did not tell you that himself?
- A. I spoke to him about it and he certainly mentioned it was for saying something wrong in his Japanese or the interpretation.
- Q. What was your rank and unit in HMV FONG at the British surrender?
- A. I was a Staff Sergeant in military HQ "A" Branch.
- Q. You stated that you recognized 2 men in the Supreme Court, one man called BYRNE and the other CONNOLLY. How was it you were particularly acquainted with these 2 men in the camp?
- A. I had not known them before I went to camp. I only knew them casually. As I said, I became probably acquainted with hundreds of men in camp.
- Q. Do you remember how many days it was between the time when CONNOLLY and these other men were taken out of camp for this attempt to escape and when you saw them at the Supreme Court?
- A. I saw them on 14 September in the Supreme Court and, to the best of my recollection, it might have been 7 weeks after they had been taken out.

1		2		Ref:		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
cms						WO 235/1012 PT1	
						1	
						ins	
						2	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

Mr. H.B. FAYSON .

- Q. From what you saw of the condition of those men on the day you saw them, what in your opinion would have been the result if anyone of them had tried to jump out of a lorry in his then condition?
- A. They would have been precisely the same as a small baby falling out of the back of a lorry or one who was not able to walk. I would say if they managed to jump or fall down, they would stay down, lie down.

(No more questions)

At 1230 hrs. the Court adjourn till 1400 hrs.

1		2		Ref.		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
cms						WO 235 /1012 PT1	
						1	
						Ins	
						2	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

231

13 December 1946.

1400 hours.

The Court reassemble pursuant to adjournment, *present the same members as at the adjournment. RCL*

24TH WITNESS FOR PROSECUTION -- KOCHI SHIGEKAJIRO.

COURT: Will you warn the Witness that he ~~is~~ ^{need RCL} not to answer any questions put either by Defence, or Prosecution or by the Court that will incriminate him.

EXAMINATION IN CHIEF

Witness makes a solemn declaration *affirmation RCL* and is questioned by the Prosecuting Officer:

PROSECUTOR: Do you wish to answer in English or Japanese?
 WITNESS: I would like to answer in English.
 COURT: Mr Fujita do you object to this?
 DEFENCE: No objection.

PROSECUTOR:

Q. Will you tell the Court your full name?
 A. My name is KOCHI SHIGEKAJIRO.

Q. What were you doing during the period of the Japanese occupation of Hong Kong?
 A. My occupation was English interpreter attached to the Japanese Army in Hong Kong.

Q. Where were you interpreting?
 A. I started to work at the POW Headquarters at NORTH POINT from 1st of April 1942.

Q. At NORTH POINT what were your duties?
 A. I have been working there as interpreter at NORTH POINT POW Camp.

Q. How long were you at NORTH POINT?
 A. I worked at NORTH POINT from 1st April 1942 until the POWs moved to SHAM SHUI PO Camp, - 26th September 1942.

Q. Do you know what POWs were at NORTH POINT CAMP?
 A. Shortly before they moved to SHAM SHUI PO camp a number of -----

Q. KOCHI, you have misunderstood my question, what POWs were at NORTH POINT Camp, who were they?
 A. Some of them were Canadians, some of them British Forces and very few of them were Dutch Forces -- Dutch Navy I think.

Q. Can you tell the Court what, if any, sicknesses were prevalent at NORTH POINT when you were there?
 A. On the 26th of September 1942 the POWs moved to SHAM SHUI PO Camp. Shortly before they moved a number of epidemic diphtheria and dysentery had been arising. One day before they moved, that was 25th September 1942, a medical orderlies, Sgt YUYAMA, transferred about 50 patients to BOWEN ROAD Hospital, and during the night of 25th a number of diphtheria and dysentery cases occurred. He could not take them to BOWEN ROAD on 26th morning.

Q. Will you tell the Court how the move was made from NORTH POINT Camp to SHAM SHUI PO?
 A. On the 26th September, I remember, one small boat had been used for the transfer and they all went on the small boat.

Q. Who went on that small boat?
 A. All the POW Camp who had been staying at NORTH POINT and including several epidemic patients had been carried on the same boat on stretchers.

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref:		1		ins	
		WO 235 / 1012 PT1					

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives material.

24TH WITNESS FOR PROSECUTION -- KOCHI SHIGEKAJIRO.

- Q. Do you know what these epidemic patients were suffering from, what diseases?
- A. I do not know quite well -- some of them suffered from I think diphtheria and some from dysentery.
- Q. Were you on that small boat yourself?
- A. Yes, sir.
- Q. Will you tell the Court how many people were on that boat, if you know?
- A. I do not remember how many POWs went on that boat, sir.
- Q. What were the conditions aboard the boat insofar as space was concerned?
- A. The boat was small and there was not space enough so that all the boat was jammed up with people.
- Q. Do you know any of the men opposite you?
- A. Who do you mean, sir.
- Q. The men opposite you, do you know any of them or all of them?
- A. Yes sir, I know all of them.
- Q. Will you tell the Court who they are showing where they are sitting.
- A. Facing me, from left to right -- Col TOKUNAGA, Chief Commander of POW Camp in Hong Kong.
Next, TSUTADA, Interpreter at SHAMSHUI PO.
Next, Sgt HARADA -- I think he was Sgt but I do not know his duties. I remember he was shifted all around the Camp.
Next, Lt. TANAKA -- He used to work at POW HQ and was taking the place of Adjutant there. He was in the Information Department of POW Headquarters.
The last one is Capt. SAITO, Medical Officer of the POW Camp.
- Q. What do you know about the treatment of POWs by Capt SAITO?
- A. I do not know.
- Q. What were your duties in SHAMSHUI PO Camp?
- A. Chiefly I worked there as interpreter -- sometimes I translated English documents into Japanese and Japanese documents into English.
- Q. Who did you act as interpreter for?
- A. Sometimes I interpreted for the Camp Commandant and sometimes for the officer personnel.
- Q. What officer personnel did you interpret for?
- A. There were quite a number of cases, I do not quite remember.
- Q. Tell us the ones that you remember?
- A. Sometimes I interpreted for the rations and sometimes about the sanitary conditions.
- Q. I am asking you which officers did you interpret for?
- A. I do not remember quite well, sir.
- Q. During your duties as an interpreter in SHAM SHUI PO Camp were there any POWs whom you became acquainted with?
- A. Yes sir.
- Q. Do you know a man called CRANFORD?
- A. Yes sir.
- Q. Who was CRANFORD?
- A. He was the Canadian Medical Officer and his rank was Major at that time, I remember.
- Q. As medical officer what was he doing at SHAM SHUI PO Camp?

1		2		Ref:		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
cme				WO 235/1012 PT1			
						1	
						2	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

24TH WITNESS FOR PROSECUTION -- KOCHI SHIGEKAJIRO

A. I do not know quite well but I think he had been taking care of all POWs in the Camp.

Q. What have you got to tell the Court about the treatment of Major CRAWFORD?

A. I have nothing particular to tell about him.

Q. What do you know about Medical Orderlies at SHAM SHUI PO Camp?

A. Medical orderlies of the Japanese or Medical orderlies of the POWs?

Q. POW Medical orderlies --

A. After the POWs transferred from NORTH POINT to SHAMSHUI PO a number of epidemic diphtheria and dysentery cases were arising day by day and the medical orderlies were not enough to take care of those patients so some of the orderlies had been taken out from the Privates and they had to work in the hospital. Those orderlies had been working very hard in taking care of the patients in the hospital. One day the medical orderlies and officer had been called out by Capt SAITO, and he asked them if they were doing their best in taking care of the patients, and if anybody was, he should step forward, and all of them stepped forward. Then Capt SAITO said 'I am going to slap your faces -- and I am going to order to slap your faces and I will help to do so.

Q. You say Capt SAITO said to them 'I am going to slap your faces' - what did Capt SAITO do?

A. He slapped those medical orderlies and medical officer by himself.

No further questions.

CROSS-EXAMINATION -- Mr. FUJITA.

Q. You said that during the night of the 25th there were some new patients and on the morning of the 26th you were not able to transfer these new patients to BOWEN ROAD Hospital -- why could you not transfer these patients?

A. In the morning of 26th September 1942 when they moved to SHAM SHUI PO we ourselves had to move with them at the same time so we had to take up and carry everything in the office and our personal belongings so we were busy and so I think the medical orderly had no time to transfer.

Q. Did you hear of any protest or complaint from the POWs because these new patients were not transferred to BOWEN ROAD Hospital?

A. I do not remember quite well but this might have been asked for.

Q. And also they may have not requested?

A. That is quite true -- I do not remember -- but it might have been asked for.

Q. About the instance of these new patients do you know whether Col TOKUNAGA or Dr. SAITO knew about them.

A. I think so.

Q. What is the reason for you to think so?

A. Col. TOKUNAGA, as Commander and Chief of POW Camp and Capt SAITO as Medical Officer of POWs, they had some reports about the sick POWs.

Q. You said that during the night of the 25th there were some new cases of diphtheria and dysentery, by the morning of the 26th do you think it would have been possible to report to Col TOKUNAGA or Capt SAITO about these new patients?

A. I do not know very well about such things.

Q. When Capt SAITO slapped Major CRAWFORD did he only use his open hand?

A. I think so.

No further questions.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref.
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	ins

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

24TH WITNESS FOR PROSECUTION -- KOCHI SHIGEKAJIRO.CROSS - EXAMINATION -- Mr. HASEGAWA.

Q. When Capt SAITO slapped Major CRAWFORD were you the interpreter?
A. Yes.

Q. Do you know the reason why they were slapped?
A. I think they had been slapped for the reason to have better results -- in other words they were asked to work harder to take care of the patients.

No further questions.

RE-EXAMINATION -- declined.QUESTIONS BY COURT -- No questions.

COURT: Witness can stand down.

.....

Prosecutor reads the affidavit of L/Cpl. S.F. NEWTON -- Exhibit E(2).

Prosecutor reads the affidavit of Pte H. GREEN -- Exhibit F(2).

Prosecutor reads the affidavit of Rfn. C. TIBBETTS -- Exhibit G(2).

The prosecutor refers to the 3rd paragraph of the affidavit -- "I do not think I will read the balance of this affidavit as it tells of a beating which I do not think occurred on the date given here -- September 1943. This implicates one of the accused and to the best of my knowledge and belief the accused was not there at the time. I feel quite sure the beating took place much later. However, if you wish I suggest this evidence goes in as evidence of beatings generally."

COURT: Is this beating referred to by any other witness or does it appear in any other affidavit -- and what is the date given?

PROSECUTOR: Yes it is mentioned but it varies -- in some it says September and others, October but I am convinced it was in December that the beating actually took place.

COURT: On what grounds do you think that this date is incorrect? You say that this occurrence is referred to in other affidavits -- is it referred to by living witness? Why do you think that this date is incorrect?

PROSECUTOR: During the course of investigations I have had the opportunity of seeing various diaries in which mention is made of the people who were beaten. From information gathered in one or two diaries the beating referred to is mentioned as taking place in December 1943. Besides this, to the best of my knowledge and belief the Accused mentioned there was not at the Camp at that time, he left before that date.

COURT: You mean then that you would like the affidavit to go in and as far as this paragraph goes you suggest that no reference should be made to the accused or the date mentioned in the paragraph?

PROSECUTOR: Yes sir.

COURT: I think on your submission of the above to the Court, the Court would be prepared to delete the date and the name of the Accused mentioned in the affidavit. I do not know what Mr. Fujita (Defence) would say on this point?

DEFENCE: I have no objection if the name of the Accused and the date

1		2		3		4		5		6		7		8		9		10	
cm		in		ft		yd		mi		nmi		sec		min		hr		day	
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.																			
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES WO 235/1012 PT1																			

~~DATE: 11/11/11 - 11/11/11 - 11/11/11~~

are deleted.

COURT: The Court will delete the month and the year and also will delete the name of the Accused mentioned in that paragraph (para 6).

The Prosecutor continues reading the affidavit. Subsequent paragraphs are not pertinent.

The Court is adjourned for five minutes recess, 11:30-11:35 a.m.
The Court re-assembles at 11:35 a.m.

25TH WITNESS FOR PROSECUTION -- Mr. A. MABB.

EXAMINATION IN CHIEF

Witness is sworn ⁱⁿ and questioned by the Prosecuting Officer:

Q. Will you tell the Court your name?

A. ARCHIBALD MABB.

Q. Where were you born?

A. I was born in India.

Q. Are you a British subject?

A. I am a British subject.

Q. I understand that your present address is GILMAN & CO., 4A Des Vaux Road, is that correct?

A. That is correct.

Q. And that you are employed there now as an insurance officer?

A. That is correct.

Q. I understand that you were a POW here in Hong Kong when the Japanese captured the colony?

A. That is correct.

Q. Will you tell the Court briefly where you were interned?

A. I was captured at Stanley Ford, taken first to NORTH POINT, afterwards taken over to SHAM SHUI PO Camp, where I remained till December 1943. I was then moved to Japan in December 1943.

Q. During the time you were at SHAM SHUI PO Camp will you tell the Court how you were employed?

A. For most of the time I was employed as an orderly ⁱⁿ the hospital.

Q. Will you tell the Court what you know of a man called BALLINGALL?

A. I knew BALLINGALL, he was a Private in the Canadian Forces at that time -- he was a patient in the hospital.

Q. What have you got to tell the Court about BALLINGALL?

A. He was suffering quite severely from malnutrition and my impression was that his eyes were affected.

Q. Just continue with what you know about BALLINGALL?

A. Except that he was a patient in the hospital and was suffering from malnutrition I know ~~nothing~~ nothing more of the man as an individual.

Q. What happened about BALLINGALL?

A. There was an inspection of the hospital -- I cannot remember the exact date, and owing to some mistake or the other that BALLINGALL was alleged to have made, the interpreter STODDA, as we knew him, returned after the inspection and very severely beat BALLINGALL, so severely that he fell down two or three times during the beating. I helped to take him into the ward after the beating and he was very severely and badly cut about the face and suffering from shock.

1		2		1		2	
cme		Ref:		1		line	
		WO 235/1012 PT1					

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.

25TH WITNESS FOR PROSECUTION - Mr. A. MABB.

Q. Where is STODDA now?

A. In this Court.

Q. Will you indicate to the Court where he is.

A. The second one from the right in the dock so far as I know.

Q. Your right or right of the dock?

A. To be quite frank they have changed so much but I am able to recognise him as the second one from the right of the dock.

Witness points out second TANAKA MITSUHI ALL

COURT: The man wearing spectacles?

WITNESS: Yes.

PROSECUTOR:

Q. Will you tell the Court why you say that STODDA beat this man BALLINGALL?

A. When the beating was finished quite a number of orderlies had collected near the scene of the beating and we were told that BALLINGALL had been beaten because he had not saluted TOKUNAGA during the visit.

Q. What did you yourself see of the actual beating?

A. I saw BALLINGALL standing between the first hut used as a chapel and the second one which was used as a Canadian ward and being beaten with a fist across the face.

Q. You were telling us the orderlies were told -- were you among the orderlies who were told why the beating was administered?

A. Yes, we were gathered on the path that goes between the huts.

Q. Who told you of the reason for this beating?

A. STODDA himself announced it at the end of the beating.

Q. Will you tell the Court what effect this beating had on BALLINGALL to the best of your knowledge?

A. We took BALLINGALL into the camp and put him on a bed and for some considerable time afterwards he was jerking; his body would be limp for some time and then he would stiffen and then he would appear to jerk about and that went on for some considerable time.

No further questions.

CROSS-EXAMINATION -- Mr. FUJITA.

Q. Could you give the approximate date of this incident?

A. I should say April 1943 -- I am not quite sure of the year but it was in April.

Q. When STODDA beat this patient were any other Japanese present?

A. No.

Q. Where STODDA beat the patient and where you stood, what was the distance?

A. 20 to 25 feet.

Q. When BALLINGALL was in a stage of shock did a doctor come and examine him?

A. Certainly, a doctor came and examined him.

Q. What sort of a diagnosis did he give. ALL

A. He did not give any diagnosis to me, I was not one of the orderlies who was attending at the bedside trying to get the man straight again.

No further questions.

CROSS-EXAMINATION -- Mr. HASEGAWA -- declined.RE-EXAMINATION -- declined.

1		2	
cms		ins	
Ref.:		WO 235 / 1012 PT1	
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES		1	
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.		2	

26TH WITNESS FOR PROSECUTION -- Mr. A. MABB.

QUESTIONED BY THE COURT.

Q. You told the Court that you formed the impression that BAILLINGALL'S eye-sight was affected, can you enlarge on that, on what did you base this impression?

A. I knew BAILLINGALL as a patient in the hospital and among the various forms of malnutritional diseases, the form which BAILLINGALL had was eye-sight trouble.

Q. From your own observations what form did this trouble to his eyes tend towards?

A. I should say a form of short-sightedness -- inability to see at any distance.

Q. Did you notice what was used by STODDA to administer the beating?

A. Yes, his fist.

Q. Did he use anything else?

A. I do not remember him using anything else.

No further questions.

COURT: Mr. FUJITA, are there any further questions you would like to make arising out of the questions the Court has asked.

DEFENCE: No.

COURT: Mr. HASEGAWA, are there any further questions you would like to make arising out of the questions the Court has asked.

DEFENCE: No.

COURT: Major PUDDICOMBE, are there any further questions you would like to make arising out of the questions the Court has asked.

PROSECUTOR: No sir.

COURT: Witness may stand down.

.....

Prosecutor reads Exhibit H(2) -- Sgt. R.A. KERR.

Prosecutor reads Exhibit J(2) -- Sgt. A.T. BAILLINGALL.

Prosecutor reads Exhibit K(2) -- Pte. J. DUKELOW

~~Prosecutor~~ (next two paragraphs are not pertinent to the charge as they concern the internment in SHAM SHUI PO ²⁻¹⁵⁻¹⁶⁻¹⁸⁻¹⁹⁻²⁰ paragraph 4 is pertinent to the case as it deals with the escape of four Canadians in August 1942 -- paragraph 3 is not pertinent).

Prosecutor reads Exhibit L(2) -- Capt. K.M.A. BARNETT.

Prosecutor reads Exhibit M(2) -- Major K.M.A. BARNETT.

The Court is adjourned until 1000 hours, 14 December 1946.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

238

No. 5 WAR CRIMES COURT.

FIFTEENTH'S DAYS proceedings of the trial of Col TOKUNAGA ISAO, Capt. SAITO SHUNKICHI, Lieut. TANAKA HITOSHI, TSUTADA ITSUO (Interpreter) and Sgt. HARADA JOTARO held on Saturday December 14th 1946.

(Held at Jardein Matheson's East Point Godowns).

⁷⁰⁰
The Court re-assembles at 1000 hours.

The Prosecutor reads Exhibit N(2).

26th WITNESS FOR PROSECUTION -- Lt Col BAILLIE.

EXAMINATION IN CHIEF

Witness is sworn in and questioned by the Prosecuting Officer.

- Q. Will you tell the Court your full name?
A. Lt Col. JOHN ALLEN BAILLIE.
- Q. And your unit?
A. 1st Battalion, Winnipeg Grenadier, Canadian Army.
- Q. What is your present posting?
A. I am at present in the Far East as the official Canadian War Graves Representative for the Pacific Theater.
- Q. I understand, Colonel, that you were taken prisoner of war in 1941, at the time of the Japanese occupation of Hong Kong, is that correct?
A. Yes.
- Q. Will you tell the Court briefly where you were interned?
A. Firstly at SHAM SHUI PO Camp, KOWLOON, then at NORTH POINT CAMP, HONG KONG, then at ARGYLL STREET CAMP and again at SHAM SHUI PO CAMP.
- Q. When did you go to NORTH POINT CAMP?
A. I believe it was the 26th of January 1942.
- Q. Will you tell the Court something about the conditions at NORTH POINT CAMP, I suggest you speak firstly about housing?
A. When we first arrived at NORTH POINT CAMP, i.e. the Canadians, about 1300 odd personnel were placed in the camp. The conditions were very crowded. To make matters worse, a few days after we arrived in NORTH POINT, approximately 800 Naval personnel were sent to NORTH POINT CAMP, I believe from SHAM SHUI PO. At the time I was a Company Commander and my Company was allotted one hut at NORTH POINT CAMP. The conditions were very crowded and in addition to my Company an extra 47 men were sent in, making a total of 150 men who had to be housed in double-tier bunks in this hut.
- Q. You say those 150 men were in one hut -- from your experience -- what would be the ordinary number of people that can be accommodated comfortably in this hut were the 150 people were?
A. I should say, by comparison with the normal room accommodation, the hut would accommodate one platoon comfortably, or approximately 31 men.
- Q. Will you tell the Court what the conditions in respect to clothing were?
A. The only clothing of the POWs at that time was the equipment and clothing in their possession when they were taken prisoners. There had been no issue of clothes and a man had usually what he was taken prisoner in.
- Q. What about replacements of clothing?
A. There were no replacements given us but the C.O.'s of the units endeavoured to induce personnel to make a re-distribution of clothing so that some of the dire cases could have sufficient clothing for warmth and for covering themselves.
- Q. What about blankets?
A. Blankets were very short -- I doubt very much whether there was more than one blanket per man in Camp. In the colder evenings it was necessary for men to double up and sleep together.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives Terms and Conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives leaflet.

239

26TH WITNESS FOR PROSECUTION -- Lt Col. BAILLIE.EXAMINATION IN CHIEF (Cont).

Q. How long were you at NORTH POINT altogether?

A. From January 26th until I believe the end of August or early September 1942.

Q. Could you sketch briefly the food conditions at NORTH POINT during the period of which you have just talked about?

A. Generally food was always short; rations never seemed to come up to our expectations and people were continually hungry. The situation became worse in about July, and as an example of the extent of this, the Commanding Officers of the two Infantry Units required their Company Commanders to be present on meal parades in order to see that there was no favoritism in the issuing of food. Discrepancies, by as much as a spoonful per man were the cause of serious consideration by the troops and due to the short supply of food it was necessary for an officer to actually be present when the meagrier ration, which was a small tin of rice, was issued.

Q. Could you indicate the size of this small tin of rice -- possibly by comparison with some other tin of the same size?

A. I should say that the green container on the President's desk would be about the noon-day ration of rice per man.

CONF RCL
 COURT: Observed by witnesses that the container would be 4 inches high and 2 inches across.

PROSECUTOR:

Q. While you were at NORTH POINT did you know a man called PAYNE?

A. Yes, I knew Sgt PAYNE very well. Sgt PAYNE, BERZINSKI, ELLIS AND ADAMS attempted to escape from NORTH POINT, I believe it was in August 1942.

Q. PAYNE was a Sgt., what were the ranks of the other three?

A. BERZINSKI was a Cpl., ELLIS and ADAMS were Ptes., and PAYNE was a Sgt.

Q. What happened in NORTH POINT subsequent to this attempted escape of which you speak about?

A. After morning roll call it was found that four men were missing. The Company Commanders were normally responsible for reporting absentees to their C.O. who in turn reported it to the Brigadier, or Actg. Brigadier, or senior officer, Col. HOME. As I recall, the matter was reported to the Japanese before 11 o'clock on the morning following the escape and a complete muster parade was held that day. By a muster parade I mean that the Japanese index cards covering POWs were individually read out on a parade where the whole camp was called out and as a man's name was called, the individual was required to answer in person and was checked off. After the parade was dismissed the Japanese called for certain personnel who were in the huts of the escaped men -- I cannot recall all of them, but one in particular -- BERZINSKI's brother, was called off and taken to the warden's house to see Col TOKUNAGA.
LT WADA'S RCL

Q. You say he was taken to the Warden's house for an interview with ..

A. Col. TOKUNAGA.

Q. Where is Col. TOKUNAGA?

A. Col. TOKUNAGA is sitting in the box on the right hand side.

Q. On the right hand side?

A. Yes, right hand side of the box.

Q. Continue with what you were saying --

A. When BERZINSKI returned sometime later that evening I saw him. He bore evidence of a beating or mistreatment. I had occasion to talk to BERZINSKI and he told me that he had been questioned by Col TOKUNAGA at the Warden's house. I remember one instance in particular which seemed odd at the time and that was that BERZINSKI was questioned especially with reference to the clothing worn by the escaped personnel. When BERZINSKI said that he was not aware as to the clothing the escaped people were wearing he was told that Sgt PAYNE was wearing a set of riding breeches and the other
breeches RCL

1		2	
cm		Ref:	
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES		WO 235/1012 PT1	
1		2	
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives material.			

26TH WITNESS FOR PROSECUTION - Lt Col. BAILLIE.

EXAMINATION IN CHIEF (Cont).

and the other members of the party were wearing, in effect, the actual clothes that they escaped with. About 10 days later -

Q. Did you see him when he returned?

A. Yes, I saw BERZINSKI when he returned.

Q. In what condition was he in -- I am speaking of the brother of the man who escaped?

A. Pte BERZINSKI was obviously shaken and his face bruised and it was apparent that he had received rough treatment.

Q. You were about to say - about 10 days later? ..

A. About 10 days later Col HOME and the two C.O's of the Canadians were called to the Japanese guard room together with Sgt Mjr. ADAMS, Sgt. McHAUGHTON and Sgt Mjr LOGAN. I was not present personally but I knew they were called to the Guard Room. Later the three Sgt Mjrs were taken away under escort out of the camp and marched down the street out of the camp. About a week later they returned. I questioned S/M LOGAN as to what had happened and he told me he had been sentenced by Col TOKUNAGA to confinement for negligence in permitting the escape of PAYNE, BERZINSKI, ELLIS and ADAMS. Incidentally, I had to question S/M LOGAN in hospital -- when the three people came back they were in a very powerless state and were taken to the hospital, given a hot bath and allowed to shave and clean up.

COURT: Would you mind explaining that word "powerless" -- does it mean the persons were in danger of death, or seriously ill, or in a very bad state of health, or just emaciated -- will you explain that please?

WITNESS: The men were obviously in a weakened condition -- they marched back the same way -- their feet were dragging -- they were extremely dirty and they seemed to have lost weight during the time that they were out.

COURT: Did they have to be hospitalized or just washed and cleaned up?

WITNESS: Yes, S/M LOGAN was suffering from dysentery before he was taken from the Camp. His condition was much worse when he returned.

PROSECUTOR:

Q. Are you able to say anything about the conditions of their imprisonment?

A. I was told that they were taken to a small room in the building adjoining NORTH POINT CAMP; a room of about 8' x 8' as I recall it, there was some type of bars on the windows, or wire, and the door was solid. There was nothing in the room except a large tin which had to be used for toilet purposes. LOGAN told me that they were given rice three times a day and water. He also told me that due to his condition he had to spend most of his time on the tin that was used as a latrine bucket and in addition that during their stay in this cell or room, the tin was not emptied.

Q. Have you any other information to give the Court with respect to the escape?

A. We asked about PAYNE, BERZINSKI, ELLIS and ADAMS and received no information from the Japanese, but we did hear rumours that four Canadians had been seen in KOWLOON. About November of 1942 I had occasion to speak to a Sgt in the Middlesex, whose name I do not recall at the moment, and he told me that he had been in KOWLOON Jail with four Canadian personnel, one of whom was a Sgt. he said.

Q. How did you speak to this man in the Middlesex Regiment?

A. I was appointed to form a band committee and try and organize a band and secure instruments to be purchased by a fund that was given to the Japanese by, I believe, the Pope. Some 3,000 dollars. In the process of contacting musical personnel, I requested that a

1		2	
cms		Re:	
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES		WO 235/1012 PT1	
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.		1	
		ins	
		2	

26TH WITNESS FOR PROSECUTION -- Lt Col. BAILLIE.

EXAMINATION IN CHIEF (Cont.)

of contacting musical personnel I requested that all people experienced in band work should report to me. This Sgt in particular was the Band Sgt of the Middlesex Band.

- Q. Returning to NORTH POINT CAMP will you tell the Court what you know of the treatment of Chinese civilians by the POW Camp personnel experiences as regards sentences and so on by the Japanese?
- A. NORTH POINT CAMP Fence boundary joined the road -- NORTH POINT ROAD -- there was an arterial highway running to the west end -- and considerable traffic was always evident on the road. The guard room of the gate sentry was in a box outside the gate of the camp and practically on what would be the sidewalk. He invariably stood outside the gate of the camp. I should say there were practically daily occurrences whereby Chinese civilian personnel passing the camp were either insulted or assaulted by the sentry on duty. Three occasions stand out in my memory --

The first occasion I believe took place in May 1942. An elderly Chinese man was walking past the camp and as he got to the gate was accosted by the Camp sentry on duty at the gate. This sentry, by juditsu, tripped the old man, and he fell heavily to the ground. The old man was then kicked and when he made an attempt to get up, the sentry again placed his foot behind him and this time threw him right over his shoulder, this time the old man landed on his head on the concrete floor. The sentry tried to get him up again but as he could get no movement from the old man he brought a bucket of water from the guard room and threw it over him. Still the old man did not get up whereupon he was dragged by the sentry into the guard room enclosure where I could not see what happened. But sometime later a Japanese sentry from the Guard room went to our tool stores and brought a wheel barrow back to the guard room. I then saw a sentry move from the guard room enclosure past the camp with the old man lying in the wheel barrow; his head hanging over one end of the wheel barrow and his arms over both sides and he appeared to be unconscious and out of control of his faculties. One or two sentries with rifles, accompanied the Japanese guard who was wheeling the barrow and they proceeded to the west end of the camp and around the camp towards the sea where they were out of view.

- Q. As you stand at the gate of NORTH POINT CAMP, facing the tram, which is the west end.
- A. Facing the gate, which way, from the inside -- the west would be to the left.
- Q. Was it in that direction that the old man was taken?
- A. In the direction away from the building adjoining the camp -- there is a clearing or field with a lot of rubble and an old smashed pillar box, that is the direction which I mean to imply.

From my position where I witnessed this incident I then saw the Japanese guard bringing the wheel barrow back empty, followed by the two sentries with rifles, and one of them was wiping the bayonet of his rifle with his towel, which the Japanese guards invariably carry on their belts -- the towel was red.

COURT: Will you make that clear -- was the towel itself red in colour or were there red markings on it.

WITNESS: The towels are white, invariably, -- this towel was stained with red.

1		2		1		2	
Cms		Ref.		Ins		Ins	
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES							
WO 235/1012 PT1							
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives material.							

242

26TH WITNESS FOR PROSECUTION -- Lt Col BAILLIE.EXAMINATION IN CHIEF - Cont.

COURT: How far were you away when you saw that?

WITNESS: I should say about 60 feet.

PROSECUTOR: You spoke of two other occasions?

WITNESS: On another occasion, a woman and a young girl, under 10 years of age, I should say, were at the guard room gate being interrogated by the guard in charge. This was early in the morning. I do not know what happened, but later that same morning they were taken across the street, directly opposite the guard room gate and fastened by wire to an iron light standard immediately opposite the camp. They stayed there all that day until late that evening and I did not see them the next day.

PROSECUTOR: There is one other?

WITNESS: The other occasion I recall is a guard at the guard room gate stopping a street car or tram proceeding past the camp and he ran about 100 feet after it -- mounted it, and went to the top deck where he severely assaulted a Chinese man who was sitting there.

Generally there were numerous other occasions of assault on Chinese passers-by. So many that our troops used to line up near the perimeter fence to watch and it seemed that the presence of the troops watching these assaults taking place further intensified the Japanese. Thereupon the C.O. issued orders that the troops had to stay away when these assaults were taking place.

Q. You told us that you were at NORTH POINT until September 1942, from there where did you go?

A. We were then taken back to SHAM SHUI PO Camp by ferry. All the Canadians and the Dutch personnel that were there also accompanied us together with their baggage, and NORTH POINT Camp was left.

Q. Can you tell the Court anything about a man called ATKINSON? Who he was and so on?

A. Are you referring to Major ATKINSON?

Q. Do you know a man called ATKINSON?

A. I do, I know a Major ATKINSON who was acting as Brigade Major of the Canadian personnel in NORTH POINT Camp.

Q. Do you know a man called NORRIS?

A. Capt NORRIS was an officer in the Winnipeg Grenadiers. He was acting Company Commander for D Company and as such he was responsible, at muster parade, to sign a statement to the effect that his Company personnel were present and correct. These muster states were collected by the Brigade Major, who was doing the administrative work, Capt. now Major ATKINSON, and turned over to the Japanese officer, N.C.B. or interpreter who was responsible for the muster parade. On one occasion when interpreter INOUE was holding the muster parade there was a discrepancy in Capt NORRIS'S report, whereupon he was called to the junction of the roadways, with Major ATKINSON, and asked for an explanation by INOUE. INOUE was carrying a file-wood board about 14" long and 8" wide and about 1/4" thick -- usual type of board used for writing on when not at a desk. I then saw INOUE strike NORRIS across the face with the board, knocking his glasses and hat off. He struck him more than a dozen times -- probably about 20 blows, and in addition kicked him, knocking him to the ground. He then turned around - i.e. INOUE turned around, and kicked Major ATKINSON in the knee -- shortly after Major ATKINSON collapsed and was not able to stand on his leg. The parade was then dismissed and

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref.		1		Ins	
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES				WO 235/1012 PT1			
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives leaflet.							

26th WITNESS FOR PROSECUTION -- Lt Col BAILLIE.

EXAMINATION IN CHIEF (Cont.)

I went forward to assist NORRIS to the M.I. Room, as NORRIS was my room-mate. When in the Medical Inspection Room Capt NORRIS ~~is~~ was attended by Col CRAWFORD, who dressed and cleaned the cuts and bruises about his face and head. He then gave NORRIS a ~~sedative~~^{needle} and I assisted him back to his quarters, where NORRIS was put to bed.

The Court is adjourned for five minutes recess at 1130 hrs RCL

The Court re-assembles at 1135 hrs RCL

1		2		Ref:		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
cms						WO 235 / 1012 PT1	
						1	
						ins	
						2	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet'

26TH WITNESS FOR THE PROSECUTION - Lt.-Col. DAINIE.

EXAMINATION IN CHIEF (Continued).

- Q. You had been telling us about the affair of Capt. ALKINSON at SHAM SHUI PO camp after you returned from North Point Camp. Will you tell the Court now anything you know of the treatment of Chinese civilians by camp guards at SHAM SHUI PO?
- A. The Japanese guards on the perimeter of the camp, especially on the sea-wall side, used to fire their rifles at passing sampans coming out of the mouth, I believe, of SHAM SHUI PO harbour and on several occasions when the tide was out, Chinese fisher people would come down to pick in the mud flats, I suppose for fish, and the Japanese guards on numerous occasions that I know of fired their rifles at the people picking in the mud. On one occasion, I cannot recall the exact date but it was after our first time in SHAM SHUI PO camp, I saw a Japanese sentry on the sea wall aim his rifle and fire at a small girl standing on the sea wall at the left-hand corner of SHAM SHUI PO Camp, left-hand as you are facing the hills. I am not certain of my directions - I cannot describe it as south, east or west, but as you face the hills it was the left-hand corner of the sea wall. After the rifle was discharged I heard the girl scream and she fell off the sea wall. Some time later that same day two or three women came down to the shore and I saw the little girl being carried away.
- Q. Will you tell the Court what you know of conditions of work parties at North Point or SHAM SHUI PO?
- A. The POWs were called on to find work parties for the Japanese. In my personal experience with work parties we were required to take approximately 800 men in each party out daily to KAI TAK. The work party was commanded by a field officer found in turn from either the Canadian officers present and from the Imperial officers in SHAM SHUI PO Camp. Each of the 100 Other Ranks were commanded by a Lieutenant or Captain found out of the Canadians or Imperials alternately. The party's work at KAI TAK was the construction of an airport for Japanese military planes. There was a large hill at KAITAK which the Japanese authorities required to be moved in order to enlarge the airstrip. The Japanese insisted that the exact numbers of the work party demand be met and on many occasions it was necessary to take unfit men out on the work party in order to meet their quota. Parties were required to have their breakfast at 4.30 in the morning and be mustered and assembled ready for the Japanese muster roll-call at 6.30 on the main parade square each day of the week. After the parade was assembled and checked we were loaded on ferries, tugs or barges and proceeded by water to KAI TAK airport. The men were required to take their noon meal with them and usually it consisted of 2 small buns. The men were required to work from 8 in the morning until noon, when they got an hour's break for luncheon, and then continued working until the order was given to stop work in the evening, sometimes as late as 6 o'clock. Their task was to remove the hill from its site and take the soil approximately 900 feet to 1,500 ft. to the lower levels of the airfield. The work was hazardous and hard and we suffered quite a few casualties due to the dangerous nature of the work through cave-ins, working on the face of this hill that was being moved. After the work was completed the men were sent home again by water transport, to SHAM SHUI PO arriving back 8 o'clock or so in the evening. They were then required to have showers and eat their evening meal in the dark as they were required to go to bed for their breakfast. Due to the general sickness throughout the camp it was necessary to keep fit men 14 days straight, in some cases, on this type of work which meant that they were required to be up by 4 o'clock in the morning and could

PTO

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235 / 1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

Lt.-Col. BAILIE.

A.(Ctd.) not get to bed until after 9 o'clock in the evening. In addition to the heavy work the Japanese required the troops to sleep in communal bed forms, no individual beds being permitted in the huts. These communal beds were absolutely infested with bed bugs to the extent that the men were unable to sleep. Repeated requests to the Japanese to supply either some form of disinfectant to control the bugs or permission to remove the communal bed forms were refused.

3. To whom were these requests made?

A. Through our own senior officers to the Japanese Camp Commander of the camp.

4. What was the condition respecting rats in the dormitories?

A. The camp was infested with rats so much so that such food that men might save had to be kept in tins. On one occasion we had a cloud burst, a very heavy down-fall of rain and all the nullurs and underground sewerage system was blocked by being about a foot of water on the main camp road. I recall seeing outside of my own hut the rats coming out of the sewers and nullurs and underground drainage systems and there must have been easily 100 rats possibly, at one time, in broad daylight.

5. How long were you in SHAM SHUI PO: after you returned from North Point in September 1942. How long were you in SHAM SHUI PO?

A. About the middle of August 1943 we received notice one morning that all the senior Canadian officers and an officer of the PWDS would be ready to leave the camp within 20 minutes with all our belongings such as we could carry.

6. To return one moment to the working parties in SHAM SHUI PO. How were the quotas made up, to fill the full complement of men?

A. The quotas were made on the basis of the number of non-hospitalized men in camp with the ratio being allotted to Canadians, Imperials and HONG KONG Volunteers. The Canadians found it extremely difficult to fill their quotas and as a matter of fact I know on occasion we could not fill our quota with fit men and did not take other men out. However, some quotas on the work party were filled with unfit men and I have seen an occasion where the work party of 800 would arrive at KAI TAK and over 100 men would immediately be left off the party and be told to go and sit in a mat shed that was constructed as the cook-house shelter.

7. Who was in charge of the work at KAI TAK?

A. It seemed to me that the actual work party was a requirement of the military authorities in so far as the number and guarding was concerned, but another set of authorities seemed to be controlling the work at the military airport. There seemed to be some difference of opinion as to the work party personnel. The civil authorities wanted only fit men and did not want an unfit man on the party. The military authorities on the other hand insisted that the quota be ~~is~~ lived up to and we were unable to get the thing adjusted.

8. Unless you have something to add to the matter of the work parties, will you continue with ARGYLL Street Camp conditions when you returned. Will you tell the Court your observations there in regard to the treatment of POWs by the Japanese sentries, guards or generally the camp personnel?

A. Shortly after we arrived at ARGYLL Street camp one incident is clear in my mind. The Japanese called for a draft of I believe, 50 batmen who were attached to the ARGYLL Street

PTC

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	2

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

Lt.-Col. DALLIE.

246

A.(Old.) officers' camp and gave them rather short notice to be prepared to move from the camp with their belongings. Two trucks were brought into camp and the batmen and their belongings were crowded into the trucks. Movement seemed to be under the control of Interpreter NIIMORI. There was no other Japanese NCO or officer present at the time. He seemed to have complete charge of the movement. Officers were crowding around the trucks which were drawn up on one corner of the parade ground and officers were trying to say good-bye to their batmen, wished them well, passing out cigarettes and things of that nature and NIIMORI shouted an order which was not heard by all the officers - could not possibly have been - to the effect that the officers should stay away from the trucks. However officers continued shaking hands and ~~wishing~~ ^{saying} their friends off, whereupon NIIMORI became extremely incensed and assaulted an officer. I cannot recall his name at the moment, but he was an officer of the Dockyard Defence Corps. It was a very brutal assault and NIIMORI chased and beat this officer practically around the entire parade square at ARGYLL Camp. The officer was badly beaten by NIIMORI who belaboured him with his sword scabbard and kicked and punched at his face. I saw the officer afterwards and he bore physical marks of the beating. He was later hospitalized in the camp hospital for, I believe, 2 weeks.

- Q. While at ARGYLL Street, can you tell the Court anything about requests by the Japanese made respecting reports on camp life?
- A. I do not recall the exact time when the request was made by the Japanese but they first requested that officers submit a 200-word statement on general camp life, emphasizing amenities and general conditions. Our attitude was that this might be used as a form of propaganda and we refused to comply with the request. The Japanese then said if officers would submit a 200-word statement on camp life they would be permitted to send a 10-word message to their families and we still refused to comply whereupon I remember an occasion when NIIMORI came to Col. WHITE and said that if the statements or reports on camp life were not forth-coming, both inward and outward mail would be stopped for the whole officers' camp.

COURT: What was the result of this threat, was it ever put into execution?

- A. It seemed that they were in earnest about the threat and a conference was called by the senior officers and it was decided if the Japanese intended, as we believed they would, to put a stop to incoming and outgoing mail, it would have a serious effect on the personnel in the camp and the next of kin, especially those at STANLEY Gaol, the interned wives and families of the camp personnel. It was then decided that we would comply partially with their request to make a statement. People were advised as to what they should state in these statements or letters. In order that we would not commit ourselves they were censored first by our own officers.
- Q. Will you speak of the supply of fuel wood at ARGYLL Street Camp?
- A. Fuel was very short in supply at all times. It seemed if we had rice we had no wood or if we had the wood, we had no rice. Wood was absolutely essential to cook the rice and ARGYLL camp was no exception. I remember on Christmas Day 1947, our first meal of the day was served between 6 and 7 o'clock in the evening due to the fact that fuel wood had not arrived. Later, as the day progressed, the situation became progressively worse and at STANLEY Gaol camp we were required to remove the half the lat beams from the huts in order to find sufficient fuel to cook our meals.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

Lt.-Col. PAULIE.

247

Q. Have you anything to say about aerial bombardments?

A. The camp suffered due to American air-raids but not due to the fault of the Americans themselves. It seemed that a favourite place of approach for the air-raid personnel was over the KOWLOON hills and the Japanese had an anti-aircraft battery or pom-poms or their equivalent somewhere around the ALERDEEN side of HONG KONG, from what we could figure out. The ac-ac that the Japanese used seemed to be a peculiar type, about the same calibre as our own pom-pom ammunition but different in that it had no safety fuse on it and live shells falling in the camp exploded. There were several people wounded in the camp due to this. As we had no air-raid precautions and were herded into our huts during an air-raid, the huts just having wooden roofs. Possibly for propaganda reasons the Japanese requested our senior British officer to write a letter of protest to Gen. CHENNAULT who commanded the American Air Force in China and whose people were conducting the raids, protesting for the bombing of POW camps. The letter, of course, was never written and the Colonel explained to the Japanese and proved to them by producing a shrapnel with Japanese markings and a shell case, that in fact the casualties suffered in camp were from Japanese ac-ac and not from the American bombing.

COURT: Before we leave this question of air-raids, who made the request or order to write to Gen. CHENNAULT?

A. I believe it came from the Japanese POW camp office through the Japanese Camp Commandant at the time to Col. WHILL.

COURT: Were protests made to the Japanese or requests made to be allowed to have shelters, trenches or to conduct some ^{kind of} passive air-raid defence?

A. Yes, they were, and the result was that we were told during air-raids we must leave our glass windows open and not shut.

COURT: Besides that, was there any other result?

A. No other result.

At 1200 hrs. the Court adjourn until 1000 hrs.
on Monday 16 Dec. 46.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref.
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	ins

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives Material'.

NO. 5 WAR CRIMES COURT.

16TH DAY'S PROCEEDINGS of the trial of Col. TOKUNAGA Isao, Capt. SAITO Shunkichi, Lt. TATEHARA Mitsuki, Interpreter ISUTADA and Sgt. HARADA Jotaro.

(Held at Jardine Matheson's East Point Godown on Monday 16th December, 1946.)

REL

The Court resumed at 10.00 Hours.

PROSECUTOR: Before proceeding I want to give notice of calling witness Henry K. FSN, who will give evidence as to drugs on hand in HONG KONG. I will call him not before Thursday.

COURT: You have given notice to the Defence?
PROSECUTOR: I am giving it now.

26TH WITNESS FOR THE PROSECUTION - Lt.-Col. RAINIE.

Examination in Chief (Continued)

COURT: You will remember that you are bound by the Oath you took on Saturday morning.

Q. When you left ARMY Street camp in 1944, where did you go?
A. To a special section in SHAN SHUI PO Camp called the officers' section.

Q. Will you describe to the Court the conditions in your huts at officers' camp SHAN SHUI PO?
A. Originally we were placed in huts, I believe 40 officers to the hut, in the last row of the huts on both sides of the road. There were 2 or 3 rows of empty huts and a barbed wire fence dividing us from the Other Ranks' section of SHAN SHUI PO Camp. Empty 60-gallon oil drums were stored in some of the huts but not in all of the empty huts. The British camp authorities requested that additional huts be allowed as we were considerably over-crowded in the huts originally given to us. Eventually an extra row of huts was allotted for our use and we were required to remove the oil drums from these huts to the south side of the main camp road. We were allotted the old NAAMI building as a hospital and after fixing the hospital up we were required to move them to another building allotted to us. Both buildings were in very bad shape.

Q. What was the condition of the oil drums that you were moving around?

A. I recall that in some of the drums there was as much as a gallon of inflammable oil of some type - I am not sure what type - reclaimed from the drums. During moves about the camp into different huts the drums were required to be moved on at least 3 or 4 occasions and while moving them we were able to extract oil from the drums. This was used for lamps and for cooking purposes.

Q. What Allied action were you undertaking at that time?

A. It was about the period of the concentrated prisoner bombing of POW camps and HONG KONG Japanese installations.

Q. Can you tell the Court what, if any, hazard these drums provided under those circumstances?

1		2		Ref.		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
cms						WO 235/1012 PT1	
						1	
						line 2	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives material.

Lt.-Col. BARNETT.

249

- A. In some cases one half of the hut would be occupied by officer personnel and then a brick wall would divide the huts in two halves, the second half would contain as many oil barrels as the hut would hold. They were piled right to the ceiling. We imagine it would be extremely unpleasant if a bomb or shell had landed in the vicinity of these huts. In particular, in the area about 100 yards away from the far row of huts which contained mine dug in the ground by the Japanese and in the Japanese were similar barrels containing high test aviation spirit.

COURT: Could you explain a little more about the huts? You said the Japanese allotted you another row of huts, how many huts were there in a row?

- A. The camp was divided in-to 2 sections. Each had a Chinese name. It was originally designed for the SHAN TONG in 1937 and laid out on the basis of an infantry battalion. The huts were in rows suitable for a company's occupation. There were 5 or 6 huts in each row, one for each platoon in the company.

COURT: Can you tell the Court approximately how many officers were there in the officers' camp?

- A. I cannot recall the exact figures but I would say about 400 odd officers and the 40 odd batmen, making a total of roughly 500 personnel.

COURT: When you got this extra accommodation how many men were then accommodated in one hut?

- A. The huts varied. It ranged, I believe, between 30 and 45 to a hut.

COURT: That was even after you got the extra huts?

- A. Yes. About the same time the Japanese transferred additional officers from the SHAN SHUI PO Other Ranks camp to us.

C. Turning from the condition of the huts, will you tell the Court if you knew there a man called BARNETT, when you were in SHAN SHUI PO?

- A. Yes, I knew Lt. BARNETT; he was with the 4000th Volunteer Defence Corps. On one of the few occasions when a Red Cross inspection was taking place, I believe it was in July, I was told as I did not see it personally (I was a patient in hospital then); I was told that when Mr. ZIMMEL was walking through the hut in which BARNETT was living BARNETT spoke to him in 2 languages and told him unless additional food was brought into the camp we would soon all be starving. We had always been told by the Japanese prior to a Red Cross inspection that we were not permitted to speak to the representative or to answer questions if addressed by him. I understand that Mr. ZIMMEL was taken out one door of the hut and Capt. BARNETT (as he is now) was removed from the hut and taken to a place that we used as a store-room in one end of the camp hut. I was also told that BARNETT was then escorted and escorted by Sgt. MURADA and then taken from the camp. I next saw Capt. BARNETT about a week later when he was brought to the officers' hospital and placed in a bed, 2 away from the bed that I was going. He was considerably shaken and did not speak when he came in and, to us, it would appear he had received rough treatment. He was put to bed and given special diet and treatment by the Medical Officer in charge, Capt. STRAHAN.

P.T.O.

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	
Ref:	
WO 235/1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives Terms and Conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives leaflet

Lt.-Col. BAILIE

A(Std.) About a week later one evening around dusk (I cannot remember the exact time a Japanese sentry came into the hospital and proceeded to walk around all the beds in the hospital looking at the occupants in them. He stopped and asked Capt. BARNETT what his number was as we were all required to wear Japanese POW numbers on our equipment. BARNETT pretended not to understand him and eventually the sentry went away and came back with the Corporal of the Guard. They opened BARNETT's gear under his bed and stayed with him for about 15 minutes and then left. Some time later about half or 3/4 of an hour, it was quite dark, the Japanese Camp Commandant Lt. TANAKA, Interpreter NIIMORI, the camp Sgt. Major, the Japanese guard Corporal, Interpreter KATAYAMA and some sentries came into the hospital and went to Lt. BARNETT's bed. NIIMORI told BARNETT to get out of bed and stand up. He then accused BARNETT of being out of hospital and close to the wire. BARNETT protested that he had not been out of hospital since his admission a week ago. NIIMORI called him a liar and asked him to have a look at the soles of his (BARNETT's) feet. BARNETT's feet were clean as he had been in bed all that day. They then looked at his wooden clogs, the only form of footwear that most of us had in camp. Not satisfied NIIMORI again accused BARNETT of having been out of hospital. When BARNETT protested his innocence NIIMORI set on him and smashed him across the face about 12 to 18 blows, finally knocking BARNETT down to the bed where he lay. There was some haranguing between the Japanese staff present and during this period I believe Col. WHITE and his Adjutant and our own Interpreter came into the hospital. NIIMORI then ordered BARNETT to stand up again and again struck him, eventually knocking him to the bed a second time. About this time Col. WHITE protested to Lt. TANAKA pointing out that there may have been a mistake in the identity made and also that BARNETT was a very sick man and in no condition to take punishment. NIIMORI told Col. WHITE to shut up and again ordered BARNETT to his feet and did a similar assault on him, eventually knocking BARNETT to his bed. I heard BARNETT groan and fall down the last time on his bed.

Again Col. WHITE protested to TANAKA and asked that the sentry be questioned as to whether or not he was positive it was BARNETT who was at the wire and Col. WHITE requested an identity parade be held as he was certain it was not BARNETT who was at the wire. After this Lt. TANAKA made a long speech in Japanese which was interpreted to the effect that prisoners must not stand near the wire or they would be shot. As we had heard this many times before it was nothing new.

- Q. Where is TANAKA now?
 A. He is sitting in the dock, the second Japanese from the left-hand side of the dock between Capt. SAITO and Sgt. HARADA.
- Q. How far away from BARNETT were you when this assault went on?
 A. If my bed was in this position, BARNETT would be where the far wall and windows are.
- Q. Approximately 35 feet?
 A. Yes. Then orders were issued to Col. WHITE to have the whole camp stand to for an identification parade and the Camp Comdt. and the rest of the party moved off, we presumed to conduct an identity parade.

1		2		1		2	
cm		Ref.		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES			
		WO 235/1012 PT1					
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.							

Lt.-Col. BAILIE.

27

- Q. You said that Capt. BARNETT had been in his bed all day - is this the precise state of affairs or were there any excursions he had made at all?
- A. BARNETT was confined to his bed. He was sleeping as I recall it in a pair of pyjamas issued by the hospital and he was in no condition to go outside the hospital, although I cannot swear he had not left his bed to go to the latrine which was within the hospital, during the day.
- Q. What was the outcome of this identification parade with Col. WHITE called?
- A. I was told that the Japanese went through two or three huts and then the parade was called off. People were told to go back to their beds and that they should not be seen standing near the wire in future.
- Q. A moment ago you mentioned HARADA. Have you anything to tell the Court in connexion with HARADA which is purporting to the charges?
- A. Sgt. HARADA was known to us as "NAPOLEON". I recall one occasion when the gendamerie came to camp in the evening and ordered an immediate identification parade of all officers. We were lined up in two rows on the main road while an order had been given generally to the camp - it was not given individually - that personnel would not wear hats and ~~gains~~ glasses would be removed. Some of the officers were not so advised and the gendamerie together with some of the camp staff, including Sgt. HARADA went down the line looking at each man. One officer who was suffering from an eye complaint was wearing dark glasses to protect his eyes and as the party came past him HARADA smashed the glasses off the officer's face. They fell to the ground and were broken.
- Q. At which camp did this take place?
- A. SHAM SHUI PO. The gendamerie picked out 3 or 4 officers, took them out of camp and the parade was dismissed. The only other thing I can recall about Sgt. HARADA was that he used to put on demonstrations for the benefit of all and sundry. He ~~was~~ very ~~afraid~~ fond of his sword, which he carried and on some occasions he would take his sword off and chop off imaginary heads in front of the Japanese guard room.
- Q. Do you recall a man called HOOK?
- A. Major HOOK was an officer in my regiment and my personal friend. He was taken away about June, I believe, of 1945. He was very ill and as the medical people were not certain of his complaint, he was isolated in the SHAM SHUI PO officers' hospital. Despite the care and attention that the hospital people were able to give, his condition became steadily worse and towards the 1st of July he was placed on the "S.I." or "D.I." list, i.e. "seriously ill" or "dangerously ill" list. I spoke to Capt. STRAHAN on several occasions asking him about Maj. HOOK's condition. Capt. STRAHAN informed me that his condition was serious and that he had made application to Capt. SAITO to have Maj. HOOK removed to the hospital. No action was taken and Maj. HOOK still remained in the camp hospital despite the fact that SAITO was again appealed to through the camp office to have Maj. HOOK removed. Maj. HOOK's condition became steadily worse and eventually he was ordered to be removed to hospital. I personally helped to carry him with another officer to the guard room gate together with his belongings. I cannot recall the exact date it was but I do recall Maj. HOOK's condition. There ~~were~~ in addition two Portuguese POWs also on stretchers waiting at the Japanese guard room for transport.

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref.		ins		ins	
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES							
WO 235 / 1012 PT1							
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' material.							

Lt.-Col. BAILEY.

252

- Q. What was Maj. HOOK's condition?
 A. He would weigh ~~xxxxx~~, I imagine, somewhere in the neighbourhood of 80 lbs. and looked extremely ill as though he would not live very long.
- Q. What was his normal weight?
 A. About 195 lbs. would be his average normal weight.
- Q. How do you account for the fact that he was allowed to get into this condition before being sent to the hospital?
 A. Limited medical facilities; and the proper medicine and diet necessary for very ill persons were not available for Maj. HOOK in hospital.
- Q. You are speaking now of the camp hospital?
 A. Yes.
- Q. How do you account for the fact that he was not sent previously to the hospital where better facilities were?
 A. I would personally say it was complete indifference on the part of the Japanese medical officer who was responsible for the removal of people.
- Q. Who was the Japanese medical officer?
 A. Capt. SAITO.
- Q. On what do you found that impression that you mentioned?
 A. I know from personal investigation and my interest in the case that representations were made on at least 2 occasions to the Japanese to have Major HOOK removed.
- Q. Have you anything else to tell the Court respecting SAITO?
 A. Except in continuing with the removal of Maj. HOOK when the details for carrying sick personnel arrived at the Japanese camp office; the belongings of the 3 sick men were brought. Capt. SAITO was present and the truck with rather shaky sides was brought and due to the fact that 3 stretchers could not be accommodated on the floor of the truck with the belongings of the men together, the stretchers had to be laid cross-wise with the handles resting on the sides of the truck.
- Q. What eventually became of Maj. HOOK?
 A. We were told some time towards the end of July that Maj. HOOK had died in C.E.S. hospital somewhere around the 7th, I believe of July.
- Q. Have you anything you want to add in respect to the conditions of the POW or the treatment by the Japanese pertaining to these charges?
 A. If it please the Court, may I make a statement with reference to the conduct of the medical orderlies in our officers' wing at SHAN SHUI PO?

COURT: Yes.

A/Ctl.) May I take this opportunity of reporting the extreme efficiency and ability of the British POWs who volunteered for hospital duty at the officers' hospital? Due to the bad conditions, the lack of supplies, particularly disinfectants, these men were, in my opinion, responsible for considerable saving of life and certainly alleviating of suffering of the inmates of the hospital. On one occasion Lt. FOGWELL who was acting as a nurse in the hospital was obliged to carry a very ill patient from the ARGYLL Camp hospital to the Indian camp hospital, a distance of approximately 3/4 of a mile, and then assist at the operation of the said
 PTO

1		2		Ref:		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
cms						WO 235/1012 PT1	
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of Supply of National Archives' leaflet.							
		1		2			

Lt.-Col. BAILIE.

A(Ctd.) officer and in addition was required to carry the officer back from the camp due to the fact that the Japanese medical officer would not find a truck or the patient concerned. In addition, Mr. FERGUSSON, Mr. REDMAN, Mr. SKINNER and ~~XXXX~~ Mr. ROBERTSON of the HONG KONG Volunteers performed exceptional service in the hospital.

COURT: Will you cast your mind back for one moment to the evening on which Lt. BARNETT was beaten in the hospital. Do you remember anything about the weather at that time ~~from~~ or the state of the ground outside?

A. During the month of July is the rainy season and as I recall it, the weather had been wet for some period. It certainly would have shown on a man's feet or shoes had he been out walking on other than the limited concrete parts in the camp.

COURT: What was the ground like in the neighbourhood of the wire fence?

A. In some areas it might have been covered with sparse grass, usually though it was ~~xx~~ clay.

COURT: Was there a concrete path anywhere near the fence?

A. I do not know the exact fence that BARNETT was accused of being near but normally the perimeter fence post stakes were driven into the ground and there was no path, ~~xx~~ concrete or cement approaches surrounding the inside perimeter.

CROSS EXAMINATION.

Q. At North Point camp you said that one of the Japanese guards had a towel covered with blood. How was the guard holding this towel at the time?

A. As I saw the guard, he was wiping his bayonet on the towel.

Q. Where did you see this guard wiping his bayonet?

A. Between the huts, on the east side of the main road at the camp gate. There were several people congregated, watching the affair.

Q. When this guard was wiping his bayonet, was it after the Chinese was sent away in the wheel-barrow?

A. The wheel-barrow came back wheeled by a sentry without a rifle, followed by the same 2 guards. The wheel-barrow was empty and I saw this when they came back to the guard room gate.

Q. At the SHAM SHUI PO camp you testified that a Chinese girl was shot. Did you see the Chinese girl fall into the sea?

A. As I recall it, I said I saw the Chinese girl fall from the wall.

Q. After the girl was shot did you see where she fell to?

A. It was impossible to see where the girl would fall. The wall is, I should imagine, 20 feet high and unless one is standing right on the edge of the wall you could not see over it.

Q. About the noon lunch for the working party, did they not receive some rice besides two buns?

A. Normally as I recall it, the noon meal was 2 buns and hot water supplied for making tea. It is possible that some rice may have been supplied to some working parties.

1		2		Ref.		WO 235/1012 PT1		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
cme								1	
								Ins	
								2	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives Terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

Lt.-Col. BAILIE

254

- Q. You testified that it was very difficult to fill the CANADIAN quota of the working party. Who decided how the quota should be filled?
- A. The Japanese appointed Camp Commandant at SHAM SHUI PO Camp.
- Q. About the incident when Sgt. HARADA smashed the dark glasses of an officer, when did this incident take place, what date?
- A. Some time after the move from ARGVLL Street camp to the officers' section in SHAM SHUI PO camp, which I imagine would be between May and July of 1944.

Cross-Examination (Contd by Mr. HASEGAWA)

- Q. You testified about the time schedule of the work party and said that sometimes the working party had to work until 6 o'clock. What was the usual time when the work party stopped working?
- A. There seemed to be no particularly set time; the factor controlling it was, as far as I can remember, the arrival of the ferry to take us home.
- Q. You also said the work party started work at 8 o'clock and had one hour's rest for lunch and worked until the time to knock off. Did they not have a rest in the morning and in the afternoon?
- A. Yes, there were break periods for the morning and afternoon but dependant only on the amount of work that the work party did.
- Q. Can you give us an idea of what connexion you had with the work parties?
- A. In the large work parties the senior officer was required to take the party up, usually made up of 800 men divided into units of 100 each. The 100 men were normally commanded by a subaltern. The senior officer commanded the whole party. My connexion with working parties was usually as commander of the party.

Re-Examination declined.

QUESTIONS BY THE COURT:

- Q. Just 2 points. How far back from the sea wall was the perimeter defence at SHAM SHUI PO?
- A. The outer perimeter defence would be fairly close to the sea wall but there would be sufficient room for a path for a sentry to walk up and down. I should say the perimeter fence would be 6 or 8 feet from the edge of the sea wall. There was in addition an inner perimeter fence, some 10 yards inside of the outer perimeter fence.
- Q. Where the girl was shot was actually on the sentry path?
- A. It would be on the stone parts of the ramp, the sea-wall part of the stone ramp.
- Q. The guard who fired at her, was he on the sentry walk or inside the inner fence, or between the 2 fences?
- A. He would be outside the fence on the sentry beat.
- Q. You described to the Court now some time later on you actually saw the girl's body being carried away. How did you manage to see that if the inner fence was so far back from the sea wall?
- A. The sea wall ramp runs alongside of the camp and the shore gradually rises so that at the far end of the camp, the end facing the hills, the fisher people have houses placed alongside and there are paths leading down to the sea-level itself. However, to get up from the paths to the sea level it is necessary to go by the end of the camp and there are buildings and a road that leads. It is possible to see from one end of the camp who passes down the road leading to the sea.

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref.:		1		Ine	
Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' material.		WO 235/1012 PT1		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES			

Capt. GLOVER.

255

The Court goes into temporary recess at 1130 to RCL
The Court re-assembles at 1135 to RCL

27TH WITNESS FOR THE PROSECUTION - Capt. H.C. GLOVER

On being sworn is examined by the Prosecutor.

Q. Will you tell the Court your full name?

A. Henry Claude GLOVER.

Q. I understand you were born in ^{Handsworth} ~~Handsworth~~ MIDDLESEX, England?

A. Yes.

Q. 41 years old and of British nationality?

A. That is correct.

Q. Your permanent address is 99-C WATERLOO Road KOTLOO?

A. Yes.

Q. Presently a Captain in the British Army with War Crimes Investigation Team No.4?

A. Yes.

Q. During the war you were a Sub-Lieutenant in the H.M.G. K.O.G. Royal Naval Volunteer Reserve?

A. Yes.

Q. You were captured by the Japanese on 25 Dec. 1941?

A. Yes.

Q. Will you tell the Court where you were interned?

A. At the capitulation I was at the Royal Naval dockyard HONG KONG. From there we were removed to MURRAY Road barracks where we remained until 30 December. On 30 December we were moved to SHAM SHUI PO Camp and the naval detachment remained there till 24 January, 1942, when we were moved with the Canadian troops to North Point Camp. We remained there till 18 April 1942. An officers' camp was formed and I, with the other officers of the Navy, was transferred from North Point Camp to ARGYLL Street. We remained in ARGYLL Street until May 4, 1944 when some of us were transferred to SHAM SHUI PO. I might mention that these transfers from ARGYLL Street to SHAM SHUI PO were done in 3 batches, weekly batches from May 4 until, I think, 1 June, 1944. SHAM SHUI PO was then divided into 2 camps, north and south. The north camp comprised the officers who were formerly in ARGYLL Street while the south was for Other Ranks and officers detailed by the Japanese to supervise the Other Ranks. I remained in SHAM SHUI PO Camp from then until the surrender.

Q. While you were in North Point camp, can you tell the Court anything of the treatment of Chinese civilians by the camp personnel, guards, sentries or any others connected with the camp?

A. The sentries at that time were Japanese and they were most brutal to the Chinese who whenever they passed the camp, if they passed on the wrong side of the road were immediately set upon by the sentries and beaten. I remember on one occasion February 26, 1942, when my wife, who is a Chinese lady, had come to bring a parcel of foodstuff for myself and several other officers, as she passed the camp she was set upon by the sentry at the main gate and not only pinched in the face but also kicked on the legs. As a result of this brutal assault she was bed ridden for 2 weeks.

PTC

1		2		1		2	
cms		Ref:		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES		Ins	
		WO 235/1012 PT1					

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

256

Capt. GLOVER.

A.(Ctd.) On another occasion I saw a small Chinese boy who was passing the camp stop and pick up a ball which had been struck into the road by some Canadian troops playing soft ball. The boy threw the ball back and was immediately pounced upon by the sentry, kicked, beaten till he fell on the ground. Then the sentry used his rifle butt on the boy's head. On numerous occasions other Chinese were taken to the guard house and subjected to various forms of beating. As regards the SHAM SHUI PO Camp the 24 days I was there . . .

Q. Please do not give evidence about anything before 24 January.
A. This brutal treatment of civilians was also carried out by the Formosan guards at ARGYLL Street Camp who on the slightest pretext took Chinese who were passing along to the guard house and gave them severe beatings.

Q. You went from North Point to ARGYLL Street and then to SHAM SHUI PO? At ARGYLL Street, can you give any personal experience which illustrates the conduct of the Japanese towards the POWs?

A. On 28 May 1942 after evening muster which, I think, was 7 o'clock then, I was called out from the parade and brought before Lt. SANIMORI, Interpreter NIIMORI, Interpreter INUE ^{and} and Sgt. Maj. TANAKA.

Q. Where is this Sgt. Major TANAKA now?

A. I have no idea where he is. Interpreter INUE had a letter in his hand and this letter I had written a few days previously to my father in England. Interpreter INUE became very infuriated and asked me what I meant by this letter. In the first place I did not quite understand him and he took my bewilderment for insolence and immediately started pummeling me about the chest. After this he pointed to a paragraph in the letter in which I had said I had no doubt as to the ultimate outcome. He then slapped me about the face and said something to Sgt. Maj. TANAKA. TANAKA then struck me in the face with his fist and resorted to judo throws. When he finally succeeded in putting me on the ground he started to kick me. He kicked me about the body and in the jaw. Fortunately the blow grazed my jaw and just drew little blood. After this I was allowed to get up and Interpreter NIIMORI turned to the people on parade and said "and that goes for you guys too". Two days after this Lt.-Col. PENFOLD, R.A. was made to stand outside the guard house at attention for several hours for a similar offence.

Q. Do you know a man called MACLEOD?

A. He was a Lieutenant in the Dockyard Defence Corps. He was a POW with me in ARGYLL Street camp.

Q. What have you to tell the Court about him?

A. As far as I remember it was on December 8, 1943 when Lt. TANAKA and Interpreter NIIMORI came to the camp and paraded the batmen.

Q. Where is Lt. TANAKA now?

A. In the dock, the second one from my right-hand side.

Q. He is not the same man that you referred to previously?

A. No, the other one was Sgt. Maj. TANAKA. 50 batmen were picked out for a draft which was being sent, we were given to understand to JAPAN. After they had been selected they were given half an hour to get their kit together and then had to parade again. Naturally there were a lot of farewells

PTO

1		2		Ref.		THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
cms						WO 235/1012 PT1	
						1	
						Ins	
						2	

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives leaflet.

Capt. GLOVER.

257

- A(Ctd.) and lot of the officers and batmen crowded around. This seemed to infuriate NIIMORI. Owing to an unfortunate remark which was passed by an officer standing by, NIIMORI thought that it was MACLEOD who had passed the remark. He then assaulted MACLEOD by punching him about the head and body and also kicking him on the legs. He then used his sword scabbard and chased him around, beating him about the body and head. This was done in full view of Lt. TANAKA who never attempted to interfere.
- Q. Turning to SHAM SHUI PO camp, will you tell the Court what you know, if anything, about men called THOMSON and WILCOX.
- A. On the night of July 16 or early morning on July 17, 1944, a friend of mine named Lt. Ralph GOODWIN, NEW ZEALAND RNVR escaped from SHAM SHUI PO. It was not observed until the morning muster parade at 9 a.m. on 17 July 1944. Lt. TANAKA was on parade that morning with an Interpreter named KATAYAMA. He immediately notified the other camp authorities because presently a man in civilian clothes came along together with Interpreter NIIMORI. The first persons to be seized upon for interrogation were Lt. WILCOX, R.A. and Lt. CHOWN, RNVR. These people slept on either side of GOODWIN. Lt. Col. SMITH the hut commander was also brought up for interrogation. Lt. WILCOX at that time was suffering from dysentery, very badly. Later it was ascertained by NIIMORI that I and Lt. THOMSON were personal friends of Lt. GOODWIN. We were both called to the camp office where Interpreter NIIMORI and the Japanese in civilian clothes were sitting. Lts. CHOWN and WILCOX had already been interrogated. On arrival Lt. THOMSON was called in by NIIMORI whilst I remained standing outside the open door. NIIMORI asked Lt. THOMSON what he knew about this escape and THOMSON denied that he knew anything about it or that Lt. GOODWIN had ever told him anything about it. As a matter of fact this was quite true; Lt. THOMSON never knew of GOODWIN's intentions. This seemed to infuriate NIIMORI who rose from his chair and savagely attacked THOMSON and struck him about his face with his clenched fist and also on his body. This lasted about 10 minutes after which Lt. THOMSON was told to wait outside. I was then called in by NIIMORI. He asked me how I first came to know GOODWIN and I gave him an outline of our service in two ships in the Indian Ocean before he came to join the MTB Flotilla in October 1941. He then dealt with his service in HONG KONG and wanted to know why he did not escape when the other members of the MTB Flotilla went away. I then explained that as Lt. GOODWIN was wounded and was in hospital when the MTBs left consequently he could not go. He then ceased his interrogation and told me to get out and never even asked what I knew of the escape. They then took out Lts. CHOWN, WILCOX, THOMSON and Lt. Col. SMITH to the guard house where they were detained in a narrow cell for 2 days. Although I did not actually see it, Lt. WILCOX, who, as I said before was suffering from dysentery, was very badly beaten up by NIIMORI about the stomach. After 2 days' detention in an indescribably filthy cell, they were returned to camp. For about 6 weeks after this, we were given collective punishment which meant that our rice ration was reduced to the very minimum, I think it was something like 380 grs. and we had hardly any vegetables supplied during that period; the canteen was stopped and also parcels. We were made to do hut guards, each person had to do one hour duty during the night time to ensure that the other people in the huts did not escape. We were given to understand if a person escaped then the hut guards were responsible for this. The sentries, as if acting on instructions, whenever the occasion presented itself indiscriminately assaulted prisoners. Numbers of POWs were assaulted during these 6 weeks.

PTO

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref.:
WO 235 / 1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	2

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives material.

CAPT. GLOVER.

258

A(Ctd.) In addition, there was a very unpleasant Warrant Officer known as "Jungle JIM" who occasionally acted as Duty Officer and whenever he came round at night made himself unpleasant and generally assaulted anybody that came in his way. About a month after Lt. GOODWIN escaped an inspection was held by a Red Cross delegate. This was a farce like all the other inspections were because the Red Cross delegate was only taken to certain huts and shown just exactly what the Camp Comdt. and Col. TOKUNAGA wanted him to see. On this occasion he was escorted through No. 1 hut. I was in No. 3 hut and I saw them pass by and go into No. 1 hut. We were never allowed to speak to the Red Cross delegates and were given instructions to this effect. On this occasion Capt. BARNETT of the HONG KONG Volunteer Defence Corps shouted to the Red Cross delegate as he passed, in I believe French and English that we were starving. The Red Cross delegate was immediately hurried out of the hut and escorted out of camp. I saw Sgt. HARADA and 2 sentries come back. After this I heard thuds as if a person was being beaten with a pole and, of course, a tremendous amount of shouting. There was a considerable amount of confusion at the time and people tried to see what was happening so I could not get a clear view. Afterwards Capt. BARNETT was taken out of camp. He was kept out for several days and then brought back and immediately placed in hospital. Several days later, I think it was about 11 o'clock at night we were all made to get out of our beds and stand up for inspection at our beds. We were counted over and over again and did not know what this was for. We thought probably another escape had taken place. The following morning we learn that Capt. BARNETT had been severely beaten whilst lying in his bed at the hospital by Interpreter NIIMORI in the presence of Lt. TANAKA.

Q. Which of the Accused do you know?

A. I know Capt. SAITO, Lt. TANAKA, Sgt. HARADA and Col. TOKUNAGA.

Q. Is that from right to left?

A. Yes.

Q. Which is Col. TOKUNAGA?

A. The one on the extreme left.

At 1230 hrs. the Court adjourn until 1400 hrs.

- - - - -

THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	
1	2
cms	Ref:
WO 235 / 1012 PT1	
1	2
ins	2

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed 'Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives' leaflet.

259

1400 hours.

The Court reassemble pursuant to adjournment.

CROSS-EXAMINATION -- Mr. FUJITA.

- Q. How do you know that your wife had to go to bed for two weeks?
 A. Because she told me afterwards.
- Q. What was the number of the hut in which Lt BARNETT was accommodated?
 A. No.1 Hut.
- Q. What was the position of your hut with regard to No.1 hut?
 A. Parallel.
- Q. Then does that mean that No.2 hut is situated between No.1 and No.3?
 A. Correct.

No further questions.

CROSS-EXAMINATION -- Mr. HASEGAWA. -- declined.

RE-EXAMINATION -- declined.

QUESTIONED BY COURT.

- Q. Arising out of the last question which Mr. FUJITA asked, what or how much could you see of this incident from your hut?
 A. We could see right through -- the windows were more or less parallel and we could see through to No.1 hut -- we did not see the actual assault take place.
- Q. About how far apart were No.1 and No.3 huts.
 A. From No.1 to No.3 -- about 20 yards.

COURT: Mr. FUJITA are there any further questions you would like to ask?

DEFENCE: No.

COURT: Mr. HASEGAWA are there any further questions you would like to ask?

DEFENCE: No.

COURT: Major PUDDICOMBE are there any further questions you would like to ask?

PROSECUTOR: No.

COURT: Witness may stand down.

28TH WITNESS FOR PROSECUTION -- Mr. De SILVA.EXAMINATION IN CHIEF.

Witness is ^{sworn} ~~in~~ and questioned by the Prosecuting officer:

- Q. Will you tell the Court your full name?
 A. My name is P.M.N. De SILVA Jnr.
- Q. I understand that you are of British nationality and born in Hong Kong?
 A. That is right, sir.
- Q. Your present address is 16 Cameron Road, Kowloon, H.K.
 A. That is right.
- Q. What is your occupation?

1	2	1	2
cms	Ref.:	THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES	Ins
WO 235/1012 PT1			

Please note that this copy is supplied subject to the National Archives' terms and conditions and that your use of it may be subject to copyright restrictions. Further information is given in the enclosed Terms and Conditions of supply of National Archives leaflet.